

# Islamic Reformism and Christianity

*A Critical Reading of the Works  
of Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā  
and His Associates  
(1898-1935)*

Umar Ryad



BRILL



# Islamic Reformism and Christianity

# History of Christian-Muslim Relations

*Editorial Board*

David Thomas, University of Birmingham

Tarif Khalidi, American University of Beirut

Gerrit Jan Reinink, University of Groningen

Mark Swanson, Lutheran School of Theology at Chicago

VOLUME 12

# Islamic Reformism and Christianity

A Critical Reading of the Works of  
Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā and His Associates  
(1898-1935)

*By*  
Umar Ryad



BRILL

LEIDEN • BOSTON  
2009



This is an open access title distributed under the terms of the CC-BY-NC License, which permits any non-commercial use, distribution, and reproduction in any medium, provided the original author(s) and source are credited.



An electronic version of this book is freely available, thanks to the support of libraries working with Knowledge Unlatched. More information about the initiative can be found at [www.knowledgeunlatched.org](http://www.knowledgeunlatched.org).

*Cover illustration:* A photo of Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā (1865-1935), to be found among his private papers in Cairo (no date). In the background shadow of the detail of the front-page of the first volume of *al-Manār*.

Christians and Muslims have been involved in exchanges over matters of faith and morality since the founding of Islam. Attitudes between the faiths today are deeply coloured by the legacy of past encounters, and often preserve centuries-old negative views.

*The History of Christian-Muslim Relations, Texts and Studies* presents the surviving record of past encounters in authoritative, fully introduced text editions and annotated translations, and also monograph and collected studies. It illustrates the development in mutual perceptions as these are contained in surviving Christian and Muslim writings, and makes available the arguments and rhetorical strategies that, for good or for ill, have left their mark on attitudes today. The series casts light on a history marked by intellectual creativity and occasional breakthroughs in communication, although, on the whole beset by misunderstanding and misrepresentation. By making this history better known, the series seeks to contribute to improved recognition between Christians and Muslims in the future.

#### Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Ryad, Umar.

Islamic reformism and Christianity : a critical reading of the works of Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā and his associates (1898-1935) / by Umar Ryad.

p. cm. — (History of Christian-Muslim Relations; v. 12)

No previous full-scale study has been undertaken so far to study the polemical writings of the Muslim reformist Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā (1865-1935) and his associates in his well-known journal *al-Manār* (The Lighthouse). The book focuses on the dynamics of Muslim understanding of Christianity during the late 19th and the early 20th century in the light of *al-Manār's* sources of knowledge, and its answers to the social, political and theological aspects of missionary movements in the Muslim World of Riḍā's age. The basis of the analysis encompasses the voluminous publications by Riḍā and other Manarists in his journal. Besides, it makes use of newly-discovered materials, including Riḍā's private papers, and some other remaining personal archives of some of his associates.

Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN 978-90-04-17911-0 (hardback : alk. paper) 1. Islamic renewal. 2. Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā. 3. Manār (Cairo, Egypt: 1898) 4. Christianity and other religions. I. Title. II. Series.

BP60.R93 2009  
297.2'83092—dc22

2009027842

ISSN 1570-7350  
ISBN 978 90 04 179110

Copyright 2009 by Koninklijke Brill nv, Leiden, The Netherlands.

This work is published by Koninklijke Brill nv. Koninklijke Brill nv incorporates the imprints Brill, Brill Hes & De Graaf, Brill Nijhoff, Brill Rodopi and Hotei Publishing.

Koninklijke Brill nv reserves the right to protect the publication against unauthorized use and to authorize dissemination by means of offprints, legitimate photocopies, microform editions, reprints, translations, and secondary information sources, such as abstracting and indexing services including databases. Requests for commercial re-use, use of parts of the publication, and/or translations must be addressed to Koninklijke Brill nv.

This book is printed on acid-free paper and produced in a sustainable manner.

إلى ...

أبي الحاج رياض

أمي الحاجة ملاك

زوجتي إليزابيث

ابنتي جمانة نرمين فيروز

مع كل الحب والشكر والعرفان





إلى أرواح ...

أخي المتولي الأول ... الذي فقدناه طفلاً باسم  
جدي المعلم أمين شطا ... الذي علمني الاستقلال  
جدي عزيزة محمد عثمان ... التي غمرتنا دائماً بحبها  
ابن عمي أيمن الليثي ... الذي شاركني أيام الطفولة

طيب الله ثراهم



## CONTENTS

Acknowledgements .....	xiii
Introduction .....	1
A Biographical Sketch .....	2
Previous Studies .....	9
Sources and Organization of the Study .....	13
Riḍā's Sources of Knowledge of the West: With Special Reference to Christianity .....	23
1.1. Western Ideas in Arabic Print .....	25
1.1.1. Hammurabi and the <i>Babel-und-Bibel-Streit</i> (1903) .....	31
1.1.2. Arabic Translation of the <i>Encyclopaedia of Islam</i> (1933) .....	36
1.2. <i>Al-Manār</i> Literary Figures .....	42
1.2.1. Muslims Living in the West .....	42
1.2.2. Writers in the Muslim World .....	54
1.3. Conclusion .....	65
Riḍā and Arab Christians: Attitudes towards Syrian Christians and the Egyptian Coptic Community .....	67
2.1. Syrian Christian Nationalists: A Common Political Agenda .....	67
2.1.1. Faraḥ Anṭūn ( <i>al-Jāmi'a</i> ) .....	71
2.1.2. Jurji Zaidān ( <i>al-Hilāl</i> ) .....	76
2.1.3. Ya'qūb Ṣarrūf and Fāris Nimr ( <i>al-Muqtaṭaf</i> ) .....	83
2.1.4. Shibli Shumayyil: A Fervent Darwinist .....	86
2.1.5. 'Ibrāhīm al-Yāziji .....	91
2.1.6. Khalil Sa'ādeh .....	92
2.1.7. <i>Al-Machreq</i> : A Jesuit Syrian Review .....	96
2.2. The Egyptian Coptic Community .....	103
2.2.1. Riḍā's Attitudes towards the Copts before 1911 .....	103
2.2.2. The Coptic Congress of 1911 .....	106
2.2.3. Salāma Mūsā .....	116
2.3. Conclusion .....	122

<i>Al-Manār</i> versus Evangelism: Rashīd Riḍā's Perceptions of the Social and Theological Aspects of Missions .....	125
3.1. Mission is the Life of Religion .....	126
3.2. Mission and Colonialism.....	130
3.3. Confrontation with the British .....	134
3.4. Missionary Schools .....	140
3.5. Encounters with Missions in <i>al-Manār</i> .....	149
3.6. A Muslim Missionary Seminary .....	162
3.7. Conversion to Islam versus Evangelization .....	166
3.8. Al-Azhar Criticised .....	169
3.9. Conclusion .....	173
False Allegations or Proofs? Riḍā's Formative Polemics on Christianity .....	175
4.1. A Muslim Doubting the Authenticity of the Qur'ān .....	177
4.2. <i>Researches of the Diligent</i> .....	180
4.2.1. Three Prophets: Historical Doubts about Judaism and Christianity .....	181
4.2.2. Islam & Christianity: Three Goals of Religion .....	185
4.2.3. Judaism & Christianity Derived from Paganism? .....	186
4.2.4. Qur'ānic Proofs for the Genuineness of the Bible ...	190
4.2.5. Books of the Old and New Testament .....	194
4.3. <i>The Glad Tidings of Peace</i> .....	199
4.3.1. Muḥammad's Superiority above all Prophets? .....	199
4.3.2. Fear and Hope .....	201
4.3.3. Faith and Acts of Muslims .....	203
4.3.4. Absurd Treatment .....	204
4.3.5. Exceeding the Borders of Politeness .....	206
4.4. <i>The Standard of Zion</i> .....	209
4.4.1. Sinlessness of Prophets and Salvation .....	209
4.5. Conclusion .....	210
In Pursuit of a 'True' Gospel: Riḍā's Arabic Edition of the Gospel of Barnabas .....	213
5.1. Championing Tolstoy's Gospel .....	215
5.2. Announcing another 'True' Gospel? .....	218
5.3. A Freemason .....	219
5.3.1. Critical Analysis of Sa'ādeh's Preface .....	221
5.4. Riḍā's Introduction .....	230
5.4.1. Later use by <i>al-Manār</i> .....	233

5.5.	Short-lived Like an Apricot: A Missionary Response	235
5.6.	Conclusion	241
The Art of Polemics: Tawfiq Şidqî's Contributions to <i>al-Manâr</i> and Riḍâ's Use of Them		
	.....	243
6.1.	Al-Matbûlî of Cairo and the Resurrection of Jesus	245
6.2.	The Religion of God in His Prophets' Books	246
6.2.1.	Jesus as Offering	246
6.2.2.	The Crucifixion and Divinity of Jesus in the Old Testament	247
6.3.	The Doctrine of Crucifixion and Salvation	253
6.4.	Şidqî's View on the Scriptures of the New Testament and Christian Doctrines	259
6.5.	Riḍâ's Reflections	263
6.5.1.	Riḍâ Discussing Crucifixion in a Missionary School	266
6.5.2.	Reward and Salvation in Islam	268
6.5.3.	A Pagan Nature of the doctrines of Crucifixion and Salvation?	269
6.5.4.	An Illusive Crucifixion?	270
6.6.	Conclusion	275
Recapitulation of Ideas: Christianity as Reflected in Riḍâ's <i>Fatwās</i>		
	.....	277
7.1.	Early Encounters	278
7.2.	Are Christians Unbelievers?	282
7.3.	A Kuwaiti Petitioner on Slavery in the Bible	283
7.4.	An Aḥmadi Petitioner	285
7.5.	A Lutheran Danish Missionary in Riḍâ's <i>Fatwās</i>	286
7.6.	An Egyptian Debater in Gairdner's Magazine	293
7.7.	A Muslim Facing Missionaries in Tunisia	295
7.8.	Fatherless Birth of Jesus: non-Qur'anic?	297
7.9.	Missionary Doubts on Qur'anic Narratives	298
7.10.	<i>Miḥrâb</i> and Altar	300
7.11.	Don't Recite the Qur'anic Verses on Christians in Public!	301
7.12.	A Muslim Copyist of Missionary Books and Crafting the Cross for Christians	303
7.13.	Conclusion	304

Conclusion .....	307
Bibliography .....	321
Private Archives .....	321
Works in Arabic .....	321
Works in Western Languages .....	324
Internet Websites .....	340
Appendices .....	341
Index .....	379

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

A sincere and patient wife should always come in the first place of gratitude. My deepest indebtedness is due to Elisabeth for her habitual endurance and understanding in the midst of a demanding career. The smile and jokes of my lovely daughter Jumèna Nermine Fairuz have always relieved me in the situation of stress during the last four years; her coming in the world has made all the difference. My equal imperishable gratitude is also due to my parents, Ḥājj Ryaḍ ‘Abd al-Khālīk al-Sa‘īd al-‘Adawī and Ḥājjā Malāk Amīn ‘Awaḍ al-Sayyid Shaṭā who never spare an effort to support me to carve out the academic way. My youngest brother al-Mitwallī has greatly contributed to this work in helping me organise and scan the archive of Rashīd Riḍā in the summer of 2004. Similar gratitude should also go to Elisabeth’s parents, Matthijs and Tjitske Broers, and my brother-in-law and *paranimf* Gerhard Broers for their help.

I should extend my thanks to my supervisors, Prof. Dr. P.S. van Koningsveld and Prof. Dr. G.A. Wiegers, for their professional guidance and displaying support throughout my academic research. I should also remember the names of Prof. Dr. Qāsim al-Samarrai, Prof. Dr. Wāsif Shadīd, Prof. Dr. Naṣr Ḥamid Abū Zayd, Prof. Dr. R.B. ter Haar Romeny, Prof. Dr. H.L. Murre-van den Berg, Prof. Dr. Jacques Waardenburg, Prof. Dr. David Commins, Dr. Marwa S. al-Shakry, Dr. Christine Schirmacher and Dr. Heather J. Sharkey, Dr. Adel; Beshara. Dr. Ali Hamie for our fruitful discussions on the subject of my research. I should also not forget to thank the staff members of the Leiden Institute of Religious Studies. The finalising of the book owes much to the editing work of Mrs. Eve Kirby of Birmingham.

Many more names deserve a word of thanks: Mr. Fu‘ād Riḍā, the grandson of Rashīd Riḍā, Dr. Hārūn al-Rashīd Kirām, the son of Zekī Kirām, Mr. ‘Abd al-Ghanī Bū Zikrī, the grandson of Taqī al-Dīn al-Hilālī, Dr. Mohammed Daraoui of the University of Meknes, Mr. Muḥammad Ghannām, and Mr. Yaḥyā ‘Abd al-Ḥamid for their generous reception and unlimited trust. My gratitude is also due to my friend Dr. Ayman Khairy and his wife Mona for their support.

Lastly but not least: my colleague and dearest friend Mohsen 'Abd al-'Aty Haredy, my colleagues Mohammed Ghaly, Emad Nawfal and Abdurraouf Oueslati, Abdullah Sofan, Said Faris, our close friend Marike, and Mr. 'Attiya Soliman, the tower of strength for Egyptian students in Leiden, I thank you all for your helpfulness.

The study would have never taken its present form without the financial support of the Netherlands Organization for Scientific Research (NWO) and the Leids Universiteits Fonds (LUF) which subsidised my research trips to Egypt, Germany and Morocco.



## INTRODUCTION

The history of Christian missions has been written predominantly from a Christian, missionary perspective.<sup>1</sup> Missions have scarcely been studied from the perspective of the people among whom missionaries worked, in the case of the present research: the Muslims in the Middle East in the early 20<sup>th</sup> century. The available studies on the history of missions among Muslims are, in fact, incomplete, for they do not give detailed accounts of the reactions and interpretations of the people to whom the missionaries had been sent. Moreover, they do not tell us whether the missionaries themselves were aware of the Muslim reactive positions and writings, and the influence of their work on mutual Muslim-Christian perceptions and misperceptions. Main problems that still need to be examined are: How did Muslims, in various regions and under various circumstances, perceive the missionaries and their work? What ideas did Muslims develop about Christianity as they saw it enter Muslim societies? How did the direct encounter between Islam and Western Christianity through the emergence of missionaries in the Muslim world influence the Muslim polemics against Christianity?

The present work is *a critical study of the dynamics of Muslim understanding of Christianity during the late 19th and the early 20th century in the light of the polemical writings of the well-known Syro-Egyptian Muslim reformist Sheikh Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā (1865-1935) and his associates*. It is observable that neither Muslim nor Western scholars paid due attention to his views on Christianity. No full-scale study of his perspectives on that subject has been undertaken so far. Although there are scattered and brief remarks in some indi-

---

<sup>1</sup> For such studies, see for example, Kenneth Scott Latourette, *A History of the Expansion of Christianity: The Great Century A.D. 1800 A.D.-1914 in Northern Africa and Asia*, vols. 4-6, London: Eyre and Spottiswoode, 1945; Erich W. Bethmann, *Bridge to Islam: A Study of the Religious Forces of Islam and Christianity in the Near East*, London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd, 1953; Julius Richter, *A History of Protestant Missions in the Near East*, 1st edition, New York: AMS Press, 1970; reprinted from the edition of 1910; Dennis H. Phillips, 'The American Missionary in Morocco,' *The Muslim World* 65/1, 1975, pp. 1-20; Lyle L. Vander Werff, *Christian Mission to Muslims: The Record*, South Pasadena, CA: the William Carey Library, 1977.

vidual studies on some of his works on Christianity, investigation is still needed by focusing on his polemics and answers to the social, political and theological aspects of missionary movements among Muslims of his age.

The base of our analysis in the present study encompasses Riḍā's voluminous publications embodied in his *magnum opus*, the journal *al-Manār* (The Lighthouse). The core of these writings on the Christian beliefs and scriptures consisted of polemic and apologetic issues, which had already existed in the pre-modern Islamic classification of Christianity. However, *al-Manār* polemicists have added to their investigations many modern aspects largely influenced by Western critical studies of the Bible. As a matter of fact, there is no documented public debate (*munāẓarah*) between Riḍā and his contemporary missionaries. But *al-Manār* developed certain sorts of arguments drawn from critical studies about Biblical texts, church history, political confrontations in the period of colonialism, and evidence of what it perceived as the wrong picture portrayed by missionaries (and some Christian Arabs) of Islam.<sup>2</sup>

### *A Biographical Sketch*

As one of the most significant Muslim religious figures during the first half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the life of Riḍā, his journal and his religious and political thought have been extensively studied (see bibliography). Biographical information on him is mostly taken from his autobiography, which he published more than thirty years after his migration to Egypt.<sup>3</sup> His famous biography of his teacher Muḥammad 'Abduh (1849-1905), *Tārīkh al-'Ustādh al-'Imām*, is also marked as one of the important sources for his life.<sup>4</sup> By writing this work, Riḍā

---

<sup>2</sup> Jacques Waardenburg, *Muslims and Others*, Walter de Gruyter, 2003, p. 205. Cf. Mahmoud Ayoub, 'Roots of Muslim-Christian Conflict,' *The Muslim World* 79, 1989, pp. 25-43; Jane Smith, 'Christian Missionary Views of Islam in the 19th-20th Centuries,' *Islam and Muslim Christian Relations* 9, 1998, p. 361; Hugh Goddard, 'Christianity from the Muslim Perspectives: Varieties and Changes,' in Jacques Waardenburg, ed., *Islam and Christianity: Mutual Perceptions since the Mid-20th Century*, Leuven, 1998, pp. 213-256.

<sup>3</sup> R. Riḍā, *al-Manār wā al-'Azhar*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1934 (Quoted below, *Azhar*).

<sup>4</sup> Id., *Tārīkh al-'Ustādh al-'Imām*, Cairo: Dār al-Faḍīla, 2003, 4 vols. (Quoted below, *Tārīkh*).

not only ‘wrote the history of his Sheikh, [but also] what he did [himself] as though he were writing his own history as well.’<sup>5</sup>

Born in al-Qalamūn, a village near Tripoli (Lebanon), in 1865, Riḍā belonged to a religious Sunnī family claiming its kinship to the descendants of the Prophet. In his young years, he was deeply involved into the Naqshabandī Šūfī Order. In the circle of Sheikh Maḥmūd Nashshāba of Tripoli (1813-1890),<sup>6</sup> Riḍā read the Ḥadīth collection of *al-ʿArbaʿīn al-Nawawīyya*, and obtained his *ʿijāza* (diploma) in the field of Prophetic Traditions. The well-known Muslim scholar Sheikh Ḥusayn al-Jisr (1845-1909), the founder of the National Islamic School of Tripoli, extended to him another *ʿijāza* certifying him to teach and transmit religious knowledge. In al-Jisr’s school, emphasis was laid upon the combination between religious education and modern sciences, especially mathematics, natural sciences, French, alongside Arabic and Turkish.<sup>7</sup> In the meantime, Riḍā’s uncle, Muḥammad Kāmil Ibn Muḥammad (1843-1939), taught him Arabic, and had an impact on his religious knowledge.<sup>8</sup>

Riḍā’s fascination with the significance of the press for religious reform started when he came across some issues of the short-lived *al-ʿUrwa al-Wuthqā* (The Firmest Bond, co-published by Jamāl al-Dīn al-Afghānī (1839-1897)<sup>9</sup> and Muḥammad ʿAbduh during their exile in Paris) among his father’s papers. In his village Riḍā started his preaching career, and took the central mosque as a place for teaching religious sciences to its people, especially *Tafsīr* lessons.<sup>10</sup> In his autobiography, he also mentioned that he regularly went to cafés to deliver

<sup>5</sup> Tāhir al-Tanāhī, *Mudhakkirāt al-ʿImām Muḥammad ʿAbduh*, Cairo: Dār al-Hilāl, 1961; as quoted in Elizabeth Sirriyeh, ‘Rashīd Riḍā’s Autobiography of the Syrian Years, 1865-1897,’ *Arabic and Middle Eastern Literatures* 3/2, 2000, p. 184.

<sup>6</sup> See, al-Ziriklī, *Al-ʿAʿlām*, Beirut: Dār al-ʿIlm lil-Malāyin, 2002, vol. 7, pp. 185-86.

<sup>7</sup> Sirriyeh, *op. cit.*, p. 184.

<sup>8</sup> ʿAnīs al-ʿAbyaḍ, *al-Ḥayāh al-ʿIlmiyya wā Marākiz al-ʿIlm fī Tarābulṣ Khilāl al-Qarn al-Tāsiʿ Ashar*, Tripoli, 1985, p. 97.

<sup>9</sup> About Afghānī, see, for example, Nikki R. Keddie, *Sayyid Jamal ad-Din al-Afghani: A Political Biography*, University of California Press, Berkeley, 1972; id. *An Islamic Response to Imperialism: Political and Religious Writings of Sayyid Jamal al-Din al-Afghani*, Berkeley: University of California Press, 1983; Élie Kedourie, *Afghani and ʿAbduh: An Essay on Religious Unbelief and Political Activism in Modern Islam*, London & New York: Cass, 1966; Albert Qudsi-zadah, *Sayyid Jamal al-Din al-Afghani: An Annotated Bibliography*, Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1970; Mazheruddin Siddiqi, *Modern Reformist Thought in the Muslim World*, Islamabad: Islamic Research Institute, 1982; W. Cantwell Smith, *Islam in Modern History*, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1957.

<sup>10</sup> Al-Abyaḍ, *op. cit.*, p. 258.

sermons among Muslims, who were not habitual visitors of the mosque. He also gathered women in a room inside his house, where he instructed them about the rules of rituals and matters of worship.<sup>11</sup>

By the end of 1897, Riḍā had left his birthplace searching for more freedom in Egypt. A few months later, he embarked upon publishing the first issue of his journal *al-Manār*, the name he later exploited for his private printing house in Cairo. Islamic journalism experienced its earliest zenith in Egypt with the publication of Riḍā's journal. Through this he established himself as the leading Salafī scholar in the Muslim world. From the time of its foundation, *al-Manār* became Riḍā's life work in which he published his reflections on spiritual life, his explanations of Islamic doctrine, endless polemics, his commentary on the Qur'ān, *fatwās*, and his thoughts on world politics.<sup>12</sup>

Through his journal, Riḍā claimed himself to be the organ and disseminator of the reformist ideas of 'Abduh, a man of paramount importance in his life. After 'Abduh's death, Riḍā established himself more as a leading heir to his reformist movement by taking over the commentary of the Qur'ān known as *Tafsīr al-Manār*, which 'Abduh had begun. The impact of 'Abduh on Riḍā's thoughts is noticeable in his writings, especially those written before 'Abduh's death. In various ways, he imbibed ideas akin to those of his mentor, and was closely involved in his teacher's vigorous defenses against the aspersions cast upon Islam.<sup>13</sup> In his journal, for instance, Riḍā gave much attention to 'Abduh's debates on the comparison between Islam and Christianity, especially his well-known confrontations with the French historian and ex-minister of foreign affairs M. Gabriel Hanotaux (1853-1944)<sup>14</sup>

<sup>11</sup> Riḍā, *Azhar*, pp. 171-179.

<sup>12</sup> Albert Hourani, *Arabic Thought in the Liberal Age: 1789-1939*, Cambridge University Press, 1983, pp. 226-227 (Quoted below, *Arabic Thought*).

<sup>13</sup> Assad Nimer Busool, 'Sheikh Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā's Relations with Jamāl al-Dīn al-Afghānī and Muḥammad 'Abduh,' *The Muslim World* 66, 1976, pp. 272-286. There are still, however, other far-fetched theories, which attempt to disassociate Riḍā from 'Abduh, and doubt that he was the real disseminator of his ideas. See the reconsideration of the Tunisian researcher Muḥammad al-Ḥaddād, one of Muḥammad Arkoun's students, *Muḥammad 'Abduh: Qirā'ah Jadīdah fi Khitāb al-'Iṣlāḥ al-Dīnī*, Beirut, 2003.

<sup>14</sup> The article of Hanotaux appeared in the *Journal de Paris* in French in March and May 1900 under the caption: 'Face to face with Islam and the Muslim Question.' 'Abduh's reply firstly appeared in *al-Mu'ayyad* and *al-Ahrām* journals, see, Riḍā,

and with the Christian journalist Faraḥ Anṭūn (1874-1922).<sup>15</sup> In his answers to Westerners, ‘Abduh habitually attempted to explain his arguments with the help of Western works, primarily quoting from authors, such as John William Draper (1811-1882), Gustave Le Bon (1841-1931) and Edward Gibbon (1737-1794).<sup>16</sup>

Unlike ‘Abduh, there is no mention in the available sources that Riḍā was an active member in any inter-religious society of his time. We know that ‘Abduh had founded a political-religious society known as *Jam‘iyyat al-Ta’līf wā al-Taqrīb bayna al-‘Adyān al-Samāwiyya* during his stay in Beirut (circa 1885). Its major aim was to call for harmony and rapprochement among the so-called heavenly revealed religions. The society attracted many Jewish, Christian and Muslim (Shī‘ī and Sunnī) members. One of the political objectives behind the society was to try to diminish the pressure of European colonial powers in the Orient (especially among Muslims); and to improve the image of Islam in the West.<sup>17</sup> The most prominent Christian members of this organisation were the Canon of York, Reverend Isaac Taylor (1829-1901) (see, chapter 3), and the Orthodox archimandrite Christophoros Gibāra (d. 1901).<sup>18</sup> In his early years in

---

*Tārīkh*, vol. 2, pp. 382-95. See also, Charles C. Adams, *Islam and Modernism in Egypt*, London: Oxford University Press, 1933, pp. 86-89, (Quoted below, *Modernism*).

<sup>15</sup> M. ‘Abduh, *al-‘Islām wā al-Naṣrāniyya ma’a al-‘Ilm wā al-Madaniyya*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Manār, 1341/1922 (Quoted below *Naṣrāniyya*). For more details, see the annotated German translation, Gunnar Hasselblatt, ‘Herkunft und Auswirkungen der Apologetik Muḥammed ‘Abduh’s (1849-1905), Untersucht an seiner Schrift: Islam und Christentum im verhältnis zu Wissenschaft und Zivilisation,’ PhD dissertation, Göttingen, 1968; Donald M. Reid, *The Odyssey of Faraḥ Anṭūn*, Minneapolis & Chicago: Bibliotheca Islamica, INC, 1975, especially pp. 80-97 (Quoted below, *Odyssey*); Mishāl Goḥā, ‘Ibn Rushd bayna Faraḥ Anṭūn wā Muḥammad ‘Abduh,’ *al-‘Ijtihād* 8, 1996, pp. 61-87; id, *Faraḥ Anṭūn*, Beirut: Riad el-Rayyes Books, 1998, pp. 57-78.

<sup>16</sup> Hasselblatt, *ibid.*, pp. 184-199.

<sup>17</sup> More about the society, see, Riḍā, *Tārīkh*, vol. 1, pp. 819-820. More about secret societies in Egypt, see, for example, Malak Badrawi, *Political Violence in Egypt 1910-1925: Secret Societies, Plots and Assassinations*, London: RoutledgeCurzon, 1st ed., 2000; Eliezer Tauber, ‘Egyptian secret societies, 1911-1925,’ *Middle Eastern Studies* 42/4, 2006, p. 603-623.

<sup>18</sup> Little is mentioned in the available sources about Gibāra. What I know about him so far is that he—despite having considered himself a Christian, denied the concept of Trinity. In his writings he endeavoured to bring the three religions—Judaism, Christianity and Islam—together. Georg Graf mentioned him in his work on the history of Christian Arabic literature; see Georg Graf, *Geschichte der Christlichen Arabischen Literatur*, Citta del Vaticano, 1966, p. 165. According to the collection of the titles of Arabic books published in Egypt (1900-1925), Gibara was the author of *Wifāq al-‘Adyān wā Waḥdat al-‘Imān fī al-Tawrāh wā al-‘Injil wā al-Qur‘ān*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Ma‘ārif, 1901, 64pp. See, ‘Aydaḥ Ibrāhīm Nuṣayr, *al-Kutub al-‘Arabiyya al-Lati*

Egypt, Riḍā constantly praised the members of the organisation, but never became a member. His sympathy probably resulted from the fact that ‘Abduh was its president. Despite his belief in the co-existence among religions, Riḍā’s interest in such ideas dwindled after ‘Abduh’s death.

As a ‘print’ scholar and mufti, Riḍā was able to reach readers from all over the world through his community-building works; and to take a highly prominent position in modern Muslim intellectual life in the late nineteenth and the early twentieth centuries.<sup>19</sup> Since the early establishment of the journal, he managed to gain subscribers and to extend the influence of his religious ideas in Russia, Tunisia, India, Sudan, Sierra Leone, Bosnia, the Far East, Europe and America.<sup>20</sup> Riḍā produced the majority of the articles published in the journal, but was keen on making it a good podium for many contributors among outstanding Arab men of letters concerning a wide range of religious matters, such as theology, law, historiography, and Qur’anic exegesis.

Riḍā took a significant part in Islamic politics of his time. He renewed Afghānī’s call for pan-Islamic unity, and developed ‘Abduh’s ideas of returning back to the pristine Islam. He was one of the most

---

*Nushirat fi Miṣr Bayna ‘Amay 1900-1925*, Cairo: American University in Cairo, 1983, p. 129. After Gibāra’s death, neither Christian nor Muslim groups accepted burying his body in their graveyards. In order to solve the problem, an Egyptian Christian witnessed before the Patriarch that the late Gibāra returned to his belief in the Orthodox Church before his death. Gibāra was then buried according to the Orthodox tradition. See, *al-Manār*, vol 4/12 (16 Jumāda al-‘Ulā 1319/31 August 1901), pp. 478-480. More about Muslim polemics against Gibara and his journal *Shahādat al-Ḥaqq*, see the work of Muḥammad Ḥabīb, a Christian convert to Islam, *al-Suyūf al-Battāra fi Madhhab Khirustuphoros Gibāra* (The Amputating Sword to Christophoros Gibarah’s Doctrine), Cairo: al-‘Āṣimah Press, 1313/circa 1895.

<sup>19</sup> Muḥammad Khalid Masud, et al, eds., *Islamic legal Interpretation: Muftis and Their Fatwas*, Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1996, pp. 30-31.

<sup>20</sup> Riḍā’s list of subscribers in his diary (1903), Riḍā’s private archive, Cairo. See, for example, Mona Abaza, ‘Southeast Asia and the Middle East: *al-Manār* and Islamic Modernity,’ in Claude Guillot, Denys Lombard and Roderich Ptak, eds., *Mediterranean to the Chinese Sea: Miscellaneous Notes*, Wiesbaden: Harrasowitz, 1998, pp. 93-111; Azyumardi Azra, ‘The Transmission of *al-Manār*’s Reformism to the Malay-Indonesian World: the Cases of *al-Imam* and *al-Munir*,’ *Studia Islamika* 6/3, 1999, pp. 79-111; Jutta E. Bluhm, ‘A Preliminary Statement on the Dialogue Established Between the Reform Magazine *al-Manār* and the Malay-Indonesian World,’ *Indonesia Circle* 32, 1983, pp. 35-42; id., ‘*al-Manār* and Aḥmad Soorkattie: Links in the Chain of Transmission of Muḥammad ‘Abduh’s Ideas to the Malay-Speaking World,’ in Peter G. Riddell and Tony Street, eds., *Islam: Essays on Scripture, Thought and Society*, Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1997, pp. 295-308.

dedicated people to the idea of a caliphal government during the first quarter of the 20th century.<sup>21</sup> Unlike his two forerunners Afghānī and ‘Abduh, Riḍā witnessed various upheavals in the Muslim world from the First World War to the abolition of the Caliphate. Riḍā reacted strongly to such events, and other ‘external dangers’ threatening the Muslim identity, especially the military armies of Europe occupying most of the Muslim lands, the Christian missionaries preaching their Gospel among Muslims, and the ideas and institutions imported from the West which influenced young Muslim minds in particular. Besides this he preoccupied himself with fighting other ‘internal danger,’ namely—superstitions and un-Islamic beliefs and practices, the attachment to the *Taqīd* (imitation) and the abandonment of *Ijtihād*.<sup>22</sup>

Following the Young Turk revolution in 1908 Riḍā returned to his homeland, Syria, and opened a propaganda campaign in favor of unity between Arabs and Turks in the Ottoman Empire. In the following year he traveled to Istanbul with two aims: to raise fund for his Islamic missionary school (see, chapter 3) and to help improve Arab-Turkish relations. He failed in both goals. In 1910, after a year in Istanbul, he reached the sad conclusion that Young Turks were just mocking him. After that, Riḍā no longer had faith in the Ottoman Empire. E. Tauber divided Riḍā’s political activism in the years preceding the First World War into two: open activity and secret activity.<sup>23</sup> Open activity focused on his above-mentioned missionary Islamic school. Secret activity was expressed in the establishment of the ‘Society of the Arab Association.’ He saw the Great War as an opportunity for the Arabs to launch a revolt against the Ottomans and liberate their countries from the Empire’s yoke. He also tried to persuade the British Intelligence Department in Cairo of the influence which the Arab Association had on the Arab officers of the Ottoman army and the officers’ willingness to rebel against their Turkish and German commanders.<sup>24</sup> His attitude towards the British has always been reserved on the account of their suspicions and their ambitions in regard to Arab countries. At that time Riḍā developed anti-

<sup>21</sup> Yusuf H. R. Seferita, ‘Rashīd Riḍā’s Quest for an Islamic Government,’ *Hamdard Islamicus* 8/4, 1985, pp. 35-50

<sup>22</sup> Id., ‘The Concept of Religious Authority according to Muḥammad ‘Abduh and Rashīd Riḍā,’ *The Islamic Quarterly* 30, 1986, p. 159.

<sup>23</sup> E. Tauber, ‘Rashīd Riḍā and Political Attitudes during World War I,’ *The Muslim World* 85/1-2, 1995, pp. 107-121

<sup>24</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 107



Hashimite feeling especially after King Ḥusayn rejected his plan for Arab union. Riḍā came therefore closer to the Saudi Royal family and their revival of the Wahhābī ideas, whose ideas he considered as the nearest to his Salafī views. He also believed that Ibn Sa‘ūd was the only person capable of expelling King Ḥusayn from the Ḥijāz.<sup>25</sup>

Riḍā stressed to Ibn Sa‘ūd the necessity of reaching an alliance between the rulers of the Arabian Peninsula in order to strengthen the political power of the Arabs. He approached Imam Yaḥyā of Yemen and al-Sayyid al-Idrīsī of ‘Asīr. The war prevented the continuation of contacts with Yaḥyā and al-Idrīsī. In 1912 Riḍā had gone to India on a lecture tour and on his way back to Egypt he passed through Kuwait and Masqat and made contacts with Arab leaders there, trying to persuade them of the necessity to establish an independent Arab state.<sup>26</sup> His fear that the Arab provinces of the Ottoman Empire would fall into the hands of imperialist European powers was another important motive behind his establishment of the Arab Association. His fear increased after the defeat of the Empire by the Italians in Libya (1911) and its defeat in the Balkan War (1912-1913). For example, he published a pamphlet in which he strongly warned the Arabs of the intention of foreigners to gain control over Syria and the shores of the Arabian Peninsula as a first stage in their plan ‘to destroy the Ka‘ba and transport the Black Stone and the ashes of the Prophet to the Louvre.’<sup>27</sup>

Riḍā recapitulated the concept of Sunnism within the framework of Hanbalism. This led him to give fervent support to the revival of Wahhabism in Central Arabia. What attracted him in their doctrines was their call for pristine Islam and the full rejection of sainthood and superstitions.<sup>28</sup> Riḍā disliked the later development of mystical thought and practice in Sunnī Islam. He regularly attacked what he saw as the ‘spiritual dangers’ of excessive mysticism. These practices within such mystic orders could lead to the neglect of the forms of worship indicated in the Qur’ān and Sunna. The neglect of religious duties by those Ṣūfīs could lead, in Riḍā’s mind, to weakness in Islamic society, and to the corruption of the umma by teaching that Islam is a religion of passive submission.<sup>29</sup>

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 120

<sup>26</sup> Tauber (1998), *op. cit.*, p. 262.

<sup>27</sup> As quoted in Ibid., p. 263

<sup>28</sup> Hourani, *Arabic Thought*, p. 231

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 232



As evidenced in his unrelenting tide of writings, Riḍā placed a high premium on fighting against the state of stagnancy among Muslims, and defending Islam against its opponents. He endeavoured to achieve reform in the Muslim world while at the same time preserving its identity and culture. As a Muslim reformist, Riḍā not only has historical importance, but also continues to exercise overt influence on modern Muslim thought today. His journal, which started as a private project, signposted the path for many subsequent Muslim thinkers in developing their ideas on many political, social and religious issues. For instance, the religious activism and ideological career of Ḥasan al-Bannā (1904-1949), the founder of the movement of the Muslim Brothers, has its roots in Riḍā's religious thought. As a young man, al-Bannā frequented his circle and regularly read his journal. He received his early religious training in Islam from his father Aḥmad al-Bannā, who was a close friend of Riḍā and a subscriber to his journal.<sup>30</sup> Al-Bannā also attempted to continue Riḍā's work by carrying on *al-Manār* after the latter's death in 1935.<sup>31</sup>

### *Previous Studies*

A few studies have drawn attention to Riḍā's views on Christianity. As early as 1920, Ignaz Goldziher noted that missionary writings in Arabic on Islam, namely in Egypt, lay the foundation for an 'energetic reaction' from the side of the group of *al-Manār* publicists. The Hungarian orientalist gave a short mention to the Arabic edition of the Gospel of Barnabas, describing it as 'eine apokryphe Fälschung.'<sup>32</sup> In his own words:

Kräftiger ist die gegen die Missionsarbeit in umfangreichen Abhandlungen entfaltete positive Apologetik und Polemik. Zu bemerken ist der stetig wiederkehrende Hinweis auf die unbestrittene Authentie des Korans gegenüber der von christlich theologischer Seite selbst angezweifelte und bestrittene Authentie ganzer grossen Teile der bibli-

---

<sup>30</sup> Letter, Aḥmad al-Bannā to Riḍā, Cairo, 10 August, 1935; Riḍā's private archive, Cairo.

<sup>31</sup> See, Brynar Lia, *The Society of Muslim Brothers in Egypt*, London, 1998, p. 56, pp. 220-221, and p. 260.

<sup>32</sup> I. Goldziher, *Die Richtungen der islamischen Koranauslegung*, Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1920, p. 342; see the Arabic translation of the book, 'Abd al-Ḥalim al-Najjār, trans., *Madhāhib al-Tafsīr al-'Islāmī*, Cairo, 1955, p. 370.

schen Urkunden und ihre Forschung über die Textverderbnis, selbst der als authentisch anerkannten Texte.<sup>33</sup>

In his *Islam and Modernism in Egypt*, Charles Adams hinted that *al-Manār* placed particular emphasis upon the necessity of counter-acting Christian missions in the Muslim lands by forming the school of Dār al-Da‘wa wā al-Irshād (he translated it as ‘the Society of Propaganda and Guidance’).<sup>34</sup> He made brief mention of the anti-Christian writings of Riḍā and of *al-Manār*’s most prolific polemicist Muḥammad Tawfiq Ṣidqī (1881-1922), which we shall discuss in detail (see, chapter 6).<sup>35</sup> In his study of the *al-Manār* commentary on the Qur‘ān, the Dominican Islamicist Jacques Jomier devoted one chapter to the ideas of the commentary on Christianity and Judaism.<sup>36</sup> The author noted that ‘le Commentaire du Manār parlera donc beaucoup de la personne de Jésus et de la Trinité.’<sup>37</sup> He discussed in some detail Riḍā’s counterattacks against missionary writings on Islam, and his views on the figure of Jesus, his presumed divinity, the Trinity, the authenticity of the Gospels, the Crucifixion, the veneration of saints, etc. He maintained that ‘la lutte, on le voit, est serrée et Rachīd Riḍā se lance dans une apologétique infatigable.’<sup>38</sup> At another level, Henri Laoust followed the great stages in the career of Riḍā with special emphasis on his role in the formulation of the modern Da‘wa (or what he labelled as missionary apologetics), comparing his practices with those current in the Middle Ages. He paid little attention, however, to Riḍā’s works on Christianity and other principal publications, which he used as reading materials for future Muslim missionaries trained in his Dār al-Da‘wa wā al-Irshād.<sup>39</sup>

As an attempt to understand the concept of ‘l’amitié des Musulmans pour les Chrétiens’ in the verses of al-Mā’idah (5: 82-83) and their place in the field of Christian-Muslim dialogue, Maurice Borrmans,

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., pp. 342-43.

<sup>34</sup> Adams, *Modernism*, p. 196.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., pp. 241-242.

<sup>36</sup> J. Jomier, *Le Commentaire Coranique du Manār*, Paris, 1954; especially the chapter, ‘Le Commentaire du Manār, en face du Judaïsme et du Christianisme le devoir de Prosélytisme,’ pp. 301-337 (Quoted below, *Commentaire*).

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 307.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 314.

<sup>39</sup> For more details, see Henri Laoust, ‘Renouveau de l’apologétique missionnaire traditionnelle au XXe siècle dans l’oeuvre de Rashīd Riḍā,’ in *Prédication et propagande au Moyen Age: Islam, Byzance, Occident*, Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1980, pp. 271-279.

the editor of the Catholic journal *IslamChristianiana*, made an annotated French translation of the *al-Manār* commentary on these passages.<sup>40</sup> In the context of Muslim discussions on Christianity, the Lebanese scholar Maḥmūd Ayoub analyzed Riḍā's work *Shubuhāt al-Naṣrānā wā Ḥujaj al-'Islām* (Allegations of Christians and Proofs of Islam), a collection of sixteen articles which firstly appeared in *al-Manār* (see, chapter 4). The author discussed a few themes of the book, comparing it with 'Abduh's above-mentioned work on Islam and Christianity, and with two later studies, namely: *Muḥāḍarāt fī al-Naṣrāniyya* by Sheikh Abū Zahrah (Cairo, 1965), and his *Muqāranat al-'Adyān* (Cairo, 1966).<sup>41</sup> He concluded that the attitudes of both 'Abduh and Riḍā were not intransigent, but could be regarded as conciliatory. 'While asserting the superiority of Islam as a comprehensive guide for human life and a rational faith,' Ayoub argued, 'Riḍā wished that the men of faith in both Christian and Muslim communities would live in harmony and amity.'<sup>42</sup> In her *Qur'ānic Christians*, Jane D. McAuliffe studied the interpretations of *Tafsīr al-Manār* as part of the long tradition of Islamic exegesis. She dealt mainly with such Christian themes as 'Nazarenes of faith and action' and the 'followers of the Qur'ānic Jesus.'<sup>43</sup>

Christine Schirrmacher studied the introductions written by the Lebanese Christian Khalīl Sa'ādeh (1857-1934) and Riḍā to the Gospel of Barnabas. In his Arabic translation of that Gospel, Sa'ādeh depended on the English translation made by the Anglican clergyman and scholar, Lonsdale Ragg, and his scholarly collaborator and wife, Laura, from the Italian manuscript (preserved in the Austrian National Library in Vienna).<sup>44</sup> Schirrmacher observed that Riḍā held an attitude similar to some Western scholars in the eighteenth century who were convinced the Gospel of Barnabas, because of its ancient pre-Islamic

---

<sup>40</sup> Maurice Borrmans, 'Le commentaire du *Manar* à propos du verset coranique sur l'amitié des Musulmans pour les Chrétiens (5:82),' *IslamChristianiana* 1, 1975, pp. 71-86.

<sup>41</sup> M. Ayoub, 'Muslim Views of Christianity: Some Modern Examples,' *IslamChristianiana* 10, 1984, pp. 49-70.

<sup>42</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 60.

<sup>43</sup> Jane D. McAuliffe, *Qur'ānic Christians: An Analysis of Classical and Modern Exegesis*, Cambridge University Press, 1991.

<sup>44</sup> Lonsdale and Laura Ragg, trans. & eds., *The Gospel of Barnabas: Edited and Translated from the Italian Manuscript in the Imperial Library at Vienna*, Oxford, 1907.

character, was not invented by Muslims.<sup>45</sup> J. Toland was, however, ironical in his comment on the Gospel: ‘Here you have not a new Gospel, but also a true one, if you believe the Mahometans<sup>46</sup> [...] How great (by the way) is the ignorance of those, who make this [Gospel] as an original invention of the Mahometans!’<sup>47</sup> Although Schirrmacher placed both introductions in the context of prior Western treatment and of the later Muslim apologetic use of the Gospel, she did not critically examine the whole text of the introductions themselves, especially against the background of the whole corpus of *al-Manār*; including Riḍā’s perception of this Gospel before and after the appearance of his edition. Therefore, Sa‘ādeh’s introduction should be studied in relation to the English one of the Raggs, which he sometimes quoted literally.

In his *Muslim Perceptions of Christianity*, Hugh Goddard described Riḍā’s views in a similar brief way.<sup>48</sup> For him, Riḍā’s works on Christianity were influenced by the Indian Muslim polemicist Raḥmatullāh al-Qairanāwī (1834-1891). In his three-page analysis, the author maintained that since Riḍā’s Arabic edition of the Gospel of Barnabas appeared it has become a standard work in Muslim writings about Christianity. In his *Images of Jesus Christ in Islam*, Oddbjørn Leirvik shortly examined the teachings of Jesus and the concept of the Crucifixion and death of Jesus according to the thoughts of both Riḍā and ‘Abduh and their general skepticism towards the canonical Gospels.<sup>49</sup> Olaf Schumann dedicated one chapter of his work, *Jesus the Messiah in Muslim Thought*, to the ideas developed by ‘Abduh and the school of *al-Manār* on Jesus. The author studied Riḍā’s method of interpreting the relevant Qur’ānic passages on the divinity of Jesus, his miracles, as well as his publication of the Gospel of Barnabas.<sup>50</sup>

---

<sup>45</sup> C. Schirrmacher, *Mit den Waffen des Gegners: Christlich-muslimische Kontroversen im 19. und 20. Jahrhundert*, Berlin: Schwartz Verlag, 1992, p. 304.

<sup>46</sup> John Toland, *Nazarenus or Jewish, Gentile and Mahometan Christianity*, London, 1718, p. 15.

<sup>47</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 17.

<sup>48</sup> Hugh Goddard, *Muslim Perceptions of Christianity*, London: Gery Seal Book, 1996, pp. 55-58.

<sup>49</sup> Oddbjørn Leirvik, *Images of Jesus Christ in Islam*, Uppsala: Swedish Institute of Missionary Research, 1999, pp. 140-143 (Quoted below, *Images*).

<sup>50</sup> Olaf Schumann, *Jesus the Messiah in Muslim Thought*, ISPCK/HMI, 2002, pp. 112-144; *id.*, *Der Christus der Muslime: christologische Aspekte in der arabisch-islamischen Literatur*, Cologne/Vienna: Böhlau Verlag, 1988; *id.*, ‘Arabische Schrift-

In his PhD thesis, Simon Wood made an annotated translation of Riḍā's aforementioned work *Shubuhāt al-Naṣārā*.<sup>51</sup> Riḍā's writings, Wood argued, 'reflect an overwhelming awareness of Muslim weakness relative to non-Muslim strength. The tone of calm confidence one finds in earlier classical Arabic texts is altogether lacking in the works of Riḍā and his contemporaries.'<sup>52</sup> In Wood's view, following Riḍā's steps, later contemporary influential Muslim thinkers staunchly upheld the 'traditional supersessionist position on pluralism in general and Christianity in particular.'<sup>53</sup> Wood applied the term of 'supersessionism' in studying Muslim traditions. The same view was held by the controversial polemicist Bat Ye'or, who defined the Muslim 'supersessionist' current as claiming that the whole Biblical history of Israel and Christianity was Islamic history, that all the Prophets, Kings of Israel and Judea, and Jesus were Muslims. That the People of the Book should dare to challenge this statement is intolerable arrogance for an Islamic theologian. Jews and Christians were thus deprived of their Holy Scriptures and of their salvific value.<sup>54</sup>

### *Sources and Organization of the Study*

The current study makes use of several sources. First of all, it aims at examining the bulky corpus of *al-Manār*, attempting to trace the development of the thoughts of its author on Christianity and missionary activities of his time, and to determine the circumstances, which affected his discourse.

Besides surveying *al-Manār*, I will make use of Riḍā's private papers remaining in his personal archive in the possession of his family in

---

steller begegnen Christus,' in *Hinaus aus der Festung: Beiträge zur Begegnung mit Menschen anderen Glaubens und anderer Kultur*, Hamburg: E.B.-Verlag, 1997, pp. 145-174.

<sup>51</sup> Simon Wood, 'The Criticisms of Christians and the arguments of Islam: An annotated translation of Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā's *Shubuhāt al-Naṣārā wā Hujaj al-Islām*,' unpublished PhD thesis, Temple University, May 2004. The dissertation has been published as, *Christian Criticisms, Islamic Proofs: Rashīd Riḍā's Modernist Defense of Islam*, Oxford: OneWorld, 2008. The quotations below are based on Wood's unpublished thesis.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 22.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 59.

<sup>54</sup> B. Ya'or, *Islam and Dhimmitude: Where Civilizations Collide*, Cranbury, Cranbury, NJ: Fairleigh Dickinson University Press/Associated University Presses and Lancaster, 2002, p. 370.

Cairo.<sup>55</sup> The archive contains thousands of papers, letters, documents, and published and unpublished manuscripts. The papers were unorganised in carton boxes and plastic bags. I have generally studied and organised the whole collection, which can be divided as follows:

- 1) His diaries, which date from his arrival in Egypt in 1897. I have found about 25 booklets in which he registered his personal memoirs, telling us about his health problems, national and international events, his meetings with various figures, his living costs and the administrative affairs of *al-Manār*, etc.
- 2) Documents of Arab organisations and societies to which he contributed, such as Shams al-'Islām (The Sun of Islam), the aforementioned Dār al-Da'wa wal-'Irshād, and Jam'iyyat al-Rābiṭa al-Sharqiyya (Association of Oriental League).
- 3) His correspondences with contemporary Muslim and Arab figures.
- 4) Other personal documents and belongings, such as the contract of the establishment of Dār al-Manār, his bank transactions, and the documents of the *waqf* of al-Qalamūn Mosque, established by his family in his village of origin.
- 5) Drafts of published and unpublished memoirs and articles by 'Abduh.

In the course of the preparation of the present study, and as a result of my findings in Riḍā's archive, I managed to discover the family archives of two of Riḍā's associates. The first one contains the archival material of the Syro-Turkish ex-military captain in the Ottoman army Zekī Ḥishmat Kirām (1886-1946), which was preserved by his son in Kornwestheim, near Stuttgart in Germany. Kirām was one of Riḍā's informants and translators, who also kept Riḍā up to date about the developments of German orientalism, and briefed him about the situ-

---

<sup>55</sup> The research took place in July-August 2004. I am very indebted to Riḍā's grandson Mr. Fu'ād Riḍā for giving me access to the papers of his family archive in Cairo. Some of the materials of this collection have been used in two earlier studies. In his biography of Riḍā, Aḥmad al-Sharabāshī made use of many documents of the archive in documenting Riḍā's life and works; A. al-Sharabāshī, *Rashīd Riḍā Ṣāhib al-Manār 'Aṣruhu wā Ḥayātuh wā Maṣādīr Thaḳāfatih*, Cairo, 1970. In his study, Aḥmad Fahd al-Shawābika also employed the archive material in sketching Riḍā's political and intellectual life; A. Fahd al-Shawābika, *Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā wā dawruh fī al-Ḥayāh al-Fikriyya wā al-Siyāsiyya*, 'Ammān: Dār 'Ammār, 1989; originally a PhD thesis presented to the Department of History at 'Ayn Shams University in Cairo in 1986.

ation of Muslim institutions in Berlin and other significant news items in the German press. It largely includes Kirām's correspondences, diaries and unpublished manuscripts and typescripts and other published works.<sup>56</sup> The second archive contains the papers of Taqī al-Dīn al-Hilālī (1893-1987), one of the most significant figures of Salafism in Morocco. After having contacted Hilālī's family in Meknès, I managed to get access to his remaining archive.<sup>57</sup> Although there are no remaining letters of Riḍā in both archives, they are still very significant in shedding more light on the position of both figures in Riḍā's world. Further study of all these documents is also needed in the future.

Polemics are never produced in a vacuum. They should always be seen against the background of their author's political and social context. The first three chapters of this study try to set a clear scene for assessing *al-Manār's* views of Christianity. It is also important to underscore the development of *al-Manār's* contributions to Christianity by analysing Riḍā's major polemical works on the subject in more detail; and to investigate his position, which went through a full circle of development in more than three decades.

The *first* chapter investigates the methods that Riḍā, who had no command of Western languages, used in compensating his lack of direct access to primary sources on the West.<sup>58</sup> As *al-Manār's* views on Christianity and polemics against Christian missions comprised a part of Riḍā's whole understanding of the West, I would argue that one should first look at *al-Manār's* sources of knowledge of the West before discussing his polemics on Christianity. The chapter will try to map out a significant part of the literary setting of Riḍā's journal in that regard by dwelling upon two different aspects. *First of all*, we focus on Riḍā's readings of various translated European works, which

---

<sup>56</sup> Special gratitude is due to Dr. Harūn Zekī Kirām, Kornwestheim–Germany, his son, for gifting me the whole archive of his father during my one-week research in Germany in January 2005.

<sup>57</sup> It took place in January-February 2006. I express my thanks to Dr. Abdel-Ilāh Ijāmi, who introduced me to al-Hilālī's family, Mr. Abdel-Ghani Bū Zekrī, the grandson of al-Hilālī, and Dr. Mohammad Daraoui of the University of Meknès, one of Hilālī's students, for their generosity and good reception during my stay in Morocco.

<sup>58</sup> Emad Eldin Shahin, *Through Muslim Eyes: M. Rashīd Riḍā and the West*, Virginia: IIIT, 1994, p. 91 (Quoted below, *Eyes*). Peter Watson was mistaken when he stated that Riḍā spoke several European languages and studied widely among the sciences. See his 'Islam and the West: why it needn't be war,' *The Times*, London, 29 April, 2004.



*al-Manār* republished or quoted from the local and foreign press.<sup>59</sup> In his polemics, Riḍā made use of Western discussions on Christianity and discoveries on Biblical themes which were investigated in Arabic journals and newspapers of his time. It has sometimes been very difficult to trace the Western sources used in *al-Manār*, since Riḍā usually cited titles in Arabic translation with names of authors transliterated in Arabic. During my research I have managed to identify most of these cases and their religious backgrounds, especially within the history of Christian modern movements and controversies in Europe. Two cases are selected for further special analysis. We firstly examine the controversy known as the *Babel-und-Bibel-Streit* (1903), which had been launched by the German Professor of Assyriology and Semitic languages Friedrich Delitzsch (1850-1922). Riḍā used this case as a tool in order to prove the Qurʾānic insistence on the corruption of the Holy Scriptures. The second one is his reaction to the Arabic translation of the *Encyclopedia of Islam* (*EI*), and his harsh response to the analysis developed by the Dutch orientalist A.J. Wensinck (1882-1939) on the figure of ʿIbrāhīm. This affair led to the dismissal of Wensinck from his post as a member of the Royal Academy of the Arabic Language in Cairo in 1933. As his ideas were not agreeable with Islamic traditions on this subject, and were considered disrespectful by many Muslim religious circles, Wensinck's dismissal came after an anti-orientalist press campaign, initiated mostly by religious activists. As the two cases are different both with regard to their contents as well as dates (the first from 1903 and the second from 1933), a comparison between the two reflects how Riḍā's treatment of such subjects had changed over the years. In the second place, we shall discuss the question of how Riḍā's network in the Muslim world and abroad played an important role in his acquisition of knowledge both on topics pertinent to Christianity and on Western scholarly works on Islam. The three hitherto unstudied archives will be of great importance for this part. To establish the precise extent

---

<sup>59</sup> About the translation movement in the Arab World, see, for example, A.S. Eban, 'The Modern Literary Movement in Egypt,' *International Affairs* 20/2, 1944, pp. 166-178. Ibrahim Abu-Lughod, *Arab Rediscovery of Europe: A Study in Cultural Encounters*, Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1963, pp. 62-65. Cf. Nadav Safran, *Egypt in Search of Political Community: An Analysis of the Intellectual and Political Evolution of Egypt, 1804-1952*, Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1961, pp. 58-61; H.A.R. Gibb, 'Studies in Contemporary Arabic Literature,' *Bulletin of the School of Oriental Studies* 7/1, 1933, pp. 1-22.



of this transnational network would fall outside the scope of the chapter. But some unpublished documents present an interesting picture of his regular requests to friends with knowledge of Western works to brief him with Arabic translations. We will focus our attention on some of the prominent figures, known as the *Manār* literary group, who contributed to the journal with their reflections on the West and Christianity or directly with polemical reactions to Christian writers. Our point is not to discuss individual interpretations, but rather to make a coherent presentation of those contributors, whose thoughts would imply positions accepted by Riḍā himself.

In the *second* chapter we shall examine the diversity of Riḍā's relations with prominent Arab Christian luminaries by illustrating his cooperation, conflicts, and religious and political confrontations with them. What concern us here are his intellectual (mis)perceptions of this generation of Christians, who made a great contribution to the formation of the modern history of the Arab world. In order to get a good overview, three different aspects are put forward for discussion. Firstly, as a point of departure we briefly sketch Riḍā's political activities with other Syrian Christian nationalists who had similar political ideas. A more focused attempt is made to revisit responses to the writings of Syrian Christian intellectual émigrés, such as Farah Anṭūn (1874-1922), Jurjī Zaidān (1861-1914), the Syrian doctor Shiblī Shumayyil (1850-1917), Khalīl Sa'ādeh, and others. Most of these Christian partners were very critical of their own religion and its clergy. Secondly, it will be important to shift the discussion to investigate some of Riḍā's heavy responses to the mouthpiece of the Syrian Jesuit community, *al-Machreq*, and its criticism of his ideas, especially his last work, *al-Waḥī al-Muḥammadī* (mentioned below, *al-Waḥī*).<sup>60</sup> Why was Riḍā more drawn to these secularists (who were of Christian origin, but sharp critics of the clerics and the *Ulamā*), while vigorously attacking the Jesuit magazine for its critique of Islam? Thirdly, the chapter moves to speak about Riḍā's attitude towards the question of Egyptian nationalism and the status of the native Egyptian Coptic community. For the sake of comparison, it is appropriate to probe Riḍā's relationship with them over the years. An important historical point was his reaction to the Coptic Congress in 1911 in Asyūṭ (Southern Egypt). The prime reason behind organising the Congress was the assassination of the Coptic Prime Minister Buṭrus Ghālī Pasha

---

<sup>60</sup> R. Riḍā, *al-Waḥī al-Muḥammadī*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1934.

in 1910 by a member of the National Party, the 25 year-old Ibrahim Naṣīf al-Wardānī. This period is considered as one of the most critical points in the history of the Muslim-Coptic relations in Egypt. The Copts had seen his assassination as the culmination of the anti-Christian propaganda by Muslims. The Congress resulted in a petition briefing Coptic demands, which was presented to the Khedive and the British.<sup>61</sup> As a Muslim thinker, Riḍā immediately embarked on responding to the Coptic demands in a series of articles, which he later collected in his work: *Muslims and Copts or the Egyptian Congress*.<sup>62</sup>

The *third* chapter is devoted to a general overview of *al-Manār's* response to missionary work by analysing the reflections of Riḍā and his associates on the theological and social effects of missions in the Muslim world in the late 19th and early 20th century. We shall see that even Riḍā's separate works on Christianity came as reaction to missionary attacks against Islam and its doctrines. As Christian missionary groups in Western colonies used to consider themselves the religious spokesmen of the dominant Western civilisation,<sup>63</sup> Riḍā's understanding of missions should be seen within the background of the history of European colonialism. By investigating Riḍā's views over the years, the chapter paves the way for the last four chapters by specifically highlighting *al-Manār's* various confrontations with the missionary enterprise in the Muslim world. What was the nature of Riḍā's combat against missions? How did he judge missionary education? We shall also consider Riḍā's deployment of his energetic activity of Da'wa and his aspiration for the conversion of non-Muslims to Islam, such as the well-known case of Lord Headley in England. He saw the conversion of Europeans to Islam as a sharp indication

---

<sup>61</sup> Kyriakos Mikhail, *Copts and Moslems under British Control*, London, 1911; S. Shekaly, 'Prime Minister and Assassin: Butros Ghali and Wardani,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 13/1, 1977, pp. 112-123; Moustafa El-Fikī, *Copts in Egyptian politics (1919-1952)*, General Egyptian Book Organization, 1991, pp. 38-45; Muḥammad Šāliḥ al-Murrākishī, *Tafkīr Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā min Khilāl Majallat al-Manār (1898-1935)*, Tunisian Press: Tunisia and Algeria, 1985, pp. 181-183; Jacques Tagher, *Christians in Muslim Egypt: An Historical Study of the Relations between Copts and Muslims from 640 to 1922*, Altenberge: Oros Verlag, 1998.

<sup>62</sup> Rashid Riḍā, *al-Muslimūn wā al-Qibṭ aw al-Mu'tamar al-Miṣrī*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1st ed., 1329/1911.

<sup>63</sup> Hermas J. Bergman, 'The Diplomatic Missionary John van Ess in Iraq,' *The Muslim World* 72, 1982, p. 180; cf. Jacques Waardenburg, 'European Civilization and Islam in History,' in Joergen S. Nielsen, ed., *The Christian-Muslim Frontier: Chaos, Clash or Dialogue*, London and New York: I.B. Tauris Publishers, 1998, p. 11.

of the failure of Christian missions to convert highly educated and real Muslims. How did Riḍā understand the significance of propaganda for religions? Did he relate the missionary work to colonialism? How far did he interact with his Muslim readers in their daily encounter with missionary work? How effective were his efforts of enhancing Islamic missionary work in the face of Christian missionary work?

The *fourth* chapter takes up a detailed analysis of Riḍā's above-mentioned work *Shubuhāt al-Naṣārā*, which has been recently translated in English by Simon Wood. As a collection of articles (later compiled in one volume), this specific work represents *al-Manār*'s formative views, which Riḍā began to write as response to a variety of Christian publications on Islam as early as 1901, two years after his arrival in Egypt. As Riḍā wrote his replies occasionally, his articles came out as incoherent, but full of lively polemics against various contemporary missionary writings on Islam. For the sake of clarity, I shall not follow the chronological order of Riḍā's discussions according to their appearance in *al-Manār*. In order to have a more systematic analysis of his ideas, it is appropriate to set up the structure of the chapter on the basis of the replies Riḍā developed to each of his counterparts separately. The most significant among these Christian writings were: 1) a piece of work by a certain Niqūlā Ya'qūb Ghabriyāl, an Egyptian missionary, which he entitled as *Researches of the Diligent in the dispute between Christians and Muslims*,<sup>64</sup> 2) the Protestant monthly magazine, *The Glad Tidings of Peace*, which was founded by a certain George Aswan in the town of Bilbīs (al-Sharqiyya province) in 1901,<sup>65</sup> and 3) the mouthpiece of the Society of Christian Education

---

<sup>64</sup> Niqūlā Ya'qūb Ghabriyāl, *Abḥāth* (sometimes *Mabāḥith*) *al-Mujtahidīn fī al-Khilāf Bayna al-Naṣārā wā al-Muslimīn*. The treatise was published for the first time in Cairo in 1901 by the American Mission in Egypt as a guide to missionary workers among Muslims; and was reprinted in 1913 and 1922. See, *Summer 1914 Edition of the Descriptive Guide to the Nile Mission Press*, Nile Mission Press, 1914, p. 40. It has been recently published by Asmār in Damascus (2006). Many Arab Christian websites make use of digitalized versions of the work in their answers to Islam. See for example, <http://www.the-good-way.com/arab/pdf/abook/rb4905a.pdf>; <http://www.callforall.net/data/literature/lectures/mabaheth/>;

and <http://www.alnour.com/response/mabaheth/mabaheth1.htm>. All accessed 7 June 2007.

<sup>65</sup> Arabic: *Bashā'ir al-Salām*. It is mentioned in the index of Arab journals (no. 490), Abdelghani Ahmed-Bioud, Hasan Hanafi and Habib Fiki, *3200 Majalla wā Jarīda 'Arabiyya 1800-1965: 3200 Revues Journaux Arabes de 1800 à 1965*, Paris: Bibliothèque Nationale, 1969, p. 28 (Quoted below, *Reveues*). It is also mentioned in the index of Dār al-Kutub al-Miṣriyya, Maḥmūd 'Ismā'il 'Abd Allāh, *Fahrās*

of the Orthodox Church, *The Standard of Zion*, which was founded in 1894.<sup>66</sup> Unfortunately I have not been able so far to find the last two works. We depend in our investigation on Riḍā's citations of them.

The *fifth* chapter assesses Riḍā's attempt to search for a 'true' Gospel by discussing his acceptance of the controversial Gospel of Barnabas. We shall discuss Riḍā's previous initiative to find another 'true' Gospel by publishing some fragments from the Gospel according to Tolstoy before his publication of the Arabic edition of Barnabas. I will also show that his introduction to the Gospel was one of his many strenuous efforts to prove the authenticity of the Islamic narrative on Jesus and his disciples, and his prediction of the coming of the prophet Muḥammad. In order to determine Riḍā's motives for publishing this Gospel, we shall focus on this Arabic edition by studying the two Arabic introductions, one written by Sa'ādeh as its translator and the other by Riḍā as publisher. It should be noted that Riḍā published the Gospel in two different editions: one prefaced by the two introductions, and the second including the text of the translation without any preface, which he probably published as a cheaper and popular edition. Riḍā, however, published his own preface in *al-Manār* simultaneously with the publication of the Gospel. The reason why he did not print that of Sa'ādeh in his journal is not known. Another question that springs to the mind of any researcher of the Arabic edition is: why would Sa'ādeh, as a Christian, embark upon such an initiative, and cooperate with Riḍā, while being aware of the sensitivity of the whole subject? Did Sa'ādeh actually believe in the authenticity of the Gospel of Barnabas? Another significant point is that no previous research, to my best knowledge, has studied Riḍā's publication of this Gospel against the background of the response of indigenous Christians of his age. Also *al-Manār* does not give a clear picture about whether there had been any anti-Barnabas polemics on the part of Christians in the Muslim world. It is significant, therefore, to examine: how did the Christians (especially in Egypt) perceive the Gospel, when they saw it translated into Arabic and published by a Syrian Muslim? What kind of polemical tone did they develop against it and

---

*al-Dawriyyāt al-'Arabiyya al-Latī tamtalikuhā al-Dār*, Cairo: Maṭba'at Dār al-Kutub, 1961, p. 42 (Quoted below, *Fahras*).

<sup>66</sup> Arabic: *Rāyat Ṣohyūn: Majalla 'Ilmiyya Dīniyya*. No. 1569, see, *Revues*, p. 84; and the *Fahras*, p. 143.

its publisher? In this chapter a hitherto unstudied anti-*Manār* treatise is presented. In the light of Riḍā's relation with the Coptic community, we shall examine the reaction of an Egyptian Muslim convert to Christianity and a follower of the Anglican missionary Temple Gairdner (1873-1928) against the Gospel under the title: *The Helmet of Salvation from the Hunting Trap of the Fra-Marinian Gospel of Barnabas*. The author of the treatise was a certain 'Iskandar Effendi 'Abd al-Masiḥ al-Bājūrī, who identified himself as the 'missionary of Giza.<sup>67</sup>

The *sixth* chapter evaluates the polemical contributions of the above-mentioned prolific polemicist Tawfiq Ṣidqī to Riḍā's journal. It is a follow-up to the first chapter in which we discuss some biographical information about him. In the period 1912-1916, Ṣidqī achieved considerable prominence in *al-Manār* due to his writings on various subjects, especially those related to the reliability of the Sunna, Christianity, and the application of modern medical and scientific discoveries to Islamic concepts. Most relevant for us in the chapter are his polemical articles, in which he, as a physician, was able to extensively exploit English critical works on Christianity and the life of Jesus. He also attempted to analyse a wide range of Biblical passages in order to prove many 'errors' and 'contradictions,' which could not be explained away. Our discussion shall centre on three works: 1) *The Religion of God in the Books of His Prophets*,<sup>68</sup> 2) *The Doctrine of Crucifixion and Salvation*,<sup>69</sup> and 3) *A View on the Scriptures of the New Testament and Christian Doctrines*.<sup>70</sup> All three

---

<sup>67</sup> 'Iskander 'Abd al-Masiḥ al-Bājūrī, *Khūdhāt al-Khalās min Sharak 'Injil Barnābā al-Frā Mārīnī al-Qannās*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Tawfiq, 1908. The *Khūdhāt al-Khalās (or helmet of salvation)* is a quotation from Ephesians 6:17. Yūsuf Manqāryūs, the head of the Clerical School in Egypt and founder of the Christian magazine *al-Ḥaqq*, took an important part in the publication of the treatise. Bājūrī later wrote an epilogue for Zwemer's biography of al-Ghazālī, *al-Ghawwāṣ wā al-La'ālī*, Cairo, 1926. See, Jamāl al-Bannā, 'al-Ghazālī fī 'Uyūn Masiḥiyya,' in *al-Rāya*, Doha, 3 January 2007.

Available at:

[http://www.raya.com/site/topics/article.asp?cu\\_no=2&item\\_no=211031&version=1&template\\_id=24&parent\\_id=23](http://www.raya.com/site/topics/article.asp?cu_no=2&item_no=211031&version=1&template_id=24&parent_id=23); accessed on 3 August, 2007.

<sup>68</sup> Tawfiq Ṣidqī, *Dīn Allah fī Kutub 'Anbyā'ih*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1330/1912 (Cited below, *Dīn*). For technical reasons, I shall use the treatises, not the articles, as references below.

<sup>69</sup> Rashīd Riḍā & Tawfiq Ṣidqī, *'Aqīda al-Ṣalb wā al-Fidā*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1331/1913 (Cited below, *'Aqīda*)

<sup>70</sup> T. Ṣidqī, *Naẓra fī Kutub al-'Ahd al-Jadīd wā 'Aq'āid al-Naṣārā*, 1st edition, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1331/1913 (Cited below, *Naẓra*).

works were first published as articles in *al-Manār*, and later compiled in separate treatises. Riḍā always published Ṣidqī's views alone, except in the case of the *Doctrine*. In corporation with him, Riḍā published the first edition of this treatise in 1331 (circa 1913). *Al-Manār* later published several editions. The first part contained Riḍā's commentary on the Qur'ānic verse related to the slaying and Crucifixion of Jesus (Sūrat al-Nisā', 157), earlier published in *Tafsīr al-Manār*. At the request of some of his readers, Riḍā decided to publish his commentary as a supplementary part to Ṣidqī's views. As the chapter is primarily devoted to a systematic and general analysis of Ṣidqī's ideas, I shall elaborate on Riḍā's reflections at the end of our discussion in order to keep the thematic lines of discussion as clear as possible. It is not my intention to rehearse all the christological attitudes expounded by Ṣidqī at length. My purpose is to examine these particular works, and to study their methods and the sources they have used.

The *seventh* chapter closes the analysis by examining how Riḍā exploited all these views in his *fatwās*. *Fatwās* are very important sources, not only because they enable us to understand the *mufti's* thoughts but they also reflect the urgent and appealing themes occupying Muslim societies. The chapter aims at serving two purposes. First of all, it sums up some elements which Riḍā already raised in his discussions on Christianity. Since its very beginning, different people in various regions brought their petitions to *al-Manār* inquiring about many subjects, including theological issues related to other religions. Secondly, it examines Riḍā's thinking in a wider perspective by focusing on the reception of his ideas by studying the dynamic contact with his readers. As we shall see, the petitions of most of these *fatwās* came as a result of the encounter of those Muslims with Christians and missionaries. The questions to be answered here are: What were the most urgent topics in the minds of his questioners? What was the influence of missionary activities and polemics against Islam (as circulated among Muslims of that time) on the contents of the questions?

Each chapter ends with a conclusion in which a summary of the headlines of its arguments and general remarks is mentioned. The whole study will be ended with a general conclusion in which its main observations are summarised.

## CHAPTER ONE

### RIḌĀ'S SOURCES OF KNOWLEDGE OF THE WEST, WITH SPECIAL REFERENCE TO CHRISTIANITY

Before dealing with Riḍā's sources of knowledge, it is significant to note that various researchers have already agreed that Western writings of the Higher Biblical Criticism which emerged in European universities in the 19th century had a great deal of influence on Muslim apologetic literature on Christianity. All the critical questions regarding the Biblical miracles and historical events were rapidly transferred to the Muslim lands, especially after the famous debate between the German missionary Karl Gottlieb Pfander (1803-1865) and the above-mentioned Indian polemicist al-Qairanāwī. Al-Qairanāwī used different works of famous European theologians, such as Thomas Hartwell Horne (1780-1862) and David Friedrich Strauss (1808-1874), who were influenced by the historical criticism of European theology. The Pfander-Qairanāwī public debate represents a crucial point in Christian-Muslim controversy in the modern time.<sup>1</sup> The arguments used by al-Qairanāwī affected most of the subsequent Muslim writings, including those of Riḍā, who often praised him as a great debater.

Albert Hourani described Riḍā as a Muslim scholar, who 'belonged to the last generation of those who could be fully educated and yet alive in a self-sufficient Islamic world of thought.'<sup>2</sup> Riḍā, moreover,

---

<sup>1</sup> Christine Schirrmacher, 'The Influence of Higher Bible Criticism on Muslim Apologetics in the Nineteenth Century,' in Jacques Waardenburg, ed., *Muslim Perceptions of Other Religions: A Historical Survey*, New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999, p. 274. Christian W. Troll, 'New Light on the Christian-Muslim Controversy of the Nineteenth and Twentieth Century,' *Die Welt des Islams* 34, 1994, pp. 85-88; C. Schirrmacher, 'Muslim apologetics and the Agra debates of 1854: a Nineteenth Century Turning Point,' *Bulletin of the Henry Martyn Institute of Islamic Studies* 13/1, 1994, pp. 74-84. Al-Qairanāwī's book *Izhār al-Ḥaqq* became the most popular and widely read book in the Ottoman Empire, see Ignaz Goldziher, 'Über Muhammedanische Polemik gegen ahl al-kitab,' *Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft* 32, 1878, pp. 343-344 (Quoted below, 'Polemik'). Al-Qairanāwī used such works as, T.H. Horne, *An Introduction to the Critical Study and Knowledge of the Holy Scripture*, London, 1818; and the English translation of D.F. Strauss, *Das Leben Jesu*, Bonn, 1835.

<sup>2</sup> Hourani, *Arabic Thought*, p. 83.



believed that if it were not for the Church, for politicians, and for the inner decay of the Islamic tenets of faith, Europe might well become Muslim.<sup>3</sup>

Unlike his mentor ‘Abduh (who had close personal relations with a number of Europeans, traveled more than once in Europe, and was able to read French),<sup>4</sup> Riḍā could not read in any foreign language, except very little Turkish. But he managed to draw his vast knowledge of the Western world from various sources. On more than one occasion, he stated that he acquired his primary experience about the modern progress of the West, when he was in Lebanon through his discussions and personal contact with those whom he labelled as ‘liberal Christian intellectuals’ and with American missionaries. As a studious visitor of American missionary bookshops and Christian societies, he started to read their books and journals, such famous Arabic journals as *al-Muqtaṭaf* and *al-Ṭabīb*.<sup>5</sup> In addition, the Arab world witnessed at this time a rapid increase in the number of translated books in various fields. Publishing ventures (mostly dominated by Syrian Christians) brought their readers news and popular treatment of Western thought and institutions from many perspectives. This provided Riḍā with another opportunity to compensate his inability to read in Western languages with the help of translated books.<sup>6</sup>

The present chapter is devoted to study Riḍā’s attempts to find his sources of knowledge on the West. Although *al-Manār* gives a good picture of Riḍā’s line of thought in this regard, his remaining papers in the family archive could add to our knowledge more about other dynamic factors, which obviously contributed to *al-Manār*’s conceptualisation of the West in general, and of Christianity in particular. A detailed analysis of Riḍā’s sources would go beyond the scope of this study. I also admit that it will be unattainable to systematically trace all the sources exploited by Riḍā throughout his journal’s thirty-

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 236.

<sup>4</sup> ‘Abduh was a friend of the English writer Wilfrid Scawen Blunt. See, Blunt’s diaries, *My Diaries: Being a Personal Narrative of Events*, 2 parts, London: Martin Secker, 1918. See also the account of his visit accompanied by Blunt to the English philosopher Herbert Spencer in his house in Brighton (August 1903), part II, pp. 69-70.

<sup>5</sup> See, Riḍā, *Azhar*, p. 193.

<sup>6</sup> Robert M. Haddad, *Syrian Christians in Muslim Society: An interpretation*, Princeton University Press, 1970, pp. 88-89; Emad Eldin Shahin, ‘Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā’s Perspectives on the West as Reflected in *al-Manār*,’ *The Muslim World* 79, 1989, pp. 113-114.



seven years of publication. Selecting representative samples of these sources, however, would be sufficient to evaluate adequately the kind of approach he was using both in his criticism of other religions and his own justification for defending Islam.

### 1.1. *Western Ideas in Arabic Print*

In his pioneering study of Riḍā's views on the West, Shahin has noted that the introduction of many European writings on sociology, jurisprudence and politics into the modern Arabic literary movement played an important role in moulding the political and social awareness of Muslim thinkers. In 1876, for instance, a disciple of Afghānī translated *Histoire de la Civilization en Europe* by the French historian F. Guizot. 'Abduh also admired the book and read it to his Azharī students in his house.<sup>7</sup>

Riḍā too was keenly aware of the significance of making use of such works in his journal. Shahin has traced a few of the Western works, which Riḍā read and fully admired. Among the names which his journal introduced and reviewed were Dumas, Tolstoy, Hugo and Homer, Gustave Le Bon, E. Desmoulins, Shaw, and others. Three pieces of writing which had a particularly profound impact on his thought, and that he frequently quoted in *al-Manār*, were Le Bon's *Les Lois Phycologiques de l'évolution des Peuples*, Desmoulins' *A Quoi Tient la Supériorité des Anglo-Saxons?*, and Spencer's *Education and The Principles of Sociology*.<sup>8</sup> One of his most important objectives in analysing them was, besides, to sustain his arguments against Western missionary assaults on Islam. He and his group of apologists often quoted these studies in order to justify Islam as a way of life that is in harmony with the 20th century ethics and beliefs.<sup>9</sup>

In its early years, *al-Manār* enthusiastically reviewed works translated by the Egyptian jurist Aḥmad Fathī Zaghlūl (1863-1914),<sup>10</sup> such as his translation of *L'Islam: impressions et etudes* by Henry de Castries

<sup>7</sup> Shahin, *Eyes*, p. 25.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 27.

<sup>9</sup> Eban, *op. cit.*, p. 172-171.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, Zaghlūl was the brother of the well-known political leader Sa'd Zaghlūl, who was known for his translations of works by people such as Jeremy Bentham on the principles of Legislation, and the French works of Descartes, Desmoulins and Le Bon, see, Afaf Lutfi al-Sayyid, *Egypt and Cromer, A Study in Anglo-Egyptian Relations*, London: John Murray, 1968, p. 152

(1850-1927).<sup>11</sup> Riḍā's citation of Zaghlūl's translation was said to contribute largely to the fame of his journal among the Egyptian audiences. As a result of their reading of Zaghlūl's translation in *al-Manār*, a group of notable jurists and lawyers became subscribers to the journal.<sup>12</sup> In the period October 1899-September 1906, *al-Manār* published a translation series of the educational work, *L'Émile du dix-neuvième siècle*, by the French writer Alphonse Esquiros (d. 1876).<sup>13</sup> The translation was prepared for *al-Manār* by the Egyptian jurist 'Abd al-'Azīz Effendi Muḥammad, the attorney general at the Zaḳāzīq Court in the Nile Delta, who was motivated by 'Abduh to translate the book.<sup>14</sup>

Riḍā believed that most of these European philosophers and writers had not entirely relinquished religion, but rejected the traditions of the Church and perceived its hierarchy as responsible for their backwardness.<sup>15</sup> As compared with missionaries and Western medieval writers, he admitted the moderateness of some of these modern Western scholars who studied Islam fairly and did not intend to attack its scriptures and history blindly.<sup>16</sup> He moreover criticised Muslim scholars for not taking any initiative to learn foreign languages or at least to know what is written in foreign languages on their religion. Admiring the ideas contained in such works, he constantly urged his Muslim fellow scholars to use them as a good instrument in 'convincing Europe that Islam is a religion of knowledge and cultivation.'<sup>17</sup>

In a similar way, Arabic journals extensively published many of the views of Western writers and politicians on Islam and Muslims, which Riḍā also eagerly followed and used in his refutation of any attack on Islam. An important example was his regular citation from the London-based monthly review *The Nineteenth Century and After*, which was a widely known periodical in Arab journals. He selected

<sup>11</sup> Paris: Colin, 1896. The book was also quoted by subsequent Muslim scholars, such as Muḥammad al-Ghazālī, see, *al-Ta'aṣṣub wā al-Tasāmuḥ bayna al-Masīhiyya wā al-Islām*, Cairo, 1965, pp. 149-196.

<sup>12</sup> Riḍā, *Tārīkh*, pp. 1006-1007.

<sup>13</sup> *L'Émile du dix-neuvième siècle*, Paris: Librairie Internationale, 1869.

<sup>14</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 2/31 (Jumādā al-Ākhira 1317-October 1899), p. 489. *Al-Manār* later published the articles in one volume under the title, *Emīl al-Qarn al-Tāsi' 'Ashar aw al-Tarbiyya al-Istiqlālīyya*, Cairo: al-Manār, 1331/1913.

<sup>15</sup> Shahin, *Eyes*, p. 68.

<sup>16</sup> See, Riḍā's appraisal of the works of the Italian Leone Caetani (1869-1935), *al-Manār*, vol. 11/1 (Muḥarram 1326/March 1908), pp. 9-31.

<sup>17</sup> 'Kitāb al-Islām,' *al-Manār*, vol. 1/11 (Muḥarram 1316/June 1898), p. 184.

some of its articles containing views of Western scholars on Eastern and Islamic issues.<sup>18</sup> He also knew the name of the Scottish diplomat and writer David Urquhart (1805-1877), and some of his writings on the 'spirit of the East.'<sup>19</sup> In February 1914, he quoted and gave a detailed commentary on a lecture delivered in the same year by the Dutch orientalist Christiaan Snouck Hurgronje (1857-1936) at Columbia University on the religious state of Muslims and the relationship between Islam and Christianity in the Dutch East Indies, which was earlier translated by the Syrian Arabic journal *al-Hudā*.<sup>20</sup>

Ridā's illustration of these views sometimes carried a double message to those whom he considered 'atheists among Muslims.'<sup>21</sup> For instance, he quoted the New York-based tri-weekly Arabic newspaper *al-Bayān*<sup>22</sup> on the renunciation of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South to the Lausanne Treaty between the U.S. and Turkey. The background of that event dates back to 1923, when the Presbyterian missionary groups denounced this treaty. Later in 1926, Bishop William T. Manning of the Episcopal Church induced 110 bishops to sign a memorial in which they condemned it, as they believed that it negatively affected their missionary work by enforcing laws that would prohibit the teaching of religion.<sup>23</sup> But Senator William Edgar Borah (1865-1940), the Chairman of the Senate's Foreign Affairs Committee and the Administration, backed the treaty by rejecting their appeal because of his country's international commercial and political

<sup>18</sup> See, for instance, *al-Manār*, vol. 15/3 (Rabī' al-'Awwal 1330/March 1912), pp. 201-209; vol. 15/4 (Rabī' al-'Ākhar 1330/April 1912), pp. 299-305; vol. 15/8 (Sha'bān 1330/August 1912), pp. 627-636; vol.18/2 (Rabī' al-'Ākhar 1333/March 1915), pp. 141-153.

<sup>19</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 5/3 (Ṣafar 1320/May 1902), pp. 101-104. Cf. D. Urquhart, *The Spirit of the East, Illustrated in a Journal of Travels through Roumeli during an eventful period*, 2 vols., London: Henry Colbourn, 1838; G. H. Bolsover, 'David Urquhart and the Eastern Question, 1833-37: A Study in Publicity and Diplomacy,' *The Journal of Modern History* 8/4, 1936, pp. 444-467.

<sup>20</sup> Snouck Hurgonje, 'Al-'Islām Yuqāwim al-Naṣrāniyya,' *al-Manār*, vol. 17/3 (Rabī' al-'Awwāl 1332/February 1914), pp. 210-217; see, Ridā's reply, vol. 17/4 (Rabī' al-'Ākhar 1332/March 1914), pp. 268-272.

<sup>21</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 27/2 (Shawwāl 1344/May 1926), p. 157.

<sup>22</sup> *Al-Bayān* was founded by the Syrian journalist Sulaymān Baddūr (d. 1941) in 1911. It played a major role in her support of the Great Syrian Revolution against the French (1925-1926). See, *Ziriklī*, vol. 3, p. 122. The newspaper maintained a consistently high literary and journalistic reputation. See, B. T. Mehdi, *The Arabs in America 1492-1977*, New York, 1978, p. 12.

<sup>23</sup> Robert L. Daniel, 'The Armenian Question and American-Turkish Relations, 1914-1927,' *The Mississippi Valley Historical Review* 46/2, 1959, p. 272.

relations.<sup>24</sup> Riḍā drew the attention of those whom he named ‘geographical’ Muslims to the renunciation of those bishops of the treaty as a sign of their strong religious sentiments and solidarity. Those Muslims should learn a lesson from that, and should not be ‘tempted’ by any slogans indicating that Europe was completely on the secularization path. Religion, in Riḍā’s evaluation, was still playing an important role in Western politics.<sup>25</sup>

At another level, *al-Manār* polemicised against Christianity by using the well-known controversy around the views of the former dean of Saint Paul’s Cathedral in London W.R. Inge (1860-1954) on Christianity. Inge was known in his time as the ‘outspoken Dean’ or sometimes ‘Mr. Valiant-for-Truth.’<sup>26</sup> In his career, he contributed extensively to different magazines and papers. In April 1927, Riḍā eagerly cited a report made by *The Daily Express* on some of Inge’s conclusions on the relationship between the natural sciences and religious knowledge, which he had set out in a book under the title *Science, Religion and Reality*.<sup>27</sup> The book had ‘a practical object, that of indicating possible terms of peace [...] between religion and science.’<sup>28</sup> Riḍā quoted *The Daily Express* which described the controversy as a ‘bombshell with heavy clatters’ in the body of Christian churches.<sup>29</sup> As a modernist (although he himself disliked the term), Inge accepted the ‘unfettered’ criticism of the Bible in general, but he felt strongly the tension it created for orthodoxy. He rejected the miracles as props or proofs for the Christian creed, and made a clear distinction between natural and supernatural sciences.<sup>30</sup> Riḍā’s

---

<sup>24</sup> More about Borah’s life, see, Robert James Maddox, *William E. Borah and American foreign policy*, Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1970.

<sup>25</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 27/2, p. 157.

<sup>26</sup> W.R. Inge, *Outspoken Essays*, first and second series, 2 vols., London: Longmans, Green & Co, 1924-1926. More about his life, see, Adam Fox, *Dean Inge*, London: John Murray, 1960, p. 142.

<sup>27</sup> Joseph Needham, ed., *Science, Religion and Reality*, foreword by Arthur James Balfour, London: Sheldon Press, 1925. See also, W.R. Inge, *Science and Ultimate Truth*, Fison Memorial Lecture, 1926 & Longmans, 1926. Cf. G. Valente, ‘A Finite Universe? Riemannian Geometry and the Modernist Theology of Ernest William Barnes,’ *British Journal for the History of Science* 38, 2005, p. 2.

<sup>28</sup> L. P. Chambers, ‘Book Review: *Science, Religion and Reality*, by Joseph Needham,’ *The Philosophical Review* 37/1, 1928, p. 78.

<sup>29</sup> ‘Taḥawwul al-Kanisa al-Injliziyya ‘An al-Taḳālid al-Naṣrāniyya (The Church of England recants its Christian traditions),’ *al-Manār*, vol. 28/2 (Ramaḍān 1346/April 1927), pp. 144-149.

<sup>30</sup> Fox, *op. cit.*, pp. 174-175.

idealism led him wonder: 'Had Inge read his writings [in *al-Manār*] on the miraculous nature of [the Qur'ān], he would have become one of its preachers.'<sup>31</sup> He even added that 'Inge, and people like him, searching for [the truth] had no other resort but the religion of the Qur'ān, which combines 'reason' with 'heart,' and is supported by logic and science.'<sup>32</sup>

*Al-Manār* was always searching for Western views which might support the Islamic views that negated the divinity of Jesus. For example, Riḍā quoted an article from the Swiss daily *Journal de Genève* (27 January 1928) dealing with a controversial lecture given in Geneva on early Christian history.<sup>33</sup> Riḍā had received the Arabic text of the article from one of his readers who had a good command of French. It referred to a lecture delivered by the Swiss theologian Auguste Lemaitre (1887-1970) at the Society of Protestant Friends in Geneva in which he raised critical questions on various subjects, including the divinity of Jesus. The *Journal* commented that the problem of the nature of Jesus is as old as Christianity. All Churches, Protestant or Catholic, still believe in his divinity, and make this article of faith a basis of their theology. Faith in the divinity of Jesus requires a new rational theory regarding the relation between the Father and the Son.<sup>34</sup> As a liberal theologian, Lemaitre was against 'rigidity' and 'returning back to old formulas.' He argued that 'investigating the essence of God and the approach of understanding of the real meaning of Christ in history changes through ages. It is possible that the relationship between Christ and God is neither decided at the moment, nor in any historical period. It is rather better to amend the constitutions of faith according to the age while completely keeping up the traditions; but one should seek the real links between this tradition and the modern age.'<sup>35</sup> Riḍā was convinced that such Christian forums

---

<sup>31</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 28/2, *op. cit.*, p. 149.

<sup>32</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>33</sup> 'Taṭawwur al-Ītiqād bi 'Ulūhiyyat al-Masiḥ (Development of the belief in the divinity of Jesus),' *al-Manār*, vol. 29/9 (Sha'bān 1349/February 1928), p. 693-695.

<sup>34</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 693

<sup>35</sup> As quoted in *al-Manār*, *ibid.*, p. 693. Lemaitre followed what he himself called 'une démarche de désespoir.' It is 'Une théologie qui commence par nier toute trace de la réalité divine dans la conscience ne peut connaître Dieu en Christ que par une démarche purement arbitraire.' See, Bernard Reymond, 'La théologie libérale dans le protestantisme de Suisse romande,' *Évangile et liberté: périodique du protestantisme libéral français*, October 1999. E-copy is available at: <http://www.eglise-reformee-mulhouse.org/el/el2.htm>, accessed on 25 May 2007.

in the West would be enough verification that the Qur'an had brought forward clear-cut evidence with regard to the Christian belief many centuries ago. In this vein, he continued, the Church resisted such voices, since it was worried that Christians would one day become free-thinking and their researchers would convert in droves to Islam.<sup>36</sup>

Religious developments in Germany, especially Adolf Hilter's pressure on German churches, were also widely discussed in Egyptian journals. In 1934, for instance, Riḍā published two articles on what he titled: 'The Nazi Irreligious Movement and the Bravery and Frankness of the Vatican,' and 'Religious Conflicts among German Protestant Sects.'<sup>37</sup> The historical background of these two articles was the opposition of a group of young pastors to Hitler and the policy of 'Nazification' of the German Protestant Churches, when he had nominated the fervent pro-Nazi bishop Ludwig Müller (1883-1945) as the country's Reichsbishop and 'Delegate and plenipotentiary for all questions concerning the Evangelical churches.' The resistance movement, known as the so-called *Bekennende Kirche* (or Confessing Church), was primarily led by Martin Niemöller (1892-1984), Dietrich Bonhöffer (1906-1945) and Heinrich Gruber (1891-1975).<sup>38</sup> The Pope was alarmed by the whole series of events, especially by the conflict with the Evangelical church. The Vatican expressed its serious anxiety about the Church and Germany, and that it might be a rehearsal for a similar treatment of the Catholics.<sup>39</sup> *Al-Manār* also referred to the rejection of the Nazi ideologue Alfred Rosenberg (1893-1946) of the fundamental tenets of the Christian doctrine, and his desire to build up what Riḍā called 'a new racialist religion.'<sup>40</sup> Riḍā did not give any analysis of the situation, except a short comment that 'Germany and

<sup>36</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 29/9, p. 695.

<sup>37</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 34/1 (Muḥarram 1353/May 1934), pp. 73-78. *Al-Manār* cited here the Egyptian dailies, *al-Muqattam* (7 March, 1934) and *Kawkab al-Sharq* (12 April 1934).

<sup>38</sup> S. Conway, *The Nazi Persecution of the Churches, 1933-1945*, Regent College Publishing, 2001, p. 35. Cf. John S. Conway, 'The Historiography of the German Church Struggle,' *Journal of Bible and Religion* 32/3, 1964, pp. 221-230.

<sup>39</sup> Conway, *ibid.*, p. 100.

<sup>40</sup> 'Al-Nizā' al-Dīnī fī Almāniya: Ba'ḍ Rijāl al-Kanīṣah yataḥadawna al-Nāzī (Religious conflict in Germany: Some Clergymen challenge Nazism),' *al-Manār*, vol. 33/9 (Dhū al-Qī' da 1352/February 1934), pp. 692-696. *Al-Manār* quoted here another article published in *Kawkab al-Sharq* (22 January 1934). Rosenberg pleaded for a new 'religion of the blood,' based on defending the Arian soul and its noble character. More about Rosenberg's ideas on Christianity, see, for example, Richard Steigmann-

its people—the most civilised in the world—[...] were trying to get rid of such a 'falsified' religion [Christianity], which is contradictory to scientific facts and rational self-evident truths; [...] including] its strict rules, church system, big wealth, fanaticism of its bishops and priests, and their spiritual authority on the people.<sup>41</sup>

Within the above-mentioned context, archaeological discoveries on Biblical themes on the one hand and Western contemporary discussions on Biblical figures and their relation to Islam on the other attracted *al-Manār's* attention. We turn now to compare Riḍā's early polemical treatment of the discovery of the Code of Hammurabi and the famous *Babel-und-Bibel-Streit* with his later harsh response to the release of the Arabic translation of the *Encyclopaedia of Islam* and the ideas of A.J. Wensinck, mentioned above.

#### 1.1.1. *Hammurabi and the Babel-und-Bibel-Streit* (1903)

Riḍā considered such discoveries as 'great news,' 'a step from within Europe [to] jump to Islam,' 'a new line of thought in Christianity,' and 'the appearance of a new Qur'ānic sign.'<sup>42</sup> *Al-Manār* must have depended on various Arabic papers and journals, which followed these discussions. In his journal, *Faraḥ Anṭūn* (see, chapter 2), for instance, published lengthy quotations from Western and Arabic periodicals on this subject as front-page in his famous paper *al-Jāmi'a*.<sup>43</sup>

Friedrich Delitzsch was the major figure behind the *Streit*. In his lectures, delivered at the *Deutsche Orient-Gesellschaft* before an audience including the emperor of Germany Wilhelm II (1859-1941), Delitzsch found a certain relationship between the Old Testament and Assyrian creation myths. He not only pointed to the presence of Babylonian ideas in Biblical texts, but ultimately opposed the Church's concept of divine revelation as well. His ideas on the subject triggered

---

Gall, *The Holy Reich: Nazi conceptions of Christianity, 1919-1945*, Cambridge University Press, 2003, pp. 92-121.

<sup>41</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 34/1, p. 78.

<sup>42</sup> 'Al-Naba' al-'Aẓīm (Great News),' *al-Manār*, vol. 6/3 (Ṣafar 1321/May 1903), pp. 87-109.

<sup>43</sup> 'Mashāhīr al-Sharq: Ḥammūrābī,' *al-Jāmi'a*, vol. 4/2 (March 1903), pp. 67-78; Anṭūn quoted among others the American Protestant magazine *al-Nashra al-'Us-bū'iyya* (founded 1871, Beirut).



vehement controversies and many articles appeared contradicting him.<sup>44</sup>

Riḍā was aware of the historical arguments that the Mosaic laws were similar to the Code of Hammurabi, whose black diorite block (2.25 metre) had been discovered in 1901 under the ruins of Susa, the ancient capital of Babylon.<sup>45</sup> He maintained that German scholars identified King Hammurabi with the Biblical figure Amraphel (Genesis 14: 18-20).<sup>46</sup> He argued that Amraphel was the Biblical figure Melchizedek, who blessed Abraham according to the story of the Old Testament, and was also mentioned in the New Testament in Paul's Epistle to the Hebrews (7: 1-3). But Riḍā reconfirmed that Hammurabi, unlike Moses, was an idolater and his scriptures were of a pagan nature.<sup>47</sup>

Riḍā criticised Muslim scholars, such as Fakhr al-Dīn al-Rāzī and others, for their conclusion that the Torah was transmitted by uninterrupted chains of transmission (*tawātur*), and that its distortion (*tahrīf*) according to the Qur'ānic verses was not related to the text. According to this Islamic view, any scripture that has been passed down by means of this successive transmission was not prone to textual corruption. God would not allow His word to be distorted so that it was no longer truthful.<sup>48</sup> Riḍā maintained that such views gave missionaries the chance to convince common people that Muslim scholars admitted the invulnerability of the Torah against textual

---

<sup>44</sup> Friedrich Delitzsch, *Babel und Bibel. Ein Vortrag. (gehalten am 13. Januar 1902)*, Leipzig, Hinrichs'sche Buchhandlung 1902; id., *Zweiter Vortrag über Babel und Bibel*, Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, 1903; id., *Babel und Bibel: Ein Rückblick und Ausblick*, Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, 1904; Id., *Babel und Bibel: Dritter (Schluss-) Vortrag*, Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, 1905. See also, Reinhard G. Lehmann, *Friedrich Delitzsch und der Babel-Bibel-Streit*, Freiburg/Schweiz: Univ.-Verl.; Göttingen: Vandenhoeck und Ruprecht, 1994; Emil G. Kraeling, *The Old Testament since the Reformation*, London: Lutterworth Press, 1955, pp. 147-163; Klaus Johanning, *Der Bibel-Babel-Streit: Eine forschungsgeschichtliche Studie*, Frankfurt, 1988.

<sup>45</sup> F. Delitzsch, *Zweiter vortrag*, p. 22. Cf. Stanley A. Cook, *The Laws of Moses and the Code of Hammurabi*, London: Adam and Charles Black, 1903; F. M. Th. Böhl, 'King Hammurabi of Babylon in the setting of his time (About 1700 B.C.)', in *Mededeelingen der Koninklijke Nederlandsche Akademie van Wetenschappen* 9, 1946, pp. 341-368.

<sup>46</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/3, p. 89.

<sup>47</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 94.

<sup>48</sup> See, Chawkat Moucarry, *The Prophet & The Messiah: An Arab Christian's Perspective on Islam & Christianity*, Downers Grove, Illinois: InterVarsity Press, 2001, *passim*, pp. 47-72



corruption. He argued that later Muslims attempted to study the Scriptures carefully, and reached other conclusions. The Qur'ānic affirmation of the corruption of the Scriptures in their present form, he went on, became much clearer after Western scholars had historically criticised them.<sup>49</sup> Riḍā challenged Christian missionaries to refute these archaeological discoveries. He saw a positive aspect of Christian missionary attacks on Islam that they should stimulate Muslims to study and translate such Western books on the Bible, and to make it known for everybody that 'the Bible contains information which is fully contradictory to science.'<sup>50</sup>

Riḍā labelled the discovery of the Code of Hammurabi as a 'quake' in Europe with regard to the history of the Bible. *Al-Manār* dealt in some detail with the repercussions of the Bible and Babel controversy, and its impact on the belief in the divine nature of the Bible in Europe. In the wake of Delitzsch's first lecture in 1902, public opinion forced Kaiser Wilhelm II to distance himself from Delitzsch's proposal that the Old Testament was nothing but transcribed Assyrian wisdom.<sup>51</sup> The Kaiser met Delitzsch in the presence of his wife Auguste Viktoria and the *Oberhofprediger* Ernest Dryaner (1843-1922). *Al-Manār*, probably following *al-Jāmi'a* of Faraḥ Anṭūn, quoted the Arabic translation of the German text of the Kaiser's letter to Admiral Friedrich von Hollmann (1842-1913) in which he tells the story of his meeting with Delitzsch.<sup>52</sup>

Riḍā was not surprised by the interest of Wilhelm II in the issue. He was persuaded that the Kaiser interfered in the affair only to use such religious sentiments as an instrument for achieving his political success; demonstrating that politics is no enemy of science, but its strongest tool.<sup>53</sup> Riḍā described the Kaiser's letter to Hollmann as 'illusiv' and 'contradictory.' However, it showed his 'impulsiveness, deep understanding and experience.'<sup>54</sup>

Depending on the Kaiser's own words, Riḍā made an Arabic analysis of the arguments. The Kaiser divided the revelation into two kinds:

<sup>49</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol 6/3, pp. 87-88.

<sup>50</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 89.

<sup>51</sup> By 1905, the controversy had resulted in the publication of 1,650 articles and 28 pamphlets, see, Suzanne Marchand, 'German Orientalism and the Decline of the West,' *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society* 145/4, 2001, pp. 468-469.

<sup>52</sup> About the letter, see, Lehmann, *op. cit.*, pp. 220-230.

<sup>53</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/3, p. 96

<sup>54</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 96; See chapter 7: 'Der Babel-Bibel-Streit als Politikum Kaiser Wilhelm II,' in Lehmann, *op. cit.*, pp. 211-230.

the first historical and ongoing, while the second is purely religious.<sup>55</sup> As for the first kind, the Kaiser said: 'It [the revelation] sometimes appears in the shape of a great man, a priest, or a king, either amongst the heathens, the Jews or the Christians. Hammurabi was one of these; Moses, Abraham, Homer, Charles the Great, Luther, Shakespeare, Goethe, Kant, and the Emperor Wilhelm the Great as well. God chose them and saw them qualified to achieve great and everlasting deeds; and to be in service of their people according to His will, both in spiritual or mundane acts.'<sup>56</sup> The second kind of revelation had started with Abraham and was ended by the coming of Jesus.

Riḍā was, however, extremely astonished that the Kaiser did not include Islam as a religious community beside the heathens, Jews and Christians, and did not consider Muḥammad as a prophet beside other prophets. Wilhelm II, according to him, was either 'ignorant' or 'fanatic.'<sup>57</sup> It was the German Emperor, who as part of his *Weltpolitik* visited Constantinople and Damascus (autumn 1898) and in a flirting spectacular speech declared himself as a friend of Islam and the protector of the sultan and the Muslim world.<sup>58</sup> Riḍā ironically indicated that the Kaiser mentioned his grandfather among great historical figures as if he intended to portray him as 'a tool' in the hands of God, which was entitled to preserve the German glory and establish the German Empire. But this alleged divine message was, in Riḍā's view, baseless, as his grandfather was none but an 'instrument' in the hands of his Chancellor, Otto von Bismarck (1862-1890).<sup>59</sup> Riḍā contended that the prophet of Islam has proved to be greater than Bismarck, and there would never come any new discovery to discredit the divine origin of his mission.<sup>60</sup>

---

<sup>55</sup> In German: 'Eine fortlaufende, gewissermaßen historische [Offenbarung]' and 'eine rein religiöse auf die spätere Erscheinung des Messias vorbereitende Offenbarung.' As quoted in, *ibid.*, p. 224.

<sup>56</sup> In German: 'Offenbart er sich bald in diesem oder jenem großen Weisen, oder Priester oder König, sei es bei den Heiden, Juden oder Christen. Hammurabi war einer, Moses, Abraham, Homer, Karl der Grosse, Luther, Shakespeare, Goethe, Kant, Kaiser Wilhelm der Grosse. Die hat er ausgesucht und Seiner Gnade gewürdigt, für ihre Völker auf dem geistigen wie physischen Gebiet nach seinem Willen Herrliches Unvergänglichliches zu leisten.' *Ibid.*, p. 224

<sup>57</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/3, p. 98

<sup>58</sup> Holger Weiss, 'German Images of Islam in West Africa,' *Sudanic Africa* 11, 2000, p. 53.

<sup>59</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/3, p. 101

<sup>60</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 101

Riḍā accepted the aspects that were in agreement with Islam in Holman's letter. In the letter, he accepted the existence of God as the only creator of the world, and that people were in dire need of revelation in their search for knowledge about God. But he primarily rejected the Kaiser's division, and found it absurd and impossible that the divine entity would be 'split into parts.' Human beings, according to him, are tiny creatures as compared to the ultimate and countless beings in the universe. It was also arrogant to confine the divine to some individuals on earth, which is a tiny planet in the universe. God, Riḍā continued, diffuses a spiritual world in the cosmic system with all its astonishing secrets and comprehensiveness. In their pagan phase, human minds recognised that divine world, and called it 'the world of deities,' and believed that every part of the universe was organised by its own god. But prophets receiving revelation named it 'the world of angels,' which illustrates that the prophet's spirit is highly connected with these spirits in their acquisition of the divine knowledge.<sup>61</sup> Riḍā differentiated between the knowledge of prophets and that of poets and kings. The former cannot be acquired (*muktasab*), but can be revealed to them through the Spirit that preserved a specific connection between God and people. The latter kind of knowledge is acquisitionable with no specified subject, but includes imaginations, fantasies, stories and policies.<sup>62</sup>

Riḍā concluded that the Kaiser was mistaken in many of his remarks. He firstly argued that monotheism was known among nations before Abraham. Although there was no historical sign of its existence, there were prophets before him who had also propagated it. Secondly, God's manifestation in Christ was less than His manifestation in Moses, since Jesus only follows the Law of Moses with little reforms: 'I came not to change the law.' His manifestation in the Prophet Muḥammad, Riḍā went on, was more than that in Abraham, Moses and Jesus, as he was the only figure to whom Jesus' prophecy (John, 16: 12-14) was applicable.<sup>63</sup>

---

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., pp. 102-103.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 103.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid.

### 1.1.2. *Arabic Translation of the Encyclopaedia of Islam (1933)*

Thirty years later, the already mentioned Dutch orientalist A.J. Wensinck summarised the thesis of his teacher Snouck Hurgronje on the position of the prophet 'Ibrāhīm' in a lemma in the *EI*.<sup>64</sup> Snouck never attempted to translate his dissertation, but his ideas became widely known through Wensinck's article in the *EI*. The sensitivity of the historical analysis of the figure of Ibrāhīm dates back to the well-known case of the Egyptian liberal intellectual Ṭahā Ḥusayn, almost seven years before the publicity of the ideas of the *EI*.<sup>65</sup>

In his article, Wensinck argued that major attention was paid to Abraham in the Qur'ān only after Muḥammad migrated to Medina, and not before the outbreak of the dispute between himself and the local Jewish community. In this manner Abraham was presented as the forerunner of Muḥammad, precursor of Islam, preacher of pure monotheism, and founder of the Ka'ba with his son Ismā'īl inviting all mankind to perform Hajj. This would have allowed Muḥammad to claim priority for Islam over Judaism and Christianity. The reason behind the acceptance of the Abraham concept was primarily designed to provide the Prophet with a new means to demonstrate the independence of the Islamic faith vis-à-vis Judaism and to present Islam from that time on as the originally revealed religion.<sup>66</sup>

The present writer has elsewhere analyzed the Wensinck affair in the context of the question of academic freedom and Western scholarship on Islam with an example from Egypt in the early 1930s.<sup>67</sup> It

<sup>64</sup> Snouck Hurgronje, *Het Mekkaansche Feest*, Leiden, 1880. Cf. A. Sprenger, *Das Leben und die Lehre des Mohammads*, Berlin, 1869; A. J. Wensinck, 'Ibrahim' in *EI*, II, 432a. See the critical views, Y. Moubarac, *Abraham dans le Coran*, Paris 1958; Rudi Paret, 'Ibrahim,' in *EI*, III, 980a.

<sup>65</sup> About Ḥusayn's indebtedness to Western scholarship, see Mohamed Al-Nowaihi, 'Towards the Reappraisal of Classical Arabic Literature and History: Some Aspects of Ṭahā Ḥusayn's Use of Modern Western Criteria,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 11/2, 1980, pp. 189-207; Kamal Abu-Deeb, 'Towards a Structural Analysis of Pre-Islamic Poetry,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 6/2, 1975, pp. 148-184.

<sup>66</sup> Khalil Athamina, 'Abraham in Islamic Perspective: Reflections on the Development of Monotheism in Pre-Islamic Arabia,' *Der Islam* 81, 2004, p. 185.

<sup>67</sup> Umar Ryad, 'The Dismissal of A.J. Wensinck from the Royal Academy of the Arabic Language in Cairo,' a paper presented at: 'Conference Academic Freedom and Religious Freedom,' University of Leiden, 27-28 February 2007; published in Willem B. Drees & Pieter Sjoerd van Koningsveld, eds., *The Study of Religion and the Training of Muslim Clergy in Europe: Academic and Religious Freedom in the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, Amsterdam University Press, 2008, pp. 91-134. See also, Rached Hamzaoui, *L'Académie de langue arabe du Caire: histoire et œuvre*, Tunis: Université de Tunis, 1975,

has been shown that as soon as the Egyptian Royal Decree of nominating five orientalist members in the Academy became known in the press, the Egyptian physician and health inspector Ḥusayn al-Harrāwī launched a most virulent attack against orientalist circles, especially against Wensinck. His first article appeared as a front-page in the famous Egyptian newspaper *Al-Ahrām* as, 'Orientalists and Islam: Arabic Language Academy member Wensinck ridicules Islam.' He severely attacked the *EI*, and accused the Dutch scholar of 'assuming a premise and then searching the Qur'ān for those verses that support this premise, discarding anything that would contradict it so as to produce a conclusion that plants the seeds of doubt in the mind of the reader. This is the method that orientalists used in their studies on Islam, on the life of the Prophet or on any matter to which they wished to bring the Qur'ān to bear as evidence. It was an old ruse, the purpose of which was to arm evangelists and colonialists with pseudo-logical arguments to shake the beliefs of the Muslim people and cause them to abandon their religion.'<sup>68</sup>

What concerns us here is Riḍā's reaction to the publication of the Arabic edition of the *EI* as part of his evaluation of Western scholarship on Islam. These scholars of Islam were trained in theology and Semitic languages, and tried to apply similar historical methods their colleagues used in their study of the same Biblical stories and their counterparts in the Qur'ān, such as the story of Abraham in the case under discussion.

Before treating Riḍā's partaking in the controversy, we should say something about his relationship with Wensinck. It should be first of all stressed that Wensinck's reputation among Muslim scholars in Egypt had been much connected to his most famous work, *A Handbook of Muḥammadan Traditions* (1927), more than his contributions to the *EI*. The prominent Muslim jurist Aḥmad Muḥammad Shākir (1892-1958), one of Riḍā's students,<sup>69</sup> was perhaps the first Muslim

---

p. 69ff; Sj. van Koningsveld, *Snouck Hurgronje en de islam*, Leiden: Documentatiebureau Islam-Christendom, Faculteit der Godgeleerdheid, 1988, p. 18-23; Usep Abdul Matin, 'The *Fatwā* of Aḥmad al-Syrabāsī on encouraging Muslims to use Wensinck's *Concordance and Handbook*,' an unpublished paper, Seminar 'Problems and Methods of Islamic Studies: Islam and the West: Their mutual relations as reflected in *Fatwā-Literature*,' MA programme, Leiden University, 1999.

<sup>68</sup> Yunan Labib Rizk, 'Chronicles,' *Al-Ahram Weekly*, no. 647, July 2003.

<sup>69</sup> Ron Shaham, 'Egyptian Judge in a Period of Change: Qadi Aḥmad Muḥammad Shākir, 1892-1958,' *The Journal of the American Oriental Society* 119, 1999, pp. 440-455.

scholar to pay attention to Wensinck's work. In October 1928 he received the *Handbook*, which he considered as a treasure that should be known to Arab and Muslim readers. Two years later Shākir met Wensinck for the first time in the Salafiyya Library in Cairo, and requested his permission to embark upon translating the work into Arabic. In the same year, Shākir's enthusiasm about the work stimulated Riḍā to personally direct the same request to Wensinck, who replied in the affirmative: 'Yes, I wish that the book would be of much use, especially among the people of Egypt and Ḥijāz whom I respect and love much.'<sup>70</sup>

It is also worthy to note that Wensinck probably saw Riḍā for the first time when the latter was giving a lecture (February 9, 1930) at Jam'iyyat al-Rābiṭa al-Sharqiyya (mentioned above) in Cairo. In his travel diary, Wensinck gives a caricatural description of Riḍā: 'The Sayyid [Riḍā] is a corpulent small man without legs,<sup>71</sup> big turban, a fat nose, and a full beard, superb when he speaks. The subject was 'old and new.' The majority of the audience was enthusiastic. Before he started a young man showing great approval had stood up and said: 'Yaḥyā [long live] al-Sayyid Rashīd Riḍā.' This lecture [went on] with some interruptions, and sometimes the Sayyid would interrupt himself.'<sup>72</sup>

Although *al-Manār* was not directly involved in the controversy, and did not utter any explicit view on his dismissal, Riḍā's general attitude towards Wensinck and his *Handbook* was ambivalent. In the very beginning he had highly praised the author's meticulous efforts in compiling the Ḥadīth. Wensinck's great critic, al-Harrāwī, belonged

---

<sup>70</sup> Letter, Wensinck to Riḍā, 1st September 1930, Leiden; the letter is found among Riḍā's personal papers in his archive. As Shākir could not finish the whole task of translation, Riḍā recommended Muḥammad Fu'ād 'Abd al-Bāqī (1882-1968) to continue carrying out the translation work. The controversy around Wensinck's writings on Islam did not influence the continuation of the translation work. Shākir invited readers from all over the Muslim world to use the work. 'Abd al-Baqī has been able to publish the Arabic edition of the *Handbook* under the title *Miftāḥ Kunūz al-Sunna* (or Key to the Treasures of Sunna), Cairo: Maṭba'at Miṣr, 1934. The work was published a few months after Wensinck's dismissal from the Academy. In his introduction (written 23 July, 1934), Shākir still appreciated the work, and did not refer to the stormy debate around its author.

<sup>71</sup> In Dutch: 'zonder beenen.' Wensinck probably means that due to his thick body and the religious dress it was difficult to see his legs.

<sup>72</sup> See, Wensinck's travel diary in Egypt, Jeddah, Syria and Jerusalem (end 1929-early 1930), Leiden University Library, p. 38. UB Bijzondere Collecties (KL)—Or. 25.686.

to Riḍā's circle, but he did not contribute to *al-Manār* journal with any anti-orientalist polemics during Riḍā's life. His work was, however, later published as a series of articles in Riḍā's journal and later in one volume by Dār al-Manār in 1936, a few months after the latter's death.

In August 1934 (seven months after Wensinck's dismissal), Riḍā wrote the preface of the *Handbook* in which he positively praised the work. He maintained that due to his many commitments, he had not been able to fully participate in the editing of the work. He stressed the usefulness of the *Handbook* for Muslim scholars in tracing all kinds of traditions; and this work would have spared him 'three quarters' of his preceding work and effort in the study of Ḥadīth.<sup>73</sup> As an orientalist, Riḍā went on, Wensinck had finished his work for the purpose of serving his career and for the sake of other orientalists; but Muslims rather needed it for the sake of having knowledge about the sayings and traditions of their Prophet. He cited one Ḥadīth saying that 'Verily, God will support Islam through men who do not belong to its adherents.'<sup>74</sup>

One year later, Riḍā, in the introduction to his last work *al-Waḥī al-Muḥammadī*, all of a sudden renounced his appreciation for Wensinck's efforts. According to him, most orientalists did not belong to the class of independent and fair-minded European scholars, because they did not study Arabic or the books of Islam in order to know the truth about it. They were only seeking out its weak points by describing Muslims in a disfigured way so that their people would be driven away from Islam. Riḍā had a similar attitude towards the *EI*. The *EI* and Wensinck's *Handbook*, which were two key examples that had already disappointed his high expectations about their scholarship. Riḍā recanted his earlier lofty impression and rendered it as a futile piece of work. He believed that the translation of *al-Waḥī* would have the effect of influencing fair-minded Europeans and convert them to Islam. Riḍā was, however, surprised that when he sent copies of *al-Waḥī* to all orientalists, it sufficed Wensinck to thank him without giving any review of the book.<sup>75</sup>

As soon as the Arabic translation of the *EI* appeared, Riḍā rushed to admit that Western scholars did Muslims a great favor. However,

<sup>73</sup> *Miftāḥ*, *op. cit.*, p. 3.

<sup>74</sup> 'Muqaddimat Miftāḥ Kunūz al-Sunna,' *al-Manār*, vol. 34/4 (Rabī' al-'Ākhar 1353/August 1934), pp. 296-297.

<sup>75</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 35/1 (Rabī' al-'Awwal 1354/July 1935), pp. 36-37.



he pointed out that Muslims also had a record of early achievements in organising such encyclopaedias, but had become stagnant in preserving their own heritage. He recommended Muslim readers everywhere to purchase the Arabic translation, as reading the *EI* in Arabic, the ‘public language of Islam,’ would be more useful than the English, French or German editions. He summed up some reasons: 1) Man’s prime need is to know oneself, it is very useful that Muslims better know themselves through the eyes of the fair-minded, biased or opponents among the orientalists. 2) The materials on which the authors depend are abundant in Europe, and orientalists follow scholarly lines of investigation. European public opinion depended on their analyses by which they make judgments on the Orientals. 3) The translation should be supplemented with corrections and analysis made by Muslim scholars in order to guarantee the ‘adequacy’ of given data according to the mainstream of Islamic thought.<sup>76</sup>

Riḍā’s main concern was that Western historical and literary critical views on Islam should be evaluated in the light of the criticisms of Muslim scholars, who should also take part in the project. A few years earlier (1926) he had welcomed an invitation provided by *Die Deutsche Gesellschaft für Islamkunde*, presided by Georg Kampffmeyer (1864-1936), inviting him and other Muslim scholars to cooperate with its editorial members. He had high expectations that their invitation to work together with Muslim scholars would result in great success.<sup>77</sup> Riḍā’s suspicion of the *EI* concentrated only on two of his opponents, whom its editorial committee had chosen in the advisory board: namely the anti-Salafī Azharī scholar Sheikh Yūsuf al-Dijwī (1870-1946)<sup>78</sup> (see, chapter 3) and the fervent Muslim propagandist and Egyptian nationalist Muḥammad Farīd Wajdī (circa 1878-1954).<sup>79</sup> Dijwī’s views as a traditionalist scholar were, according to Riḍā, not to satisfy the minds of ‘educated’ Muslims, let alone orientalists. As for Wajdī’s views, they did not directly ‘refute the allegations.’ Riḍā requested the committee to appoint other scholars of higher

<sup>76</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 33/6 (Rajab 1352/October 1933), p. 477.

<sup>77</sup> See, *al-Manār*, vol. 26/8 (Rajab 1344/February 1926), p. 638.

<sup>78</sup> About their conflict, see, Riḍā, *Azhar*, p. 15f. Yūsuf al-Dijwī, ‘Sāhib al-Manār,’ *Majallat Nūr al-Islām*, vol. 3/5 (Jumāda al-‘Ulā 1351/1932), p. 337 (Quoted below, ‘Sāhib’); Daniel Neil Crecelius, ‘The Ulama and the State in Modern Egypt,’ unpublished PhD dissertation, Princeton University, 1967, pp. 314-315.

<sup>79</sup> About his life and works, see, Muḥammad Ṭāha al-Ḥājirī. *Muḥammad Farīd Wajdī: Ḥayātuh wā Āthāruh*, Cairo: The Arab League, 1970.



scholarly position, such as Sheikh Al-Azhar Muṣṭafā al-Marāghī (1881-1945) and the Mufti of Egypt 'Abd al-Majīd Salīm (1882-1954).<sup>80</sup> Riḍā, however, did not further develop any scholarly historical response to Wensinck's article on Abraham, nor did he critically study the views of Dijwī and Wajdī.<sup>81</sup>

Riḍā showed a completely different attitude by publishing a more severe article in which he talked about the 'corruption' of the *EI*. 'A deceiving name,' he wrote, '[...] for an encyclopedia pieced together by a group of Western scholars for the sake of serving their religion and colonial states in the Muslim world. [It was intended] to destroy Islam and its forts, after all the failure of missionary attempts to attack the Qur'ān and its prophet or spread false translations of the Qur'ān.'<sup>82</sup> He harshly attacked the contributors of the *EI* of intentionally presenting Islam and its men and history in a 'twisted' way. In general he believed that 'Westerners are highly qualified in science, arts and industry, but their qualifications in fabricating things are more effective.'<sup>83</sup> Riḍā plainly revoked his earlier recommendation of the Arabic version, as the translators did not comply with his former advice of supplementing the criticisms of Muslim scholars to what he saw as 'distorting' information on Islam. He therefore believed that their 'useful' work had now changed to become 'harmful.' He requested the *EI* subscribers to appeal to the the editorial committee that the translators should add 'corrections' in the margins, otherwise they should end their subscription, by which they would be financially supporting those who attack Islam. For him, the publication of the Arabic version of the *EI* was even more dangerous than missionary books and journals. Missionary writings would hardly betray any Muslim, but the danger of *EI* could not be avoided, especially among the educated class.<sup>84</sup>

<sup>80</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 33/6, p. 478.

<sup>81</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 33/8 (Ramaḍān 1352/December 1933), p. 630.

<sup>82</sup> 'Dā'irat al-Ma'ārif al-Islāmiyya wā mā fiḥā min Mafāsīd,' *al-Manār*, vol. 34/5 (Jumāda al-'Ākhira 1353/October 1934), pp. 386-387.

<sup>83</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>84</sup> *Ibid.*

## 1.2. Al-Manār *Literary Figures*

Riḍā wrote most of the articles in his journal, but he regularly made use of the writings of other publicists and scholars since its early appearance. In his *Islam and Modernism in Egypt*, Charles Adams (having written his book during Riḍā's lifetime) branded those who gathered around Riḍā's journal and had sympathy for 'Abduh's ideas as the *al-Manār* party.<sup>85</sup> He spoke of different types of people who associated themselves with the literary, political or reformist concepts laid down by 'Abduh. In collecting his information, Adams mainly depended on references in *al-Manār* itself or the biography of 'Abduh. The study of Riḍā's archive adds many more figures to the list of Adams. Mahmoud Haddad, however, has correctly remarked that not everyone who wrote in *al-Manār* can be considered a Manārist.<sup>86</sup> The Mararists were not a homogenous group, nor even a group, and even when taken as individuals they are not devoid of contradictions and inconsistencies in their various expositions.<sup>87</sup>

Nevertheless, in order to put Riḍā's works to be dealt with in the ensuing chapters into their particular historical context at the time of their production, one has to pay attention to the social and religious setting of some of the writers of *al-Manār* by giving brief accounts of their lives and places in Riḍā's circle; and most importantly the sources they brought forward to his journal. This group of writers on whose writings Riḍā depended in his knowledge of Western sources can be divided into two categories: 1) those who were living in Egypt or elsewhere in the Muslim world, 2) and his associates of network among Muslim activists and writers living in the West.

### 1.2.1. *Muslims Living in the West*

Riḍā was in contact with many Muslims living in Europe and the United States. *Al-Manār* had, for example, its own correspondent in Cambridge, U.K.. In 1922, its anonymous correspondent wrote a report on the Girton conference held in the city (1921) on the general

---

<sup>85</sup> Adams, *Modernism*, pp. 205-247.

<sup>86</sup> Mahmoud Haddad, 'The Manarist and Modernism: An attempt to fuse society and religion,' in Stéphane A. Dudoignon (et al), eds., *Intellectuals in the Modern Islamic World: Transmission, Transformation, Communication*, London and New York: Routledge, 2006, p. 55.

<sup>87</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 56

theme of 'Christ and the Creeds.'<sup>88</sup> The report tells us that two of the key speakers were Hastings Rashdall (1858-1924), the Dean of Carlisle, and H.D.A. Major (1871-1961), principal of Ripon Hall in Oxford. Both theologians were connected to the Modern Churchmen's Union, which developed a movement of opposition to the doctrine and practices of the Anglo-Catholic party. The Union achieved its highest public notice with its Cambridge conference. Major was accused of heresy because of his denial of the physical resurrection of the body.<sup>89</sup> Rashdall's paper 'Christ as the Logos and Son of God' aroused sharp controversy with such statements as: 'It is impossible to maintain that God is fully incarnate in Christ, and not incarnate at all in anyone else.'<sup>90</sup>

The Druze prince Shakīb Arslān (1869-1946) was one of the foremost sources that provided *al-Manār* with information about Western religious, social and political ideas. Much has been written about his political cooperation with Riḍā in integrating Arab nationalist movements with the idea of pan-Islamism.<sup>91</sup> It suffices here to analyse a few of Arslān's relevant contributions to *al-Manār*. This serves our aim not only in understanding Riḍā's various sources, but also to show Arslān's use of these Western discussions on Christianity in consolidating his arguments how important Islam was in his anti-imperialist struggle.

From Europe, Arslān was able to make his Geneva exile residence 'the umbilical cord of the Islamic world.'<sup>92</sup> His effectiveness as an exiled agitator rested with his ability to attract attention to his activities, to publish frequently in the Arabic press, and to maintain contact with influential groups within Arab [and Muslim] states.<sup>93</sup> For exam-

---

<sup>88</sup> 'Al-'Islām wā al-Naṣrāniyya,' *al-Manār*, vol. 23/4 (Sha'bān 1340/April 1922), p. 267-272. For more details on the issue, see, C. W. Emmet, 'The Modernist Movement in the Church of England,' *The Journal of Religion* 2/6, 1922, pp. 561-576.

<sup>89</sup> Emmet, *ibid.*, p. 566.

<sup>90</sup> 'Modernism [Christian and Islamic],' *Encyclopedia of Religion*, New York: Macmillan, vol. 10, pp. 7-17.

Available at: [http://www.sjsu.edu/upload/course/course\\_1507/195\\_Christian\\_and\\_Islamic\\_Modernism.pdf](http://www.sjsu.edu/upload/course/course_1507/195_Christian_and_Islamic_Modernism.pdf); accessed on 18 April 2007.

<sup>91</sup> See, for example, Arslān's magazine, *La Nation Arabe*, 4 vols., Geneva, 1934-1938); W. L. Cleveland, *Islam against the West: Shakib Arslan and the campaign for Islamic nationalism in the West*, Austin: University of Texas Press, 1985; J. Bessis, 'Chekib Arslan et les mouvements nationalistes au Maghreb,' *Revue Historique* 526, 1978, pp. 467-489.

<sup>92</sup> As quoted in Cleveland, *ibid.*, p. 67.

<sup>93</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 75-76.

ple, he extended his ‘transnational network’<sup>94</sup> to include the nationalist Salafiyya movement in North Africa, and there he became ‘a mentor of a generation.’<sup>95</sup>

Arslān repeatedly argued that pan-Islamism should be the ideal accredited remedy for the decline of Muslims and their lagging behind the Christian West. For him, Europe did not entirely succeed in separating religion from politics. It was inevitable that many politicians still interfered in matters of religion. He used the controversy around the Anglican Prayer Book, which erupted in England in July 1927, to prove his point.<sup>96</sup> Arslān intended to send an indirect message to the growing Westernising movement in the East. Those who were propagating the strict separation between religion and state should not be ‘deluded’ by the conviction that Europe’s progress had only been fulfilled by its total separation of religion from politics.<sup>97</sup> Arslān attempted to deduce from this postulate that religion and politics were still enmeshed in Europe, and were not completely detached. He cynically compared the English parliament’s interference in the case to be like ‘a religious synod’ giving much of their attention to the Book of Prayer, while ignoring all other urgent political issues.<sup>98</sup> ‘The English nation as the most civilised,’ he went on, ‘cannot pray but under the official approval of the parliament and after the royal order. Such purely confessional issues and discussions had taken place in irreligious and political councils.’<sup>99</sup>

Arslān read various Western works and introduced their ideas to Arab readers. A significant example was his comments and additions to the Arabic translation of Lothrop Stoddard’s *The New World of Islam* made by the Palestinian translator ‘Ajjāj Nuwayhid.<sup>100</sup> In *al-Manār* he praised some orientalists, while blaming and sometimes

---

<sup>94</sup> Raja Adal, ‘Constructing Transnational Islam: The East-West Network of Shakib Arslān,’ in Stéphane A. Dudoignon (et al), *op. cit.*, pp. 176-210.

<sup>95</sup> Cleveland, *op. cit.*, pp. 91-114.

<sup>96</sup> More about the affair, see, Robert Currie, ‘Power and Principle: The Anglican Prayer Book Controversy, 1927-1930,’ *Church History* 33/2, 1964, pp. 192-205; link on the website of the Church of England, <http://cofe.anglican.org/worship/liturgy/1928/>, accessed on 4 April 2007.

<sup>97</sup> Shakib Arslān, ‘Azmat Kitāb al-Ṣalāh (The Crisis of the Book of Prayers),’ *al-Manār*, vol. 29/3 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1346/June 1928), pp. 201-214.

<sup>98</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 214.

<sup>99</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>100</sup> New York: Charles Scribner’s Sons, 1921; ‘Ajjāj Nuwayhid, *Hāḍir al-‘Ālam al-‘Islāmī*, 4 vols., Cairo: al-Maṭba‘a al-Saliyya, 1352/circa 1932-33.

attacking others. He was impressed by the French translation of the Qur'ān made by the Swiss orientalist Edouard Montet (d. 1934).<sup>101</sup> *Al-Manār* cited his preface to the translation in which the translator described the origin of the Qur'an as: 'The Qur'ānic doctrine has a strong relation with Jewish and Christian doctrines. Jewish historical reports related to Prophets and Fathers, and also the Christian ones related to Christ represent the subject of various pages of the Qur'ān.'<sup>102</sup> In his criticism, Arslān gave a systematic analysis of Montet's concept of revelation and the early history of Islam. Riḍā nevertheless did not go further than giving an emphatically traditional response that 'all Muslims disagree with the translator in his view, and they believe that all that is mentioned in the Qur'ān on the beliefs of Christians and Jews, their conditions and histories is a revelation from God.'<sup>103</sup>

Under the title 'what is being said about Islam in Europe,' Arslān translated and gave his critical views on what the French military interpreter Jules Sicard wrote on 'Abduh's movement of Islamic reform.'<sup>104</sup> Aḥmad Balāfirij (b. 1908),<sup>105</sup> Arslān's Moroccan secretary and right hand and the later founder of the Istiqlāl Party, translated another part of the same work, which is relevant to our discussion. Balāfirij was the founder of the Association des Etudiants Nord-Africains (1927) during his study at the Sorbonne. Between 1926-1932, he regularly visited Arslān in Geneva.<sup>106</sup> Balāfirij was described by a later analyst as follows: 'he knows the works of French writers better than most French people, and on many an occasion when I called on him a year earlier I would find him engrossed in some new book by a French philosopher or historian.'<sup>107</sup>

<sup>101</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/5 (Jumādā al-ʿŪlā 1348/November 1929), pp. 377-380; vol. 30/7 (Sha'bān 1348/January 1929), pp. 524-534.

<sup>102</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/5, p. 378. Compare the French text: 'Cela est si vrai que, dans les éléments communs au Christianisme et au Judaïsme, dont nous constatons la présence dans le Coran, le texte arabe du Prophète est pénétré de l'inspiration juive plutôt que de l'inspiration chrétienne: c'est la forme juive qui l'emporte.' Edouard Montet, *Mahomet: Le Coran*, Paris: Payot, 1929, p. 29.

<sup>103</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/5, p. 387.

<sup>104</sup> Jules Sicard, *Le monde musulman dans les possessions françaises: Algérie, Tunisie, Maroc, Afrique Occidentale Française*, Paris: Larose, 1928. *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/1 (Muḥarram 1348/June 1929), pp. 33-46.

<sup>105</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/3 (Rabi' al-ʿAwwal 1348/August 1929), pp. 211-224.

<sup>106</sup> About their relation, see, for instance, Cleveland, *op. cit.*, pp. 94-102; John P. Halstead, 'The Changing Character of Moroccan Reformism, 1921-1934,' *The Journal of African History* 5/3, 1964, especially pp. 443-444.

<sup>107</sup> Rom Landau, *Moroccan Journal*, London: Rebert Hale Limited, 1952, p. 4.

Again Arslān and Balāfrīj vouched their sharp critique against the West. It was not only Western clergymen who tried to prove the superiority of Christianity upon Islam, but also people in functions among colonial policy-makers and officers (such as Sicard).<sup>108</sup> Sicard discussed the Muslim contact with Christianity in five different points: 1) is the conversion of Muslims to Christianity possible or desirable?; 2) his own attitudes towards the political-religious terrain of Islam; 3) the dogma of the Trinity; 4) the harmony [between Christianity and Islam] on matters of doctrine; and 5) moral consequences.<sup>109</sup> Sicard bluntly assumed that ‘in the hearts of Muslims there is irreducible hostility towards the dogma of the Trinity. This is serious and worth being noted as it has important results in separating us [Christians] from them [Muslims]. [...] They [Muslims] do not understand, or at least their majority, that Christianity does not use the words ‘father’ and ‘son’ in the mortal sense, but strictly spiritual; we should therefore limit ourselves to this simple declaration, when discussing this subject.’<sup>110</sup>

In his general comment on Sicard’s work, Riḍā also scornfully added that the author, as a French military officer, tried by his writings to agitate the spirit of hostility between his French homeland and Islam in order to justify its colonial presence, and to guarantee his position in the French army.<sup>111</sup> Riḍā vigorously reacted that it were the Christians who adamantly adhered to their hostility against the concept of ‘pure’ monotheism in Islam by their attachment to some ‘ancient pagan doctrines.’<sup>112</sup> ‘It is stupid of the writer,’ he continued, ‘to think that he would deceive Muslims by using such puzzling and decorated words in his attempt of harmonising the concept of Trinity [for Muslims].’<sup>113</sup>

---

<sup>108</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/1, p. 223.

<sup>109</sup> Sicard, *op. cit.*, pp. 74-97

<sup>110</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/1, p. 218. Compare: ‘le dogme de la Trinité se heurte à une hostilité irréductible. Il s’agit là d’un point de doctrine très important et dont la portée a des conséquences très sérieuses, du point de vue qui nous sépare des sectateurs de l’islam [...] Ils ne se rendent pas compte, du moins en grande majorité, que les mots : Père, Fils, le Christianisme ne les entendent pas d’une manière charnelle, mais strictement spirituelle; la discussion sur le terrain doit se borner à cette simple déclaration.’ *Ibid.*, pp. 91-92.

<sup>111</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/1, p. 223.

<sup>112</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 223-224.

<sup>113</sup> *Ibid.*

As early as 1930, Muḥammad Basyūnī b. Muḥammad 'Imrān (1885-1953), one of the followers of *al-Manār* in Indonesia (Sambas, West Borneo), sent Riḍā a query requesting him to refer it to Arslān. The query focused on the causes of Muslim decline as compared to the progress of the Western world. Arslān promptly answered the question in the form of a well-known treatise tackling the reasons why Muslim nations stagnated while the others experienced rapid progress. The treatise has become one of the significant contributions by Arslān to *al-Manār*.<sup>114</sup> 'Imrān brought forward his appeal to Arslān to write on the subject as a continuation of what 'Abduh and Riḍā had already written in their defense of Islam. Although it addressed Muslims, the treatise was primarily an indirect response to the Western incursion in the Muslim world. As Riḍā put it in his foreword to the treatise, Arslān was spurred to respond to the questions: 'after his return from his trip to Spain and Morocco (summer 1930), and after he was aroused by the scenes of the remnants of Islamic civilisation in Andalusia, and witnessed the French attempts to christianise the Berbers in Morocco as a beginning to christianise all the Arabs in North Africa, just as Spain had christianised their ancestors in Andalusia in the past.'<sup>115</sup> Arslān elucidated that he agreed with the Protestant view that the cause of decadence in Medieval Europe was not Christianity as such, but the Catholic Church under the Pope. Christianity, however, should be given the credit for saving Europe from paganism.<sup>116</sup> Arslān also briefly alluded to the above-mentioned Sicard in order to disprove the contention of certain European writers that Christianity was a bar to the progress of civilisation and had been the cause of the decline and downfall of the Greeks and the

---

<sup>114</sup> Shakib Arslān, *Li-mādhā Ta'akhkhara al-Muslimūn wā li-mādhā Taqaddama Ghayruhum*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1349/1930-1. See the parts in *al-Manār*, vol. 31/5 (Rajab 1349/December 1930), pp. 353-370; vol. 31/7 (Ramaḍān 1349/February 1931), pp. 529-553. It has been firstly translated in English by M. A. Shakoore as, *Our Decline and its Causes* (firstly published 1944, Lahore: Sh. Muḥammad Ashraf. The Islamic Book Trust in Kuala Lumpur published its revised edition in 2004). My thanks are due to Dr. Nico Kaptein for lending me his copy of the translation. About Imrān's life, see, Martin van Bruinessen, 'Basyuni Imran,' in *Dictionnaire biographique des savants et grandes figures du monde musulman périphérique, du XIXe siècle à nos jours*, Fasc. no 1., Paris: CNRS-EHESS, 1992, p. 26; G.F. Pijper, *Studiën over de geschiedenis van de Islam in Indonesia, 1900-1950*, Leiden: Brill, 1977, pp. 134-141.

<sup>115</sup> Arslān, *Our Decline*, p. xxi

<sup>116</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 88-89



Romans. According to him, Sicard, as a French agent in the Department of Religious Affairs in Rabat, was 'a very conceited person [...] who played a key role in the process of Christianising the Berbers.'<sup>117</sup>

In the wake of Wensinck's affair, Arslān acknowledged orientalist works to be one of the major sources of information on Islam and Muslims for Europe. The orientalist, according to Arslān, is the *tarjumān* (translator), whose honesty or dishonesty would affect the public opinion. In the case of dishonesty, his works could agitate European hatred against Islam. Arslān divided orientalists into three categories: 1) Those who only searched for and enlarged the failings and weaknesses of Muslims in the eyes of Europeans. Their main intention was to serve Christianity by 'defaming' Islam and representing it as evil. Examples of this category were H. Lammens (1862-1937), Martin Hartmann (1851-1918), D. S. Margoliouth (1858-1940) and Wensinck. 2) The second, whom he called 'sensible enemies,' were those whose main concern was to serve European civilisation and Christian culture and to spread them among Muslims, but with no 'deception.' Although they followed specific scientific methods, they they never felt any restraint to write 'allegations' and 'poison' against Islam whenever needed. People under this category were Louis Massignon and Snouck Hurgronje. 3) A rare third class consisted of serious and objective scholars, who had no prejudice against Islam and whose critical approaches were produced after deep investigation. He counted among these Ignaz Goldziher (1850-1921), G. Kampffmeyer, Max Mayerhoff (1874-1945), and others. This group, according to him, knew perfectly well that they were raised with negative attitudes widespread in the West against Islam. They tried, however, to contribute in a positive way to lessen the remaining medieval perceptions and bad image of Islam in Europe.<sup>118</sup>

Arslān never read Wensinck's work, but he included his name under his first category on the basis of Harrāwī's articles. Presumably Arslān's views in this regard had an impact on Riḍā's above-mentioned hesitation. He had nothing to say on the dismissal of Wensinck from the Academy, but considered the case an internal question asso-

<sup>117</sup> Ibid., pp. 92-93. The translator wrongly read him as Saicar.

<sup>118</sup> Shakīb Arslān, 'al-Mustashriqūn wā Māwqifuhum al-Khaṭīr min al-'Islām (Orientalists and their dangerous stance towards Islam),' *al-Manār* (quoted from *al-Jihād*), vol. 33/6, pp. 435-440.



ciated with Egyptian politics. As he was no Egyptian, he preferred to remain silent on that point.<sup>119</sup> Arslān must have known Wensinck personally, as he attended and presented a paper on Arabic philology at the International Congress of Orientalists in Leiden, presided by Snouck Hurgronje in 1931.<sup>120</sup> During this event he had a short discussion with Snouck, and concluded that his views on Islam in Java proved that he was 'a wise person,' 'one of the less fanatic scholars,' and 'a great orientalist.'<sup>121</sup>

Arslān, on the other hand, deemed the Arabic translation of the *EI* as a useful and necessary project for young generations, despite its many 'biased attitudes,' 'mistakes' and 'grave scientific errors' on Islam. He assigned these errors to the first category of orientalists. Arslān made it clear to the translation committee that they should not underestimate the diversity of contributors to the *EI*, which would make their task more difficult. The advice of historians, chemists, geographers, jurists, philosophers, astronomers, and theologians should be taken into consideration in order to be able to create a rather faultless translation, and to avoid the 'deluding' of young generations.<sup>122</sup>

Elsewhere I have studied the life and works of the Syro-Turkish officer in Berlin Zeki Kirām, who was one of Riḍā's informants in Europe, and also belonged to the circle of Arslān.<sup>123</sup> Kirām kept Riḍā up to date with the developments of German orientalism and briefed him on the situation of Muslim institutions in Berlin and other significant news items in the German press (see, appendix I).

Kirām met Riḍā for the first time on October 13, 1921, during the latter's only visit to Europe. In his diary, Riḍā writes: '[Then] we visited [probably with Arslān] Zakī effendi Kirām al-Dimashqī in his bookstore. He is an active young man whose leg was injured during the last war, and he was treated in Germany. Then he married his

<sup>119</sup> Ibid., p. 436.

<sup>120</sup> Snouck Hurgronje, ed., *Actes du XVIIIe Congres International des Orientalistes, Leiden, 7-12 septembre 1931*, Leiden: Brill, 1932.

<sup>121</sup> See, his article in *Hāḍīr al-'Alam al-'Islāmī*, vol. 3, pp. 372-374.

<sup>122</sup> Arslān, 'al-Mustashriqūn,' p. 439.

<sup>123</sup> More about his life, see, Umar Ryad, 'From an Officer in the Ottoman Army to a Muslim Publicist and Armament Agent in Berlin,' *Bibliotheca Orientalis* 63/3-4, 2006, pp. 235-268 (Quoted below, 'Kirām'). It is interesting to note that I have been able to trace the family of Kirām in Germany by checking the telephone directory of Germany on the Internet.

nurse, and they opened a bookstore together where he sells books with her. He is now studying medicine.<sup>124</sup>

In February 1926, Riḍā wrote to Arslān to send him Kirām's address.<sup>125</sup> Since that time, their relation grew. In Kirām's eyes, Riḍā was his 'guide,' 'teacher,' 'lighthouse,' 'elder brother,' and 'father.' For Riḍā, Kirām was a 'good and sincere friend.' Kirām had also some business with Dār al-Manār in Cairo where he had labels printed for medicines made in his private laboratory in Berlin.<sup>126</sup> Kirām also asked Riḍā to send him information or Islamic books, which he sometimes needed when writing German articles or giving lectures to German audiences on Islam.<sup>127</sup>

Kirām translated one of the works of the German orientalist Max Horten on the Islamic *Geisteskultur*. He sent a summary of his translation to Riḍā to publish in his *Manār*. His Arabic style was not perfect, and his writings in Arabic also contained occasional grammatical mistakes. Riḍā revised the Arabic translation and sent it back to Kirām for correction. Kirām suggested that he should include the original German terms when sending the revised version to Horten to compare them to the Arabic sources he used.<sup>128</sup> A summary of his translation of some of Horten's ideas was later published in *al-Manār* under the title: 'Testimonies of Fair-minded Western scholars about Islam, the Prophet and the Muslims (1929).'<sup>129</sup> In another article in *al-Manār*, he discussed some Western medical discoveries on the 'bad effects' of pork and wine on the human body. Kirām argued that pork was prohibited by the divine revelation only because there were no microscopes that would have revealed its ill-effect on the human body. For Riḍā, the divine revelation must be applicable to all people in all ages, and not restricted to such arguments. God, and not Muḥammad or Moses, was the one who prohibited eating pork in the Torah and the Qur'ān.<sup>130</sup>

<sup>124</sup> Riḍā's diary, October 13, 1921.

<sup>125</sup> Shakīb Arslān, *al-Sayyid Rashīd Riḍā 'aw Ikhā' Arba'in Sanah*, Damascus: Ibn Zaydūn Press, 1937, p. 441 (Quoted below, *Ikhā*).

<sup>126</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 19 Muḥarram 1350/5 June 1931.

<sup>127</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 11 Rabī' al-'Awwal/15 July 1932.

<sup>128</sup> *Ibid*.

<sup>129</sup> Zekī Kirām, 'Shahadāt 'Ulamā' al-Gharb al-Munṣifin li al-'Islām wā al-Nabī wā al-Muslimin,' *al-Manār*, vol. 30/2 (Ṣafar 1348/8 July 1929), pp. 140-141. See another article by Kirām in the same volume, p. 140.

<sup>130</sup> *Id.*, 'Qawā'id al-Siḥḥa fī al-'Islām mundhu 1348 Sanah wā Qawā'id al-Siḥḥa fī Urūbā Ba'da 1348 Sanah,' *al-Manār*, vol. 30/5, pp. 381-384.

He also sometimes translated German orientalist works at Riḍā's request. Riḍā urgently requested him to study the work *Mohammed, sein Leben und sein Glaube*<sup>131</sup> by Tor Andrae (1885-1947), on the life of the Prophet Muḥammad and his faith, and to provide him with a summary of the book. Kirām wrote Riḍā back that he did not know the author, but promised him to translate the book into Arabic.<sup>132</sup>

The purpose of briefing *al-Manār*'s founder about the German press was that Riḍā, as an influential Muslim scholar, should get acquainted with the opinions of policymakers in Europe. He should also 'convey the current events [to his readers] as soon as possible in order to confront the Zionists and other enemies, who spend millions on disseminating news to the press in order to mislead the public opinion.'<sup>133</sup> The ill propaganda of some 'intruders trading in the name of Islam' also caused Islam gross damage. The propagation of 'false beliefs' under the name of Islam, such as those of Bābiyya, Bahā'iyya or Aḥmadiyya, were, in Kirām's view, the reason behind the decline of the spread of Islam in Europe.<sup>134</sup> He repeatedly complained to Riḍā about the degeneration of Muslim institutions in Berlin and their feeble role in serving Islam. He was convinced that Muslims in Berlin suffered from ill-information and lack of understanding of the European mentality and did not have any capability of presenting Islam to the Western public in a proper way. In one letter, he directed his severe attack against the Aḥmadiyya *Islamische Gemeinde zu Berlin*.<sup>135</sup> He had serious doubts about their way of serving Islam. In his view, their work would, on the contrary, defame the image of Islam in the West. He moreover labeled the five board members of the *Gemeinde*, without giving any names, as 'charlatans,' 'five fanatic communists,' and 'opportunists who knocked at all doors to get financial benefits for their own interests.'<sup>136</sup>

Kirām bemoaned the state of Muslims who, like him, had nothing to defend their oppressed rights, but the 'Islamic feeling' and the

---

<sup>131</sup> Tor Andrea, *Mohammed, sein Leben und sein Glaube*, Göttingen: Vandenhoeck und Ruprecht, 1932

<sup>132</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 8 Muḥarram 1352/May 1933.

<sup>133</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 9 October (no year).

<sup>134</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 3 Dhu al-Ḥijja 1351/March 1932.

<sup>135</sup> Arabic: *al-Jam'iyya al-Islāmiyya fi Berlin*; founded by Maulana Sadr-ud-Din of Lahore in Berlin Charlottenburg 1922.

<sup>136</sup> More about this, see, Ryad, 'Kirām,' pp. 245-249. See, letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin 3 June 1926.

‘Oriental Arab heart.’<sup>137</sup> He also tried to convince Riḍā that, ‘due to his own vast readings and solid belief based on knowledge [...], he was able to launch a strong movement for the cause of Islam and Arab Islamic peoples.’<sup>138</sup> He considered himself as ‘one of the pivots of *’imān* (faith), and a missionary of Islam.’<sup>139</sup> The only way to destroy the ‘allegations’ of Zionism, Christianity, Jesuitism and Freemasonry, in Kirām’s mind, was to use weapons of their own and select some of their controversial books for translation. Kirām maintained that his financial situation and lack of time prevented him from exerting more effort in ‘defending Muslim rights,’<sup>140</sup> and ‘devoting all his time to missionary work.’<sup>141</sup>

In *al-Manār*, Riḍā praised Kirām’s efforts of ‘reproaching Christian missionaries, and Muslims who give them support. In addition, he described those Muslims as ‘atheists, slaves of colonisers and enemies of their umma.’<sup>142</sup> Among Riḍā’s papers in Cairo, I have found two Arabic manuscripts which contain the Arabic translation of a text on the history of the Jesuits, which seemed to be a polemical treatise against the order. In my view, Kirām sent this translation to Riḍā, as they bear Kirām’s handwriting. Unfortunately, there is nothing in the manuscripts, which leads directly to the original work and its author(s).

On preparing his German lectures ‘Der Prophet Mohammed und die Frau,’ Kirām was advised by Arslān to consult Riḍā’s then recently published work on the rights of women in Islam, *Nidā’ ilā al-Jins al-Latīf*. At his request, Kirām received the treatise with a word of dedication.<sup>143</sup> He delivered those two lectures on the rights of women in Islam in one of the principal Berlin hotels. The *Deutsche Allgemeine*

<sup>137</sup> Ibid.

<sup>138</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 14 November 1929.

<sup>139</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 8 Muḥarram 1352/May 1933.

<sup>140</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 14 November 1929.

<sup>141</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 8 Muḥarram 1352/May 1933.

<sup>142</sup> See Riḍā’s comments on the margin of Kirām’s translation of Horten’s ideas. *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/2, p. 140.

<sup>143</sup> Letter from Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 3 Dhū al-Ḥijja 1351/March 1932; Rashīd Riḍā, *Nidā’ ilā al-Jins al-Latīf: Huqūq al-Mar’ah fī al-Islām*, Cairo: Maṭba’at al-Manār, 1932). The treatise was found among Kirām’s collection of books with Riḍā’s signature on it. Cf. W. J. A. Kernkamp, *De Islām en de vrouw: Bijdrage tot de kennis van het Reformisme naar aanleiding van M.R. Riḍā’s Nidā’ lil-Djins al-Latīf*, published PhD dissertation, University of Utrecht, Amsterdam, 1935.

*Zeitung* reviewed the lectures.<sup>144</sup> The London-based *Daily Telegraph* also commented on them.<sup>145</sup> Arabic journals, such as the Egyptian Wafdist journal *al-Jihād* and the Palestinian *al-Jāmi'a al-'Islāmiyya* (Pan-Islamism), quoted the lecture at length.<sup>146</sup>

As an Arab activist in Berlin, Kirām was preoccupied with the developments of the Zionist question in Germany. He kept Riḍā updated with the news of the petitions and protests of German Jews against the Zionist movement.<sup>147</sup> In order to substantiate the Arab cause, he believed that the Jewish statements would be of great benefit in fighting the enemy with his own 'weapon.' He was in contact with some anti-Zionist liberal Jewish organisations in Europe. In 1930, he sent *al-Manār* a translation of an article on the history of the Jewish migration to Palestine written by the Jewish German scholar H. Löwe in the *Gemeindeblatt der Jüdischen Gemeinde zu Berlin*. Kirām's intention was to give the readers of *al-Manār* insight into 'the persecution of the Jews by non-Muslims compared to the welfare they enjoyed under the banner of Islam.'<sup>148</sup> The reason why the article never appeared in *al-Manār* is not known.

Following the steps of the above-mentioned Fathī Zaghlūl, another Palestinian student in Paris, 'Ādil Zu'ayter (1895-1957), known as 'the Sheikh of Arab translators,' translated many Western works on history, philosophy, sociology and Arabic heritage into Arabic.<sup>149</sup> Zu'ayter's career as a translator started when he traveled to Paris to read law at the Sorbonne (1921). His favourite writer was Gustave Le Bon. He not only translated his works on the civilisation of Arabs, but also on the world of Indian civilisation, the psychology of socialism, the psychology of revolution and political psychology, etc.<sup>150</sup> Thanks to Zu'ayter's translation, Le Bon's works became widely

<sup>144</sup> E. F., 'Der Prophet Mohammed und die Frau,' *Deutsche Allgemeine Zeitung*, Berlin, Nr. 414 (22 September 1933).

<sup>145</sup> 'Nazi Plans for Women,' *The Daily Telegraph*, London, Nr. 24, 444 (Saturday, 23 September 1933). It is probable that it was Kirām himself who provided the *Daily Telegraph*, German and Arab newspapers with information about his activities in Berlin, or even wrote the articles himself.

<sup>146</sup> See, 'Al-Jarā'id al-'Almāniyya tatallam 'an al-Maqām al-Ijtimā'ī li al-Mar'ah al-Muslima,' *al-Jihād*, Cairo, 26 September 1933; 'Al-Dūktūr Zekī Kirām yuhādiru fī al-Mar'ah,' *al-Jāmi'a al-Islāmiyya*, Yafa (Palestine), 5 Rajab 1352/24 September 1933.

<sup>147</sup> Letter, Kirām to Riḍā, Berlin, 14 November 1929.

<sup>148</sup> Letter, Kirām, Shawwāl 1348 (1930).

<sup>149</sup> <http://www.islamonline.net/arabic/history/1422/07/article18.SHTML>; accessed, 30 April 2007.

<sup>150</sup> *Ibid.*

known in the Arab world. They also received, and are still receiving, much attention from many Muslim writers.<sup>151</sup>

Zu‘ayter was in contact with Riḍā, and tried to publish some of his works through *al-Manār* (see appendix II). From Paris he was a subscriber to *al-Manār*, and kept sending Riḍā his primitive draft translations in order to be edited and corrected.<sup>152</sup> Riḍā praised Zu‘ayter’s efforts to serve Arab culture by introducing his translated works, but reminded Arab readers not to adopt what he called ‘anti-religious theories’ in Le Bon’s works.<sup>153</sup>

### 1.2.2. *Writers in the Muslim world*

The name of Muḥammad Tawfiq Ṣidqī has been frequently mentioned in the introduction. As we have already said, he was known to the readers of *al-Manār* as one of the most productive contributors who vigorously attempted to apply his medical and scientific knowledge to Islamic subjects. As he also heavily criticised Christianity and its history, he played a most significant part in giving Riḍā new insights into the Western contemporary sources on Biblical studies.

Belonging to a middle-class Egyptian family, Ṣidqī was born in September 1881, and died in Cairo end of April 1920. At a young age, Ṣidqī memorised the Qur’an. He finished his primary schooling in 1896, his secondary education in 1900, and finished his medical studies in 1904. The Egyptian Ministry of Education honoured him for his success. He was later appointed as a physician in al-Qaṣr al-‘Aynī Hospital in Cairo, where he worked for one year. In 1905 he moved to the Prison Hospital of Ṭurah. In 1914 he moved to the Prison Hospital for Juveniles in Cairo.<sup>154</sup>

Ṣidqī was known not only to the readers of *al-Manār*, but also to those of other Egyptian periodicals such as *al-Mu‘ayyad*, *al-Liwā’*,

<sup>151</sup> See, for instance, Ana Belen Soage, ‘The Muslim Reaction to Pope Benedict XVI’s Regensburg Address,’ *Totalitarian Movements and Political Religions* 8/1, 2007, pp. 137-143.

<sup>152</sup> Letter, ‘Adil Zu‘ayter to Riḍā, Boulevard Brune, Paris, 14 October 1922.

<sup>153</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 29/4 (Muḥarram 1347/July 1928), p. 317.

<sup>154</sup> Biographical information is taken from *al-Manār*. It is an article published in *al-Majallah al-Ṭibbiyya al-Miṣriyya* (Egyptian Medical Magazine) after Ṣidqī’s death (May 1920). *Al-Manār*, vol. 21/9 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1338/September 1921), pp. 483-495. It is also interesting to know that I managed to trace one of Ṣidqī’s grandsons in Cairo through the telephone directory on the Internet, but unfortunately they do not preserve any archival materials for his grandfather.

and *al-ʿIlm*. He started reading *al-Manār* when he was a student at the Khediwiyya secondary school in Cairo. His interest in *al-Manār* grew and he eagerly followed Riḍā's public lectures in the city. Later he became Riḍā's family doctor and one of his close friends. When they were students, Şidqī had religious disputes with his Coptic friend 'Abduh effendi 'Ibrāhīm (1883-1920), who later converted to Islam.<sup>155</sup> Both of them came in touch with Riḍā after having attended many of his public lectures. They used to visit him in his *al-Manār* Office to discuss their religious doubts regarding specific Christian and Islamic doctrines, such as 'Ulūhiyya (divinity), Rūḥ (soul), and Ba'th (resurrection).<sup>156</sup>

Unlike Şidqī, 'Abduh 'Ibrāhīm did not write anything, nor did he make any attempt to publish in *al-Manār*. Şidqī started to publish his first series of articles in Riḍā's journal in the summer of 1905 under the title: 'Religion in Perspective of Sound Reason.'<sup>157</sup> His very impetus to write on such issues was, according to Riḍā, to find answers to many questions and doubts which occurred in his mind with regard to his religion. Riḍā ascribed Şidqī's doubts to his modern education and his personal debates with missionaries during his school time.<sup>158</sup>

In his comment on Şidqī's articles, Riḍā showed that he was impressed by Şidqī and his classmate 'Abduh 'Ibrāhīm and their way of deduction, especially their analysis and acquisition in matters of

<sup>155</sup> 'Abduh 'Ibrāhīm also studied medicine, and like Şidqī became a physician in the Prison Department in Cairo. When he converted to Islam, his family invited him for a debate with Coptic clergymen at their house in order to convince him to return back to his former Coptic belief. Riḍā provided him with needed literature (such as al-Qairanāwī's work) for that debate. In his biography of Şidqī, Riḍā made no mention to these debates. After his conversion to Islam, 'Abduh later married a Muslim woman. His eldest son ('Isā, died 1980) became one of the prominent Muslim economists, who (together with the well-known Muslim scholar Yūsuf al-Qaraḍāwī) was a pioneer in establishing Islamic Banks in the Gulf region. The story of 'Abduh's conversion to Islam is mentioned in 'Isā 'Abduh and Aḥmad Ismā'īl Yaḥyā, *Limādhā Aslamū?* (Why did they convert to Islam?), Cairo: Dār al-Ma'ārif, 1992, pp. 70-135. The story of conversion has been given as a model in a lecture by the Egyptian Salafī preacher and psychologist Muḥammad Ismā'īl al-Muqaddam (b. 1952).

Audio version is to be found at:  
[http://www.islamway.com/?iw\\_s=Lesson&iw\\_a=view&lesson\\_id=6752](http://www.islamway.com/?iw_s=Lesson&iw_a=view&lesson_id=6752), checked, 24 November 2006.

My thanks are due to Mr. 'Abd al-Wahhāb 'Ibrāhīm, 'Abduh's grandson, for sending me a copy of the book.

<sup>156</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 21/9, pp. 486-487.

<sup>157</sup> 'Al-Dīn fī Naẓar al-'Aql al-Şaḥīḥ,' five articles, *al-Manār*, vol. 8/9, 11, 13, 19, 20, (July-December 1905).

<sup>158</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 21/9, p. 487.



‘*aqīda* (doctrine). He also provided them with religious sources. Riḍā maintained that their studious discussions had helped to remove Ṣidqī’s religious doubts, and had lead ‘Abduh to be convinced by the truth of Islam.<sup>159</sup> In his reply to missionary writings on Islam, Ṣidqī read Western works on Biblical criticism, and introduced them to the readers of *al-Manār*; such Western writers as the Englishmen Walter Richard Cassels (1826-1907), John Mackinnon Robertson (1856-1933),<sup>160</sup> Christian Heinrich Arthur Drews (1865-1935),<sup>161</sup> and William Harry Turton.<sup>162</sup> Like Riḍā, his motive was to defend Islam against any accusations by using the works of fair-minded and atheist Western writers. However, Riḍā maintained that Ṣidqī’s writings in this regard were to be complemented by other Muslim works, such as the above-mentioned *Izhār al-Haqq*.<sup>163</sup>

Some of Ṣidqī’s articles in *al-Manār* aroused intense controversies in Egypt, and many religious scholars reacted strongly against them. Following the ideas of Muḥammad ‘Abduh, Ṣidqī, for instance, discussed the Qur’ānic narrative of Adam’s creation, and tried to reconcile it with the Darwinian evolutionist views. Sometimes Riḍā’s readers blamed *al-Manār* for opening its pages for such discussions which seemed to contradict the Qur’ān. Riḍā defended his friend’s arguments explaining that he discussed Darwin’s ideas as a scientific theory, and that his analysis was based on his own *ijtihād* (reasoning). His articles would only express his own views, and *al-Manār* was not responsible for any pieces written by others.<sup>164</sup>

The most controversial debate was Ṣidqī’s criticism of the Sunna in his article ‘al-’Islām huwa al-Qur’ān waḥdahu’ (Islam is the Qur’ān Only). In his view, Muslims should rely upon the Qur’ān, as the features of the Prophet’s behaviour were only meant for the first generation of Muslims, and not to be imitated in every particular case. Ṣidqī’s article in this regard came as a result of his deliberation (together with ‘Abduh ’Ibrāhīm) with Riḍā on his conviction that

<sup>159</sup> Ibid., p. 488.

<sup>160</sup> For example, J. M. Robertson, *Christianity and Mythology*, London, 1900.

<sup>161</sup> C. H. A. Drews, *Die Christusmythe: Die Zeugnisse für die geschichtlichkeit Jesu*, 2 vols., Jena: Diederichs, 1910-1911; translated by C. Delisle Burns, *The Christ Myth*, Amherst, N.Y., [etc.]: Prometheus Books, 1998.

<sup>162</sup> William Harry Turton, *The Truth of Christianity: being an examination of the more important arguments for and against believing in that religion*, London: Jarrold & Sons, 1902.

<sup>163</sup> Ibid.

<sup>164</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 21/9, p. 490.



Muslims were in no need of the Sunna, as it was a temporary source for Islamic law during the time of revelation only. Riḍā suggested that it would probably be more fruitful if Şidqî formulated his arguments published in *al-Manār*, and put them forward for discussion among scholars of Al-Azhar and others.<sup>165</sup> As we shall see, his polemical writings on Christianity even created a political controversy around *al-Manār*, especially after the interference of Lord Kitchener, the British Commissioner in Egypt (see, Chapter 3).

In 1922 Şidqî and his friend 'Abduh 'Ibrāhim died of typhus. A few days before his death, Şidqî wrote one of his last contributions to Riḍā's journal on the 'aqīda, and asked his family to send it to *al-Manār* even after his death. The news of his death reached Riḍā, when he was in his birthplace preparing for the Syrian Congress. In an article entitled: 'A Big Islamic Disaster,' Riḍā paid his tribute to Şidqî and his friend 'Abduh as two 'spiritual brothers.' He praised the former's contributions to his journal, describing him as one of the 'most God-fearing' Muslims.<sup>166</sup> Riḍā showed his high esteem of Şidqî by representing him as one of the 'pillars' of knowledge and reform in Egypt. He concluded: 'we have never found any other highly valuable friend or a highly esteemed student, who served *al-Manār* the way Şidqî did. He was benevolent and grateful to the favours given to him by the founder of *al-Manār*. However, we should admit that his favours to us were greater. Besides his sincerity in our friendship, he was above all our private physician, who also did my children great favours.'<sup>167</sup>

Another significant polemicist was the Syrian Muḥammad Ṭāhir al-Tannīr (d. 1933), who also introduced Western critical studies on the Bible throughout his book: *Pagan Doctrines in the Christian Religion*.<sup>168</sup> Tannīr's work was one of Riḍā's favourite books, which he regularly quoted in his discussions, *fatwās*, and *Tafsīr*. The book enjoyed wide popularity in Muslim circles in Egypt and elsewhere.

<sup>165</sup> Muḥammad Tawfiq Şidqî, 'al-'Islām huwa al-Qur'ān waḥdah,' *al-Manār*, vol. 9/7 (Rajab 1324/August 1906), pp. 515-524. The issue is discussed in G. H. A. Juynboll, *The Authenticity of the Tradition Literature: Discussions in Modern Egypt*, Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1969, pp. 23-30; see also, Daniel Brown, *Rethinking Tradition in Modern Islamic Thought*, Cambridge University Press, 1999, pp. 67-68.

<sup>166</sup> 'Raz' 'Islāmī 'Azīm: Wafāt al-Duktūr Şidqî,' *al-Manār*, vol. 21/8 (Dhū al-Qi'da 1338/August 1920), pp. 447-448.

<sup>167</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 21/9, p. 495.

<sup>168</sup> Muḥammad Ṭāhir al-Tannīr, *al-'Aqā'id al-Wathaniyya fī al-Diyāna al-Naşrāniyya* n. d., n. p. (circa 1912), Beirut.

The author's full name is Muḥammad Ṭāhir b. 'Abd al-Wahhāb b. Salīm al-Tannīr, who studied at the American Protestant College in Beirut. He was living at 'Ayn 'Annūb, a village near Beirut. In Beirut he published his own magazine *al-Muṣawwar*. After World War I, Tannīr moved to Egypt. Later he returned to Syria, and was buried in Dummar, on the outskirts of Damascus. Muḥammad Ṭāhir co-published a piece of work on astronomy with his father.<sup>169</sup> According to the Australian missionary scholar Arthur Jeffery (d. 1959), 'Abd al-Wahhāb, Muḥammad's father, specialised in exploiting the ultra critical Western theories on the Scriptures with a view to show that what was preached by missionaries in the East was not believed by the intellectuals in the West. The father's works also caused many repercussions in Egypt shortly after the First World War.<sup>170</sup>

Following his father's steps, Tannīr brought forth his treatise as a reply to some of the contemporary Christian apologetic and polemic literature on Islam.<sup>171</sup> As we read in the beginning of the book, the author sarcastically dedicated his work 'to the Crusaders of the Twentieth Century, the Missionaries.'<sup>172</sup> The treatise continued to be one of the significant Muslim polemical works in the present time. It was reprinted in Tehran in 1391 (circa 1972). Muḥammad 'Abdullāh al-Sharqāwī, a professor of philosophy at the Faculty of Dār al-'Ulūm in Cairo, published a revised edition of Tannīr's work in 1988.<sup>173</sup>

Tannīr brought forward the theory of 'Pagan Christs,' and quoted from several Western sources in an attempt to prove the 'absurdity' of the Christian faith. Tannīr's work caused reactions in Christian

<sup>169</sup> Zirikli, *op. cit.*, vol. 6, p. 173.

<sup>170</sup> A. Jeffery, 'New Trends in Moslem Apologetics,' in John R. Mott, ed., *The Moslem World of Today*, London: Hodder and Stoughton Limited, 1925, p. 310 (Quoted below, 'Trends'); id., 'A Collection of Anti-Christian Books and Pamphlets Found in Actual Use among the Mohammedans of Cairo,' *The Moslem World* 15, 1925, p. 29. According to Jeffery's list of Muslim literature (no. 11), Abd al-Wahhāb Salīm Al-Tannīr, for example, translated a book attributed to Charles Watt, which he titled in Arabic: *Iḍrāru Ta'lim al-Tawrāh wā al-'Injil*, Cairo, 1901.

<sup>171</sup> On the top of his list of missionary publications was *The Moslem World*, which he described as 'a magazine full of slander and broadsides against Islam.' Among the Arabic books are: *al-Hidāyah* (The Guidance), 4 vols., Cairo: The American Mission, *al-Bākūra al-Shahiyya* (Sweet First-Fruits), Cairo, The Nile Mission Press, n.d.; and the works of St. Clair Tisdall, M.A. Rice, Samuel Zwemer.

<sup>172</sup> Tannīr, *op. cit.*, p. 1.

<sup>173</sup> Id., *al-'Aqā'id al-Wathaniyyā fī al-Diyānā al-Naṣrāniyyā*, edited by 'Abdullāh al-Sharqāwī, Cairo: Dār al-Saḥwā, 1988. This edition is to be found at: <http://www.da3wah-4-islam.com/vb/showthread.php?t=279>. Accessed on 22 October 2007. Many Muslim websites cite the treatise at length.

circles. Some of the sources maintained that due to its harsh attacks Tannīr's small book was banned in Beirut (see chapter 2).<sup>174</sup> In the preface, Tannīr stated that the motive behind writing the book was not 'hostility' or 'fanaticism' against people who confess other religions. First of all, he composed this small book as counter objections to missionary books which were according to Tannīr, full of 'slander and attacks against Islam and Muslims.' The second reason was to call the Christians back to the truth of Islam.<sup>175</sup>

Tannīr emphasised that there were similarities between the story of Jesus and the stories of other ancient religions. These similarities allegedly prove that the Biblical story of Jesus was nothing more than a composite or rehash of ancient myths. His attention focused on seeking nearly identical parallels between the story of Jesus and other mythical figures, such as the Krishna story as told in the Hindu Vedas, dated to at least as far back as 1400 B.C., and the Horus myth, which was also said to be identical to the Biblical tale about Jesus. He developed these ideas from a long list of historical and Biblical Western studies, such as Huxley's *Evidence as to Man's Place in Nature*,<sup>176</sup> Jameson's *The History of Our Lord*,<sup>177</sup> Bunsen's *The Angel Messiah*,<sup>178</sup> Fiske's *Myth and Myth Makers*,<sup>179</sup> and Ferguson's *Tree and Serpent Worship*.<sup>180</sup>

The method of drawing an analogy between Jesus and pagan deities or heroes of Antiquity was first introduced by Western authors in the nineteenth century. The American atheist Kersey Graves (1813-1883), for instance, found that stories of a crucified savior had circulated in the first civilisations. The story was very old and had been

---

<sup>174</sup> *Al-Machreq* 15, 1912, p. 298.

<sup>175</sup> Tannir, *op. cit.*, pp. 6-8.

<sup>176</sup> Thomas Henry Huxley, *Evidence as to Man's Place in Nature*, London: Williams and Norgate 1863; New York, 1880.

<sup>177</sup> Jameson, *The History of our Lord: as exemplified in Works of Arts, with that of these Types; St. John the Baptist, and other Persons of the Old and New Testament*, Compiled by London: Lady Eastlake, 1892.

<sup>178</sup> Ernest De Bunsen, *The Angel-messiah of Buddhists, Essenes and Christians*, London: Longmans, Green, and Co., 1892.

<sup>179</sup> John Fiske, *Myth and Myth Makers: Old Tales and Superstitions interpreted by Comparative Mythology*, London, 1873.

<sup>180</sup> James Fergusson, *Tree and Serpent Worship*, London: India Museum, 1873.

accepted in all of these cultures throughout the Far East, the Middle East, and the Mediterranean countries.<sup>181</sup> Gerald Massey (b. May, 1828), the English Egyptologist, also found over 100 similarities between Jesus and Krishna.<sup>182</sup> Robertson followed the same method of comparing Jesus to Krishna.<sup>183</sup>

From beginning to end, Tannir followed the comparative method of drawing an analogy between Christian doctrines and elements and traces in other different ancient beliefs. The main object of the book was to argue that there was wholesale influence of pagan mysteries and other foreign doctrines and practices on Christianity. The doctrine of Trinity, for example, which was taught by Christians, was borrowed from heathenism.<sup>184</sup> He attempted to find parallels of such doctrines in other ancient religions in Egypt, India and elsewhere. The same held true for the cross, the incarnation, the virgin birth of Jesus, the appearance of the star in the East, and other events in the life of Jesus.

Christianity, according to him, largely borrowed from the records of older nations. He insisted that the idea of a suffering God atoning through his death for the sins of men, descending into the abodes of darkness and rising again to bring life and immortality to light, was found in the oldest records of the beliefs of the human race, such as those concerning Buddha and Krishna.<sup>185</sup> The question of the virgin birth was of special interest in the treatise. Tannir sought an analogy between the myths of the birth of Krishna and how the divine Vishnu himself descended into the womb of Devaki and was born as her son Krishna. In this, the deity was not only the effective agent in the

---

<sup>181</sup> Kersey Graves, *The World's Sixteen Crucified Saviors*, New York: The Truth Seeker Company, 1875. According to Graves, the sixteen saviors are: Thulis of Egypt (1700 BC), Khrisna of India (1200 B.C.), Crite of Chaldea (1200 B.C.), Attis of Phrygia (1170 B.C.), Thammuz of Syria (1160 B.C.), Hesus of the Celtic Druids (834 B.C.), Bali of Orissa (725 B.C.), Indra of Tibet (725 B.C.), Iao of Nepal (622 B.C.), Sakia, a Hindu god, (600 B.C.), Alcestis of Euripedes (600 B.C.), Mithra of Persia (600 B.C.), Quexalcoatei of Mexico (587 B.C.), Aeschylus (Prometheus) (547 B.C.), Wittoba of the Telingonese (552 B.C.), Quirinus of Rome (506 B.C.), and according to the author, Jesus Christ allegedly about the year A.D. 28 or A.D. 32.

A soft copy of the book can be also found at: [http://www.acwitness.org/essays/bkup/16\\_crucified\\_saviors/index.html](http://www.acwitness.org/essays/bkup/16_crucified_saviors/index.html); accessed on 11 July 2006

<sup>182</sup> Gerald Massey, *The Historical Jesus and the Mythical Christ*, London, 1886.

<sup>183</sup> See, John Mackinnon Robertson, *Christ and Krishna*, London 1889.

<sup>184</sup> Tannir, *op. cit.*, pp. 17-39.

<sup>185</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 55-58.

conception, but also the offspring.<sup>186</sup> He also placed special emphasis on the relation which the idea of the virgin birth in the Gospels supposedly had with ancient Egyptian religious conceptions. However, he found that the Egyptian story of the virgin birth was much more complex and cruder than the Biblical one. In the story of the birth of Horus and in the idea of the divinity of the pharaohs a great resemblance was thought to be found.<sup>187</sup> The concluding section of al-Tannīr's treatise was again devoted to analogies; first between Krishna and Christ, and then between Buddha and Christ. He set out—in parallel columns the coincidences as related in pagan books and in the Gospels.<sup>188</sup>

Another interesting associate of *al-Manār* was the Moroccan Salafi scholar Taqī al-Dīn al-Hilālī (d. 1987), who travelled to Egypt for the first time in 1921 (see, appendix III). He soon contacted Riḍā and became a close friend and disciple of *al-Manār*. As a strong sympathiser with the Saudi Royal family, Riḍā recommended Hilālī to Ibn Sa'ūd for the position of religious teacher at *al-Ḥaram al-Nabawī* in Medina.<sup>189</sup> Besides Saudi Arabia, Hilālī made many trips during his life to India (he taught Arabic at the *Dār al-'Ulūm* of *Nadwat al-'Ulamā* in Lucknow), Afghanistan, and Iraq. In the 1940s, he travelled to Germany through his connection with Shakīb Arslān, where he studied for his PhD at the University of Bonn,<sup>190</sup> and became a Muslim activist and an active member of Radio Berlin in Arabic during the Second World War.

Hilālī's correspondence with Riḍā contains important information about their relation, and that they shared the same political ideology of pan-Islamism. In *al-Manār*, we can read Hilālī's name appearing on the list of a manifesto against the Italian aggression on Libya in 1931, which was signed by Riḍā and other well-known names.<sup>191</sup>

<sup>186</sup> Ibid., p. 59ff. Cf. F.F. Bruce, 'The Person of Christ: Incarnation and Virgin Birth,' in Carl F. H. Henry, ed., *Basic Christian Doctrines*, Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1975, p. 128; Gresham Machen, *The Virgin Birth of Christ*, Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1977.

<sup>187</sup> Ibid., pp. 73-74.

<sup>188</sup> Ibid., pp. 149-184.

<sup>189</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, Hijāz, (15 Dhū al-Ḥijja 1345/16 June 1927). Another letter, Medina, (16 Jumāda al-'Awwal 1346/11 November 1927).

<sup>190</sup> T. al-Hilālī, *Die Einleitung zu Al-Birūnī's Steinbuch*, Gräfenhainichen: Druck von C. Schulze, 1941.

<sup>191</sup> See the manifesto, *al-Manār*, vol. 31/9 (Muḥarram 1350/June 1931), pp. 714-717.

During his various journeys, Hilālī attempted to disseminate *al-Manār*'s views in these countries.<sup>192</sup> A relevant example for our study was his defence of Riḍā's acceptance of the possibility of a natural death of Jesus (see, chapters 6 and 7), when a certain 'Abdullāh b. Ḥassan, a Najdī scholar, openly criticised *al-Manār*.<sup>193</sup>

In addition to his contributions to Riḍā's journal, Hilālī wrote to Riḍā about his experience with Muslim organisations as a Muslim preacher. In Lucknow, he became a senior teacher of Arabic (summer 1928).<sup>194</sup> During his stay in India, he learnt English, and later co-published a printed English translation of the Qur'ān with the Indian physician Muḥammad Muḥsin Khān.<sup>195</sup>

It is interesting to know that Hilālī learnt English from an American missionary in Lucknow. He believed that it was significant to have a good command of any Western language in order to promote his work of Da'wa. Besides their three-times-a-week lesson, this American missionary requested Hilālī to attend his religious sermons in his missionary basis in order to improve his language. Like Riḍā, Hilālī praised the enthusiasm of Christians in disseminating their religion, while Muslims lacked zealotry in propagating Islam.<sup>196</sup>

On the eve of Christmas 1930, Hilālī met with a certain young American missionary by the name of William Smith (?) about whom we do not have any information. When they started their debate on the nature of the Bible and the Qur'ān, Hilālī made it clear that he never read the Gospel, and was now learning English to read it in its English version. Smith immediately ordered a copy for him from London, which he sent to Hilālī with a brief note: 'Asking God to bestow on you many blessings through this book.'<sup>197</sup> Hilālī instantly embarked upon drafting his polemical commentaries on this version, and gave Riḍā a summary of his findings. In one of his letters, for example, he informed Riḍā that he wrote these Arabic notes on the margins of the Gospel according to Matthew on the copy sent to him by Smith. Riḍā was much interested in reading Hilālī's comments.

<sup>192</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, Medina (23 Jumāda al-'Ākhira 1346/December 1927).

<sup>193</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, Mecca (10 Rabī' al-'Awwal, 1346/September 1927).

<sup>194</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, Lucknow (27 Rabī' al-Thānī 1347/13 October 1928).

<sup>195</sup> Al-Hilālī and Khān, *Interpretation of the meanings of the Noble Qur'an*, Saudi Arabia: Maktabat Dār al-Salām, 1996.

<sup>196</sup> Taqī al-Dīn al-Hilālī, 'Al-Barāhīn al-'Injiliyya 'alā 'anna 'Isā dakhal fī al-'Ubūdiyyā wā lā Ḥazza lahu fī al-'Ulūhiyya,' unpublished typescript (Morocco, n. d.).

<sup>197</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 6.

Arslān showed a similar interest in reading the comments. After having finished the translation, a proposal was made by Riḍā to let the treatise be published by the well-known Saudi businessman Muḥammad Naṣif of Jeddah.<sup>198</sup>

Hilālī explained his primary motive of translating the Gospels by writing to Riḍā: 'I hope that some Muslim organisations would shoulder the task of translating the Gospels into eloquent and correct Arabic with annotations in order to expose the confusion of the Christians, just as what they did with our Book [the Qur'ān]. But we should only illustrate the facts, without imitating the Christians in their wrong-doing [with our Book].'<sup>199</sup> His prime aim of producing an excellent translation with footnotes was also to convert Arab Christians to Islam and make it less likely that Muslims would be seduced by missionary attempts.<sup>200</sup> But the 'real enemy,' in Hilālī's view, 'remains Western Christians, not the Eastern ones.'<sup>201</sup> Hilālī unfortunately lost his copy of the Gospel with its notes, but later published his comments in the magazine of *al-Shubbān al-Muslimūn* (established by the Iraqi writer and lawyer Tāhā al-Fayyāḍ (1899-1964) in Basra) under the title: *Ḥawāshī Shattā 'alā 'Injīl Mattā* (Various Footnotes on the Gospel according to Matthew).<sup>202</sup>

As a fervent advocate of disseminating the Arabic language among all Muslims, Hilālī established the Arabic Lucknow-based magazine *al-Ḍiyā'*, in cooperation with the Indian scholar 'Abū al-Ḥasan al-Nadwī (d. 1999).<sup>203</sup> Its main purpose was to promote the knowledge of Arabic among Indian Muslims. *Al-Manār* blessed his project by publishing the introductory statement of al-Nadwī in the magazine.<sup>204</sup>

<sup>198</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, Lucknow (28 Jumāda al-Thāniya 1352/18 October 1933).

<sup>199</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, n.p. (24 Jumāda al-Ulā 1352/14 September 1933).

<sup>200</sup> Ibid.

<sup>201</sup> Letter, al-Hilālī to Riḍā, Lucknow (14 Jumāda al-Ulā 1351/4 September 1933).

<sup>202</sup> Ibid. Hilālī reworked his *Ḥawāshī* in his later work *al-Barāhīn al-Injīliyya*, which he especially composed at the request of a certain Mundhir al-Darūbī, a Moroccan engineering student in the United States in the 1970s in order to use it in his polemical debates with Christians there. Ibn Bāz later ordered the publication of Hilālī's *Barāhīn* in twenty thousand copies in Saudi Arabia. See, Hilālī's article in *Majallat al-Buhūth al-Islāmiyya*, softcopy, available at: <http://www.alifita.com/Fatawa/fatawaDetails.aspx?BookID=2&View=Page&PageNo=1&PageID=1658>; accessed on 20 April 2007.

<sup>203</sup> See, Jan-Peter Hartung, *Viele Wege und ein Ziel: Leben und Wirken von Sayyid Abu l-Ḥasan 'Ali al-Ḥasani Nadwi (1914-1999)*, Würzburg: Ergon, 2004.

<sup>204</sup> 'Naḥḍa Jadida li 'Ihya' Lughat al-'Islām al-'Arabiyya fi al-Bilād al-Hindiyya (New Renaissance for revitalizing the Arabic Language of Islam in the Indian Lands),'



Besides his writings in Riḍā's journal,<sup>205</sup> Hilālī also tried to introduce *al-Manār* to many Indian scholars. He believed that the only way to propagate *al-Manār*'s reform mission was to encourage learning the Arabic language, and to combat the 'rigid' scholars who argued that reading classical sources in translations were enough for learning Islam.<sup>206</sup>

A certain Badr al-Dīn al-Ṣinī, a Chinese Muslim, was in the same period on the Indian stage with Hilālī. Little is known about this person. However, he was important in Riḍā's religious circle. Al-Ṣinī was actually known to the readers of Arab Muslim magazines in Egypt and elsewhere. In one of his letters, Riḍā asked Hilālī to take care of him by reading many Islamic sources with him.<sup>207</sup> Riḍā also gave him the responsibility of translating his works into Chinese. Through Hilālī, al-Ṣinī made a proposal to Riḍā for translating his book *al-Waḥī* into Chinese. Hilālī described al-Ṣinī as 'an energetic self-made Muslim.'<sup>208</sup> Although he admitted the benefit of the Chinese translation, Hilālī believed that an English translation would be more effective. Among the names he suggested to make the translation was a certain Mirza Muḥammad Khān Bahādir, an Iraqi of Persian origin living in Basra.<sup>209</sup>

### 1.3. Conclusion

Studying *al-Manār* in the light of the archive of its founder, we have found two focal categories of sources used by Riḍā in his efforts to collect relevant materials, which helped him to compensate for his lack of knowledge of Western languages (and subsequently influenced the development of his views on Christianity): 1) the critical Western works in Arabic print offered him a wide range of precedents related

---

*al-Manār*, vol. 32/5 (Muḥarram 1351/May 1932), pp. 345-351.

<sup>205</sup> See, for example, his famous debate with the Shī'ī scholar Sayyid Maḥdī al-Kāzimī al-Qazwīnī (d. 1940) on the issue of visiting shrines and tombs in Islam, *al-Manār*, 7 articles, vol. 28/5-10, vol. 29/1 (June 1927- January 1929). See also, his response to a certain Graham Lewis(?), the editor of the Oriental section in the *Illustrated Weekly of India Bombay* (27 August 1933). T. al-Hilālī, 'Ma'sāt Amīra Sharqīyya (The tragedy of an Oriental Princess),' *al-Manār*, two articles, vol. 34/7 (Ramaḍān 1353/January 1935), pp. 535-543, vol. 35/1, pp. 82-86.

<sup>206</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, Lucknow (8 Rabī' al-Thānī 1352/31 July 1933).

<sup>207</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, n.p. (24 May 1935).

<sup>208</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, Lucknow (8 Rabī' al-Thānī 1352/31 July 1933). See, *al-Manār*, vol. 33/10 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1352/April 1934), pp. 756.

<sup>209</sup> Letter, Hilālī to Riḍā, al-Zubayr, Iraq (28 al-Muḥarram 1353/13 May 1934).



to the West, and 2) the contributions of various individuals in his circle of associates who had a good command of Western languages (especially English, French and German), and possessed a certain degree of religious involvement in the subject.

These contributions included such subjects as the rise of new Christian movements in the West and historical and archaeological discoveries related to the Bible (such as the afore-mentioned German scholar Delitzsch). *Al-Manār's* treatment of these subjects was to advocate the authenticity of Islam vis-à-vis Christian missionary claims of the superiority of their religion. It is apparent from Riḍā's archive that he came into personal contact with various people, who influenced his journal and broadened his scope as a journalist immensely. In the first place, the objective of their works seems to have been to describe certain European ideas that would fit well in the *al-Manār's* programme. Secondly, the effect of their interaction was also determined by the kinds of topics or discussions, which Riḍā finally selected for print.



## CHAPTER TWO

### RIḌĀ AND ARAB CHRISTIANS: ATTITUDES TOWARDS SYRIAN CHRISTIANS AND THE EGYPTIAN COPTIC COMMUNITY

In order to present a good picture of Riḍā's relations with Arab Christians, I shall first of all describe his relations with some of his Syrian Christian fellow-citizens, who, like him, made Egypt their new residence after migration. In the course of our discussion we shall turn our focus from a short sketch of Riḍā's political ambitions with them and their struggle for independence from the colonial presence in the Arab East, towards an outline of the personal biographies of those among them with whom Riḍā had lively debates. This is suggested as a useful means of illuminating the historical context of the discussions at stake. Many of these Christian writers had championed secularism. Riḍā's attitudes towards these individuals generated very interesting discussions on religion, history, Islamic philosophy and literature. At another level, Riḍā's polemics with Syrians Christians was extended to include religious controversies with the Arabic Jesuit journal *al-Machreq*. The last part of the chapter is devoted to study his stances towards the Egyptian Copts, and his reflections as a Syrian émigré on their political demands, ending with his sharp reactions to the Christian writer Salāma Mūsā, who was a close disciple of Syrian Christian publicists in Egypt.

#### 2.1. *Syrian Christian Nationalists: A Common Political Agenda*

The Syro-Lebanese emigrant community in Brazil knew about *al-Manār* right from the start of its publication. The Sao-Paulo-based journal *al-Aṣma'ī*, co-edited by the Christians Khalīl Milūk and Shukrī al-Khūrī, reviewed *al-Manār* describing it as 'one of the best Islamic journals.'<sup>1</sup> Na'ūm al-Labakī (d. 1924), the founder of the Syrian

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Al-Manār fī al-Brāzīl (*al-Manār* in Brazil),' vol. 1/37 (Rajab 1316/December 1898), p. 734.

journal *al-Munāẓir* (The Debater) in Sao Paulo,<sup>2</sup> blamed Riḍā for restricting the subjects of his journal to religious issues, and that he stopped his discussions on Syrian national problems and religious strife in their homeland Syria. The contents of the journal, according to him, were not in agreement with the subtitle of his journal: 'scientific, literary, informative and educating journal.' In his reply, Riḍā explained that he used to write such items before the banning of his journal in Syria, and they would have been valueless as no Syrian Muslim, Christian or Jew had access to his articles anymore. As the circle of his readers became limited to the people in Egypt, Tunisia, Algeria, Morocco, India, Java, and a group of Syrian emigrants in America, it was more appropriate for him to focus on other Islamic religious instructive issues. Riḍā was also convinced that his treatment of such Islamic themes was not only of benefit for his Muslim readers, but for Christians as well. He asserted that a Christian teacher at one of the high schools in Syria, after having read *al-Manār*, had ordered all previous issues. He also persuaded the director of the school to subscribe to the journal and collect its issues for the school's library. Riḍā finally concluded that it was also reasonable to subtitle his journal as 'informative and educating,' since religious sciences are the most 'venerated' fields.

Born and bred in Syria, which is known for its religious and ethnical minorities,<sup>3</sup> Riḍā was familiar with its substantial Christian population. His coming to Egypt coincided with the resumption of the emigration wave of Syrians (most of them Christians), who fled from the Hamidian oppression to Egypt towards the end of the nineteenth century.<sup>4</sup> In his later political career, Riḍā gathered around his political project of Arabism an active group of Syrian émigré intellectuals,

---

<sup>2</sup> 'Al-Manār wā al-Munāẓir,' vol. 2/40 (Sha'bān 1317/December 1899), p. 683. In 1908 Labakī returned back to his birthplace Beirut, where he continued its publication. He was the president of the Representative Council of Lebanon. See, Zirikli, *op. cit.*, vol. 8, p. 40.

<sup>3</sup> Itamar Rabinovich, 'The Compact Minorities and the Syrian State, 1918-45,' *Journal of Contemporary History* 14/4, 1979, pp. 693-712. About Christian Arab Nationalism, see, Spencer Lavan, 'Four Christian Arab nationalists: A Comparative Study,' *The Muslim World* 57, 1967, pp. 114-125.

<sup>4</sup> Thomas Philipp. *The Syrians in Egypt 1725-1975*, Stuttgart: Franz Steiner Verlag Wiesbaden GmbH, 1985, pp. 1-53. A. Hourani, 'The Syrians in Egypt in the eighteenth and nineteenth century,' in *Colloque international sur l'histoire du Caire*, Cairo, 1972.

who opposed the Committee of Union and Progress (CUP) and promoted the idea of an Arab monarch.<sup>5</sup>

Political interests linked both Muslim and Christian elites in their cultural pride in Arab heritage, as a means to face the cultural expansion of the West.<sup>6</sup> Syrian Christians, in particular, played a large role in the revival of the Arab literary movement. After his migration to Egypt, Riḍā drew closer to his Syrian Christian fellow writers and publishers. This group probably enjoyed the greatest freedom of thought that was experienced by any group of Arab intellectuals in the twentieth century.<sup>7</sup> Most of these Syrians were Christians by origin, but adopted a strictly secularist agenda. Although the majority of those Christians enjoyed modern Western education and adopted Western methods of thinking, some of them, however, shared with Riḍā his resentment of the penetration of Western thought into the Arab world, including missionary activities. They also shared with him the same anxieties that 'the Sublime Porte would fall in the hands of Europe.'<sup>8</sup>

In 1912 and 1913 new Arab political groupings came into being. One of the best known among these new groups was *Ḥizb al-Lāmarkaziyya al-Idāriyyā al-'Uthmānī* (Ottoman Administrative Decentralisation Party), which Riḍā founded in Cairo in December 1912. The party was dedicated to the achievement of self-government in the Ottoman Empire.<sup>9</sup> Within the party, Riḍā called for an Arab revival as the necessary herald of the restoration of Islam. He also declared that as a Muslim he was a brother to all Muslims, and as an Arab a brother to all Arabs, and he saw no contradiction between the

---

<sup>5</sup> Philip S. Khoury, *Urban notables and Arab Nationalism: the Politics of Damascus 1860-1920*, Cambridge University Press, 1983, pp. 62-63.

<sup>6</sup> See, Bruce Masters, *Christians and Jews in the Ottoman Arab World: The Roots of Sectarianism*, Cambridge University Press, 2004, pp. 170-182. The Christian Butrus al-Bustānī was one of the pioneers who called for Arabic cultural revival. See, Butrus Abu-Mannch, 'The Christians between Ottomanism and Syrian Nationalism: The Ideas of Butrus al-Bustani,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 11/3, 1980, pp. 287-304.

<sup>7</sup> See, Hisham Sharabi, *Arab Intellectuals and the West: the Formative years, 1875-1914*, p. 114-121. Cf. Reeva Spector Simon et al, eds., *The Origins of Arab Nationalism*, Columbia University Press, 1993.

<sup>8</sup> See his articles on the Oriental Question, 'al-Mas'ala al-Sharqiyya,' *al-Manār*, vol. 14/11 (Dhū al-Qi'da 1329/November 1911), pp. 833-853.

<sup>9</sup> Elie Kedourie, *Arabic Political Memoirs and Other Studies*, Routledge, 1974, pp. 43-44.

two.<sup>10</sup> His model of 'an Arab Empire' would have recognised both Christianity and Judaism and would have given non-Muslims the right to serve in the administration of the government and the judicial system (except the *Shari'a* courts).<sup>11</sup>

After the rise of the theory of Arabism, some Christian Arabs (mostly Syrians and Palestinians) had already implicitly accepted the theory that Islam is an essential part of Arabism because it brought grandeur to the Arabs.<sup>12</sup> Many Arab Christians, such as Shibli Shumayyil and the prominent lawyer Iskandar 'Ammūn, had joined Riḍā's Decentralisation Party. Being on close terms with many of these Christian Syrians of his generation, Riḍā managed in his political struggle to gain the support of those who 'were unwilling to admit the inferiority of the East to the West.'<sup>13</sup> For him, Syrian Christians were 'the most advanced class in education, wealth, generosity, courage and pride.'<sup>14</sup> By 1914 he had developed to the full his theory of Arabism, which was also accepted by a group of Christian Arabs.<sup>15</sup>

The concept of the 'Greater Syria' sharpened Riḍā's desire for Pan-Arabism. In his struggle against the imposition of the French Mandate in Syria, he played a prominent role with other Muslim, Christian and Druze nationalists. In 1918, a number of Syrian émigrés had established the Syrian-Palestinian Congress. During its first major session in Geneva (summer of 1921), where demands for Syrian unity and independence were presented to the League of Nations, Riḍā was elected as the vice-president.<sup>16</sup> Its president Michel Lutfallah

<sup>10</sup> Mahmoud Haddad, 'The Rise of Arab Nationalism: reconsidered,' *International Journal of Middle Eastern Studies* 26/2, 1994, pp. 215-216 (Quoted below, 'Rise'); Sami Zubaida, 'Islam and nationalism: continuities and contradictions,' *Nations and Nationalism* 10/4, 2004, pp. 407-420.

<sup>11</sup> Mahmoud Haddad, 'Arab Religious Nationalism in the Colonial Era: Rereading Rashīd Riḍā's Ideas on the Caliphate,' *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 117/2, 1997, pp. 270-271 (Quoted below, 'Nationalism').

<sup>12</sup> C. Ernest Dawn, 'From Ottomanism to Arabism: The origin of an ideology,' *Review of Politics* 23/3, 1961, p. 396.

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>14</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 15/1, (Muḥarram 1330/January 1912), p. 44.

<sup>15</sup> Dawn, *op. cit.*, pp. 394-395. More about Riḍā's ideas on Arabism, see, his letter to the First Arab Congress in Paris (June 1913), *Al-Mu'tamar AL-'Arabī AL-'Awwal*, Cairo, 1913, pp. i-iii; J. Jomier, 'Les raisons de l'adhésion du Sayyed Rashīd Riḍā au nationalisme arabe,' *Bulletin de l'Institut d'Égypte* 53, 1973, pp. 53-61; Adeed Dawisha, *Arab Nationalism in the Twentieth Century: From Triumph to Despair*, Princeton University Press, 2002, pp. 20-22.

<sup>16</sup> Marie-Renée Mouton, 'Le Congrès syrio-palestinien de Genève (1921),' *Relations Internationales* 19, 1979, pp. 313-328. About Riḍā's political ideas and activism,

(1880-1961), the son of a wealthy Greek Orthodox Christian émigré in Egypt, was the inspiration behind the establishment of the Congress and its major financier.<sup>17</sup> But by 1922, disputes between Syrian factions became intense, a rift between Syrian and Palestinian members started to appear, and the Syrian membership was split into two. Luṭfallah, allied with the Damascene physician Abdel-Raḥmān Shāhbandar (assassinated in 1946), chose to advocate a purely secular nationalism. The other group, headed by Shakīb Arslān, propagated the idea of Arabism, as based on the Islamic divine tenets. They clashed with Luṭfallah-Shāhbandar's faction because of their links with the British and the Hashimite royal family. Riḍā chose to remain linked to the former faction, since this enabled him to concentrate on the ideological articulation of nationalism and particularly on the importance of the Islamic content in its formulation.<sup>18</sup>

### 2.1.1. *Faraḥ Anṭūn* (al-Jāmi'a)

Riḍā's acquaintance with Faraḥ Anṭūn goes back to their youth in their hometown Tripoli. In their early years, he met with Anṭūn for the first time at the house of Jurjī Yannī, a teacher and writer in Tripoli. At that time, Riḍā saw Anṭūn as one of the most intelligent Christian young men in Syria. He was modest, shy, but eventually showed himself to be an irritable person. He often hesitated to give his opinions frankly in case he had not studied the matter in question thoroughly.<sup>19</sup> Both young men agreed that the Syrian stage was too cramped for their dreams of entering the world of journalism. In

---

see, for example, Eliezer Tauber, 'Three Approaches, One Idea: Religion and State in the Thought of 'Abd al-Raḥman al-Kawākibī, Najib 'Azūri and Rashīd Riḍā,' *British Journal of Middle Eastern Studies* 21/2, 1994, pp. 190-198; id., 'Rashīd Riḍā and Faysal's Kingdom in Syria,' *The Muslim World* 85, 1995, pp. 235-245; id., 'Rashīd Riḍā as Pan-Arabist before the World War I,' *The Muslim World* 79/2, 1989, pp. 102-112; id., 'The Political Life of Rashīd Riḍā,' *Arabist: Budapest Studies in Arabic* 19-20, 1998, pp. 261-272.

<sup>17</sup> Philip S. Khoury, *Syria and the French Mandate: The Politics of Arab Nationalism 1920-1945*, Princeton University Press, 1987, p. 223.

<sup>18</sup> More about the two factions, see, Philip S. Khoury, 'Factionalism among Syrian Nationalists during the French Mandate,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 13/4, 1981, pp. 441-469. Cf. Y. L. Rizq, 'A Diwan of contemporary life (305): Looking towards the Levant,' *Al-Ahram Weekly*, no. 449 (30 September-6 October 1999); republished in *Al-Mashriq: A Quarterly Journal of Middle East Studies* (Australia) 3/12, 2005, p. 59.

<sup>19</sup> Riḍā, *Tārīkh*, vol. 1, p. 805.

1897 they decided to travel to Egypt on an Austrian ship (3 December, 1897) heading towards Alexandria together.<sup>20</sup>

During the early years of *al-Manār*, Riḍā entrusted Anṭūn to translate French materials into Arabic.<sup>21</sup> In Alexandria Anṭūn founded his journal *al-Jāmi'a* (firstly appeared 1899) through which he tried to disseminate his secularist views. Riḍā watched the progress of his friend's magazine and brought its contents on ethics, philosophy and sociology to the attention of 'Abduh, who, as a result, expressed his positive impression of Anṭūn and always recommended his magazine to his friends.<sup>22</sup>

The young Christian journalist Anṭūn was much influenced by the ideas of the French writer Ernest Renan, and gave the most systematic presentation of his French writings in the Arab world. He published serial translations of Renan's *La Vie de Jésus*. Following the path of Renan, he very soon published another article in the spring of 1902 on Ibn Rushd in which he also stressed that religious orthodoxy had obstructed the spirit of free inquiry in Islamic civilisation.<sup>23</sup> Renan's skeptical attitude towards religion concurred perfectly with Anṭūn's anticlerical feelings.<sup>24</sup> In that article, Anṭūn extended his theory to maintain that Christianity, unlike Islam, had been shown to tolerate philosophy.

Alarmed by Anṭūn's arguments, Riḍā promptly raised the problem with 'Abduh, and fervently requested him to give a response. Anṭūn was very surprised to learn that it was Riḍā, as one of his best friends, who agitated the feelings of the mufti against his journal.<sup>25</sup> Riḍā urgently requested 'Abduh to defend Islam and its scholars against Anṭūn's 'blasphemy.' While staying in Alexandria, 'Abduh planned to meet with Anṭūn to discuss the contents of his article personally,

---

<sup>20</sup> Riḍā's diary, December, 1897. The diary of his early months in Egypt reveals that he was on close terms with Anṭūn. When having visited Anṭūn in the hotel in Cairo, Riḍā used, for example, to observe his prayer in the latter's room, since there was no mosque close in the neighbourhood.

<sup>21</sup> Reid, *The Odyssey*, p. ix.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid. See, *Tārīkh*, p. 805. Cf. Riḍā's reviews of *al-Jāmi'a* and other works by Anṭūn, *al-Manār*, vol. 1/48 (Shawwāl 1316/25 February 1899), p. 936; vol. 3/16 (Rabī' al-Thānī 1318/July 1900), p. 380.

<sup>23</sup> Ernest Renan, *Averroes et l'Averroïsme*, Paris, 1852.

<sup>24</sup> About his anticlericalism, see, Reid, *Odyssey*, pp. 70-74.

<sup>25</sup> F. Anṭūn, *Ibn Rushd wā Falsafatuh*, Alexandria, January 1903, p. 2 (Quoted below, *Ibn Rushd*). At that time, 'Abduh was traveling throughout Egyptian Northern cities to collect donations for the victims of a fire catastrophe in the Delta of Egypt.



but had no opportunity to do so. During a tour in Northern Egypt, ‘Abduh started drafting his articles of defence relying on his memory, while keeping Riḍā updated in a series of letters with the development of his investigations on the matter. He asked Riḍā to inform Anṭūn of his plan to write a refutation to his article on Ibn Rushd, and to ask him whether he was ready to publish it in *al-Jāmi‘a*. They agreed that Riḍā would edit the final drafts of the rejoinders in his own handwriting and send them to *al-Jāmi‘a* for publication. Anṭūn was in the beginning hesitant to give space to ‘Abduh’s refutation in his journal.<sup>26</sup> But later he published most of his ideas in one separate volume supplemented with ‘Abduh’s response, which he dedicated to ‘the fairly-minded among the Easterners, Christians, Muslims, or followers of any other religion.’<sup>27</sup>

Their arguments did not remain purely on an intellectual level. They quickly developed into insult and distortion of each other’s position, by changing the conflict into violent and contemptuous hostility.<sup>28</sup> Riḍā and Anṭūn charged each other with having escalated the problem in order to gain popularity for their journals and raise the number of subscribers. The issue also spoiled Anṭūn’s friendship with Riḍā and both of them turned to accuse each other of being ignorant. Anṭūn suggested that Riḍā lacked the knowledge (especially, of the French language and of the science of *Kalām*) required to embark on such debates, and should have left the matter to his more erudite teacher. From his side, Riḍā maintained that his adversary had not simply made a well-intentioned mistake, but had purposely disparaged Islam as well. He also maintained that Anṭūn’s strategy was to separate the teacher from his disciple. Anṭūn declared that while ‘Abduh’s rejoinders took the shape of a respectable intellectual debate, Riḍā was inclined to slander and offense.<sup>29</sup>

What irritated Riḍā was what he described as Anṭūn’s implicit intention to show up Islam as a religion that is against the spirit of science and wisdom, while Christianity was presented as the religion that promoted science in Europe. He further understood that Anṭūn’s ideas explicitly stressed that the nature of Islam predetermines lack of knowledge and civilisation; and that Muslims would never achieve

<sup>26</sup> Riḍā, *Tārikh.*, pp. 809-810.

<sup>27</sup> Anṭūn, *Ibn Rushd*, p. 1.

<sup>28</sup> Hourani, *Arabic Thought*, p. 254.

<sup>29</sup> Reid, *Odyssey*, p. 87.

progress as long as they clung to their religion and did not convert to Christianity.<sup>30</sup>

According to Riḍā, some of his readers notified him that articles like those of *al-Jāmi'a* were more dangerous for Muslims than missionary publications. However, he maintained that Anṭūn had the right to defend his religion, but should have uttered his views in a moderate way. Riḍā portrayed *al-Jāmi'a* as a 'sectarian' and 'religious journal' in content, although it did not overtly show any Christian tendency and still claimed itself as a platform for literary, scientific and medical subjects.<sup>31</sup>

Anṭūn fervently accused Riḍā of having manipulated religious issues for propagating *al-Manār* among common Muslims.<sup>32</sup> It was observable that *al-Manār*'s reputation grew and witnessed a rapid increase of its circulation after Riḍā had published 'Abduh's defenses against Anṭūn's work.<sup>33</sup>

Anṭūn explicitly proclaimed that he never intended to take part in debating with the founder of *al-Manār*. By his discussion, he only endeavoured to address 'Abduh as an authoritative and a highly-esteemed Muslim scholar. In Anṭūn's eyes, Riḍā, whom he had known as a 'sober' and 'restrained' person, appeared to be of a 'rash' and 'eccentric' character after having propagated insults against him.<sup>34</sup> His reaction, unlike his teacher, was 'foolish' and 'imprudent.' He was intolerant towards methods of scientific analysis and the conclusions of *Al-Jāmi'a*'s article. In Anṭūn's own words, 'the irrefutable evidence of [*al-Jāmi'a*] increased his [Riḍā] foolishness, and he was driven frenzied to the degree that we became anxious about his state of mind.'<sup>35</sup> He moreover compared Riḍā in his aloofness to grasp the facts mentioned in *al-Jāmi'a* in a mocking way with 'a crocodile [...] when you throw to him a pearl, he would immediately rush to smash it with his teeth, but never try to use it as an ornament to his ears. Having failed to smash the pearl, the crocodile would throw it again

<sup>30</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 3/12 (Jumāda al-Thāniya 1320/September 1902), p. 471.

<sup>31</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 474-475. Riḍā gave another example on how Christian magazines zealously supported Anṭūn in what he saw as anti-Muslim campaign, see, *al-Manār*, vol. 5/13 (Rajab 1320-October 1902), pp. 515-517.

<sup>32</sup> Anṭūn, *Ibn Rushd*, p. 6.

<sup>33</sup> See my paper, 'A Printed Muslim 'Lighthouse' in Cairo *al-Manār*'s Early Years, Religious Aspiration and Reception (1898-1903),' *Arabica: Journal of Arabic and Islamic Studies* 56, 2009, pp. 27-60.

<sup>34</sup> Anṭūn, *Ibn Rushd*, pp. 85-87, see also pp. 226-227.

<sup>35</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 4-5.

and swoop down upon it while being enflamed with anger and grudge.<sup>36</sup>

In a sixteen-page private letter addressed to ‘Abduh on the pages of his magazine, Anṭūn accused Riḍā of provoking the problem. His assault on *al-Jāmi‘a*, said Anṭūn, was nothing but ‘envy and lack of decency.’ ‘Nothing,’ he went further, ‘would satisfy his [Riḍā’s] rancour, but insulting others.’<sup>37</sup> Anṭūn drew ‘Abduh’s attention to the fact that the ‘recklessness’ and ‘foolishness’ of his disciple would harm his position as the Grand Mufti of Egypt.<sup>38</sup> Finally, he made three suggestions to ‘Abduh: 1) to find two trustworthy arbiters among Al-Azhar scholars to judge the whole issue, 2) to disclaim all matters published in *al-Manār*, 3) or to bring the ‘attack’ of Riḍā against him and his journal to an end. In the event that Riḍā continued his campaign, Anṭūn warned ‘Abduh that he would instantly publish a hundred thousand copies of the letter and distribute them among the public.<sup>39</sup>

The debate with ‘Abduh undoubtedly pushed the interest in Anṭūn’s magazine to its highest point. But it was Riḍā’s critique of *al-Jāmi‘a*, which led to the immediate withdrawal of Muslim subscribers, which contributed to its collapse. Due to its sharp attack, *al-Manār* was said to be ‘the assassin of *al-Jāmi‘a*.’<sup>40</sup> But Riḍā believed that the reason for the latter’s collapse was its editor’s lack of knowledge of Islamic matters. After its first failure, Riḍā proudly taunted that ‘no Arab paper would ever survive without its Muslim readership, as they represented the majority of the nation.’<sup>41</sup>

*Al-Jāmi‘a* disappeared in 1904, and was revived irregularly after its editor’s move to New York in the period between 1906 and 1909. We notice that Riḍā’s attitude towards Anṭūn started to change, and he eulogised Anṭūn’s efforts to republish his journal in the United States. He described it again as ‘one of the best edited and most useful Arab papers.’<sup>42</sup> He also welcomed the return of Anṭūn and his magazine

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

<sup>37</sup> As quoted in, Riḍā, *Tārīkh*, p. 812.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 813.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 815.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 811. Cf. Reid, *Odyssey*, p. 54.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid. See also *al-Manār*, vol. 5/14 (Rajab 1320/October 1902), pp. 559-560; Riḍā was later informed by one of his friends that Anṭūn had especially intensified his debate with ‘Abduh only in order that he could gain more subscriptions. *Al-Manār*, vol. 5/14, pp. 559-560.

<sup>42</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 10/2 (Šafar 1325/April 1907), p. 158.

to Egypt in 1909.<sup>43</sup> But Anṭūn only managed to publish two more issues of his journal, and it disappeared for good in the following years.<sup>44</sup>

After Anṭūn's death in 1922, it was Riḍā who demanded a ceremony dedicated to his memory. One of Anṭūn's biographers believes that by this attempt Riḍā tried to make amends for their old conflict.<sup>45</sup> In a letter (see, appendix IV), Rose Anṭūn, Faraḥ's younger sister, expressed her gratitude to Riḍā for his initiative by saying: '[since] I was staying with my brother in all his doings till the last moment of his life, I know perfectly well how he held you in very high esteem. [...] Now with all what you did, you have added one new noble deed to all the ones we knew from you before. I shall never forget it that you were the first one my eyes had grasped during the funeral ceremony and the first to summon upon my brother's commemoration.'<sup>46</sup>

### 2.1.2. *Jurjī Zaidān* (al-Hilāl)

The Greek Orthodox Jurjī Zaidān (1861-1914) was an important member of the Syrian community in Egypt.<sup>47</sup> In 1892 he founded his magazine *al-Hilāl* (The Crescent) in which he published much on ethics, sociology, geography, literature, Arab history, and world politics. He also published many works on many subjects such as the history of Lebanon, education and social order, Machiavelli and Ibn Khaldūn, and the siege of Damiette by the Crusaders. Just like many of his contemporary Syrian Christian intellectuals, Zaidān held the view that each religion is to a certain extent in agreement with the

<sup>43</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 13/2 (Ṣafar 1328/March 1910), p. 142.

<sup>44</sup> Reid, *Odyssey*, p. 42.

<sup>45</sup> A. Abū Khidr Mansī, *Faraḥ Anṭūn*, Cairo, 1923, p. 23.

<sup>46</sup> Letter, Rose Anṭūn to Riḍā, Cairo, 24 February 1923. The ceremony took place on the first of March 1923 at the American University in Cairo. Riḍā delivered a speech in which he referred to the history of his relation with Anṭūn. For more details about Anṭūn's commemoration, see, the supplement of his sister's magazine *Majallat al-Sayyidāt wā al-Rijāl, Faraḥ Anṭūn: Ḥayātuh wā Ta'binuh wā Mukhtārātuh*, Cairo, September 1923.

<sup>47</sup> Much has been written on him, see his memoirs, *Mudhakkirāt Jūrjī Zaidān*, Salāh al-Dīn al-Munajjid, ed., Beirut: Dār al-Kitāb al-Jadīd, 1968; Hamdi Alkhayat, *Gurgi Zaidan: Leben und Werk*, PhD dissertation, Cologne: Orient Mercur Verlag, 1973; Thomas Philipp, *Gurgi Zaidan: His Life and Thought*, Beirut, 1979 (Quoted below, *Gurgi*); id., 'Language, History, and Arab National Consciousness in the Thought of Jurji Zaidan (1861-1914),' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 4/1, 1973, pp. 3-22; id., 'Women in the Historical Perspective of an Early Arab Modernist (Gurgi Zaidan),' *Die Welt des Islams* 18/1-2, 1977, pp. 65-83.

sciences, though for him science should remain the decisive criterion in evaluating things. He was impressed by Muḥammad ‘Abduh and his recognition of the ‘duty to interpret the Qur’ān in such a fashion as to bring it into agreement with modern science.’<sup>48</sup> As a Christian intellectual, Zaidān’s writings on Islam were, as described by T. Philipp, mostly ‘precarious.’<sup>49</sup> When dealing with the relationship between Islam and Christianity he tried to play down any tension between both religions, and tended to show that Christians during most of history lived in harmony with their Muslim compatriots.<sup>50</sup>

A few days after his arrival in Egypt, Riḍā met Zaidān in the company of Anṭūn for the first time in the latter’s office at *al-Hilāl* (January 1899). Their first conversation focused on the situation of journalism in Egypt.<sup>51</sup> When Riḍā established himself as a Muslim journalist, Zaidān used to send *al-Manār* his novels on Islamic history and literature in order for Riḍā to review them critically.

In the early years of their relation, Riḍā, at many occasions, praised Zaidān as ‘a historian with objective eyes’<sup>52</sup> who appreciated others’ criticism of his own views.<sup>53</sup> While involved in his controversy with Faraḥ Anṭūn, Riḍā was earnestly defending Zaidān against the criticism of some Muslims, who accused him of ‘religious fanaticism’ and tried to disqualify his works on Islamic history as a Christian thinker.<sup>54</sup> Riḍā, on the contrary, saw the benefit of such

<sup>48</sup> Philipp, *Gurgi*, pp. 58-59.

<sup>49</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 59.

<sup>50</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 60.

<sup>51</sup> Riḍā’s *Diary* (1897-1898).

<sup>52</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 5/9 (Jumāda al-‘Ulā 1320/August 1902), pp. 356-357.

<sup>53</sup> See, for example, *al-Manār*, vol. 6/10 (Jumādā al-‘Ulā 1321/August 1903), pp. 391-398. Riḍā also received questions from his readers as a result of their readings in Zaidān’s novels on Islamic history, see, Riḍā’s *fatwā* on reciting the Qur’ān in the graveyard raised by a student of Al-Azhar, *al-Manār*, vol. 5/13, p. 508.

<sup>54</sup> The first Muslim to criticise Zaidan was the traveler and book dealer Amīn al-Ḥalwānī al-Madanī. See his short book, *Nabsh al-Hadhayān min Tārikh Jurjī Zaidān*, Bombay, 1307/1890. It was a rejoinder to Zaidān’s history of modern Egypt. In his work, Madanī enumerated 101 errors attributed to the writer. In 1891, Zaidān published his *Radd Rannān ‘alā Nabsh al-Hadhayān* in which he alluded to al-Ḥalwānī’s Indian origin and his jealousy of the Syrian success. See, Lewis Beier Ware, ‘Jurji Zaydan: The Role of Popular History in the Formation of a New Arab World-View,’ PhD Dissertation, Princeton University, 1973, pp. 196-197. More about Madanī and his visit to Amsterdam and Leiden (1882-1883) and his participation in the Leiden Orientalists Congress (1883), see, C. Snouck Hurgronje, *Het Leidsche Orientalistencongres: Indrukken van een Arabisch Congreslid*, Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1883; about his life, Zirikli, *op. cit.*, vol. 2, pp. 15-16.

novels in educating Muslim youngsters about unknown parts of their own history. He often excused Zaidān for his historical mistakes, since he, as a novelist, was allowed sometimes to collect his information on a non-historical basis. In his historical novel *Fatāt Ghassān* (The Maiden of Ghassān), Zaidān went further by citing the controversial Muslim narrative on the story of *al-Gharāniq*. Riḍā mildly criticised Zaidān for having incautiously mentioned such a controversial story. Despite his strong conviction in its forged nature, Riḍā believed that Zaidān included the story in his novel on the basis of the account of the early Muslim historiographer al-Ṭabarī. He maintained that 'he [Zaidān], as a Christian, should be forgiven if he believed in the story. Some early Muslim scholars mentioned it without giving any critical remarks.'<sup>55</sup> Another noteworthy example was the harsh criticism of many Muslims against Zaidān's acceptance of the story that the Prophet's regular meetings with monks (such as Baḥīra) and other lettered people in his young age had an immense impact on his later religious career as a Prophet, especially during the commercial trips with his uncle.<sup>56</sup> Although Riḍā rejected Zaidān's interpretation, he was certain that he had no intention whatsoever of defaming Islam. Meanwhile he demanded that Muslims should learn only from authoritative and well-versed Muslim scholars instead of depending on such works. Despite all these critical remarks, Riḍā insisted on his appreciation of Zaidān's enrichment of Arabic literature. He never thought that the latter had any intention of offending or attacking Islam, nor was he ever proved to be 'a fanatic Christian.'<sup>57</sup>

Riḍā's response to Zaidān's works on Islamic history was inconsistent. His attitude towards the man drastically changed because of their political differences. The most significant example was Riḍā's approach to the latter's voluminous work on the history of Islamic civilisation.<sup>58</sup> When Zaidān embarked upon writing his work (1902), Riḍā regularly praised his endeavours as a service to Muslims and Arabs by compiling in one piece of work their history which was scattered through the various sources.<sup>59</sup> He acknowledged Zaidān's

<sup>55</sup> J. Zaidān, *Fatāt Ghassān*, Beirut: Manshūrat Maktabat al-Ḥayāh, n. d., part I, p. 75; see Riḍā's review of it, *al-Manār*, vol. 6/10, pp. 392-398.

<sup>56</sup> Zaidān, *ibid*, passim, pp. 32-36 & p. 72.

<sup>57</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 7/13 (1 Rajab 1322/11 September 1904), pp. 514-518.

<sup>58</sup> J. Zaidān, *Tārikh al-Tamaddun al-Islāmī*, 5 vols., Cairo, 1901-1906.

<sup>59</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 8/13 (Rajab 1323/August 1905), pp. 511-512.

initiatives as unprecedented in furnishing the history of Islam, and saw this specific work as 'a useful example for Arab readers.'<sup>60</sup> He moreover urged other Arab historians to follow his steps.<sup>61</sup> He again disapproved of Muslim attacks on the book as 'unfair to recompense those who make efforts to serve [Muslims] by constantly stressing their lapses before giving mention to the benefits of their works.'<sup>62</sup> Riḍā continued to give his positive assessment for Zaidān's works in the following years, while he persistently kept requesting other authors to critically review the author's historical data.<sup>63</sup>

However, by 1908 *al-Manār* turned to sketch its first detailed criticism of Zaidān's work on pre-Islamic history by publishing two articles by Aḥmad 'Umar al-'Iskandarī (1875-1938), a teacher of Arabic Literature, in which he berated Zaidān's work. In his articles, al-'Iskandarī criticised Zaidān's ability to write on Islamic history. Although his effort deserved appreciation as a historical piece of work, it should have been written in a more accurate way.<sup>64</sup> In January 1912 *al-Manār* published a sharper criticism launched by the Indian scholar Shiblī al-Nu'mānī (1869-1914),<sup>65</sup> who accused Zaidān of attempting to belittle the Arabs and to abuse them. Like Riḍā, Nu'mānī had been earlier on good terms with Zaidān. At the beginning of their relation, Nu'mānī did not believe any accusation against Zaidān of blatantly misrepresenting Arab history.<sup>66</sup> At a certain point, however, Nu'mānī shifted his attack to the personal integrity of Zaidān by demonstrating that his sole attempt was to deliberately falsify and

<sup>60</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 5/14, p. 552.

<sup>61</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 7/4 (Ṣafar 1322/May 1904), p. 149.

<sup>62</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 7/13, p. 518.

<sup>63</sup> See, *al-Manār*, vol. 8/16 (Sha'bān 1323/October 1905), p. 638; vol. 9/11 (Dhū al-Qi'da 1324/December 1906), pp. 873-875; 10/7 (Rajab 1325/September 1907), p. 553, 11/8 (Sha'bān 1326/25 September 1908), pp. 619-620.

<sup>64</sup> J. Zaidān, *al-'Arab Qabl al-'Islām*, Cairo, 1907. See, A. al-'Iskandarī's critique, 'Ilmāmāh bī Kitāb Tārīkh al-'Arab Qabl al-'Islām,' *al-Manār*, vol. 11/9 (Ramaḍān 1326/October 1907), two articles, pp. 681-750 & vol. 11/10 (Shawwāl 1326/23 November 1908), pp. 780-787. Cf., al-'Iskandarī's contributions to the Arabic language, *al-Manār*, vol. 10/12 (Dhū al-Hijja 1325/February 1908), pp. 887-915.

<sup>65</sup> He was a member of the Salafīyyā movement in India. He is the founder of Nadwat al-'Ulamā in Lucknow. He wrote many works on the history of Islam. More about his intellectual life, see for example, Ahmad Anis, 'Two Approaches to Islamic History: A critique of Shiblī Nu'mānī's and Syed Ameer Ali's interpretations of history,' unpublished PhD dissertation, Temple University, 1980; Mehr Afroz Murad, *Intellectual Modernism of Shiblī Nu'mānī: An exposition of religious and political ideas*, New Delhi, 1996.

<sup>66</sup> Various letters, quoted in Ware, *op. cit.*, p. 199.



change the truth about Islamic history. The motive for Nu'mānī's response was that Zaidān had engaged in circulating 'intrigues' through the publication of such works, while nobody took the initiative to oppose him.<sup>67</sup> Zaidān, on the other hand, habitually eulogised Nu'mānī's work and paid tribute to his scholarly prestige among Indian scholars. But this was no justification for Nu'mānī to quit his religious 'zealousness' by giving concessions in matters of religious beliefs. He also made it clear that he was not ready to 'accept his [Zaidān] praise in return for allowing him to attack the Arabs.'<sup>68</sup>

In October of the same year, two other articles by al-'Iskandarī appeared in Riḍā's journal in which he again sharply criticised Zaidān's work on the history of Arabic literature.<sup>69</sup> Some of Zaidān's shortcomings, according to al-'Iskandarī, were his many mistakes in giving references and documentation for his data, his incorrect conclusions, contradicting information, his imitation of orientalists—who sometimes formulate their views without any verification, and his literal application of the theory of evolution in all aspects.<sup>70</sup>

Riḍā gave the views of both al-'Iskandarī and al-Nu'mānī more credibility by reprinting their criticisms in a separate treatise together with another article by the Jesuit Louis Cheikho, the editor of *al-Machreq*.<sup>71</sup> In his preface to the treatise, Riḍā also withdrew his support by saying that Zaidān, as a non-Muslim, wrote his history without any proper qualification in Islamic knowledge from real authoritative scholars. Zaidān, Riḍā contended, relied on the works of Western orientalists in his approach of collecting his historical data rather than making an effort to directly rely on Islamic sources. For this reason, his works came out with the gravest of errors. However, Riḍā denied that he had anything to do personally with these criticisms

<sup>67</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 15/1 (Muḥarram 1330/January 1912), p. 59.

<sup>68</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 60.

<sup>69</sup> J. Zaidān, *Tārīkh 'Adāb al-Lughā al-'Arabiyyā*, 4 vols, Cairo, 1911-1914.

<sup>70</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 15/10 (Shawwāl 1330/October 1912), pp. 743-744.

<sup>71</sup> *Kitāb 'Intiqād Kitāb Tārīkh al-Tamaddun al-'Islāmī*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1330/1912; cf. Philip, *Gurgi*, pp. 64-65. It is interesting to know that in his early review of this book in 1904, Riḍā insisted that Zaidān never intended to be dishonest in dealing with Islamic sources, unlike the Jesuits whom Riḍā considered to intentionally falsify such sources in their attack on Islam, *al-Manār*, vol. 7/13, p. 518. Louis Cheikho was, for instance, one of his main antagonists. Cheikho considered Protestants and members of the Syrian Protestant College as a natural object of wrath, Philip, *Gurgi*, p. 60.



and that al-Nu'mānī (and other authors) must take the responsibility.<sup>72</sup>

On his part, Zaidān was frustrated by this unexpected Manārist campaign against his works. A few months after the appearance of these articles in *al-Manār*, he complained to his son Emile that the views of al-Iskandarī and al-Nu'mānī showed some aspects of religious hatred and fanaticism that he had had to contend with occasionally during his career. They were therefore not worthy of any answer.<sup>73</sup> Riḍā and al-Nu'mānī, whom he had considered as good friends, had now turned out to be his adversaries. When al-Nu'mānī was still extensively involved in writing against Zaidān's work in *al-Manār* and elsewhere, one of *al-Hilāl*'s Muslim readers in Egypt tried to console the latter for al-Nu'mānī's harsh attack on his integrity. In his reply to this reader, Zaidān maintained that he was perplexed by reading these attacks, and had no clear answer why Riḍā and al-Nu'mānī had turned against him in such a way.<sup>74</sup> However, he had explicitly mentioned the direct reason behind their campaign in an earlier letter to his son Emile:

I read *al-Manār* and saw, what you saw too. Grief prevailed over all other feelings in me. Not because this foolish criticism had any influence upon me. Indeed, the station of *al-Hilāl* is too lofty as to be hit by any tasteless slander. But I was grieved by the deterioration of the character of our writers to such a level, that even from al-Nu'mānī, the greatest scholar of India, emanated phrases that even the rabble would be ashamed to use. With all this we were friends for twenty years and our relations were amicable. When I read his criticism I wrote him a letter, reproaching him in very strong terms. A copy of it you will find enclosed [...] As for the owner of *al-Manār* he is excused by his exasperation with *al-Hilāl*, the success of our books, our fame.<sup>75</sup>

In June 1910, Zaidān was invited to teach a course in Islamic history at the recently founded Egyptian University, but a few months later he was to learn that the University withdrew his appointment.<sup>76</sup> He

<sup>72</sup> Ware, *op. cit.*, pp. 198-199.

<sup>73</sup> Letter to Emile, 14 November 1908, as quoted in Ware, *ibid.*, p. 198.

<sup>74</sup> A question from a certain Muḥammad Muṣṭafā from Alexandria, see, 'Bāb al-Su'āl wā al-Iqtirāḥ,' *al-Hilāl*, vol 20/9 (June 1912), pp. 562-563.

<sup>75</sup> Letter to Emile, Cairo, March 28, 1912; as translated and cited in Philip, *Gurgi*, pp. 216-219.

<sup>76</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 66-67; more about the affair, see, Donald Malcolm Reid, 'Cairo University and the Orientalists,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 19/1, 1987, pp. 62-64 (Quoted below, 'Cairo').

suspected that Riḍā had a hand in opposing his post at the university. He was convinced that the founder of *al-Manār* was angered by the appraisal letter of Prince Muḥammad ‘Alī (b. 1872) in which he maintained that before the appearance of *al-Hilāl* nobody mentioned the history of Islam. Another factor for irritation was, according to Zaidān, Riḍā’s failure to imitate him in writing historical novels about Islam. In 1905, Riḍā had approached his Syrian friend Sheikh ‘Abd al-Ḥamīd al-Zahrāwī (1871-1916) to help him to compose a series of historical novels about Islam because nobody had written about this subject in Arabic earlier.<sup>77</sup> Referring to this imitation, Zaidān ended his letter to his son: ‘regardless of the fact that my novels fill his library and he has read all of them. If this did not change his irritation, how can we blame him that his vexation increased when he started with his project and did not even finish the first novel.’<sup>78</sup>

In truth, Riḍā never openly accused Zaidān of any evil intention to misrepresent the history of Arabs and Islam. He explained his own reasons for publishing this collection of criticisms. Besides his incapability of writing on Islamic history, Riḍā made it clear that he was highly concerned that the Turkish translation of Zaidān’s works might add fuel to the fire of Young Turk chauvinism.<sup>79</sup> The Turkish translation of his work was done by the Christian Zaki Maghāmiz of Aleppo, who was known for his anti-Arab sentiments. In one of his letters, Maghāmiz complained to Zaidān that the illustrations in his book showed Arab civilisation to be too superior. Maghāmiz also took part in the Turkish project of translating the Qur’ān. At another occasion, Riḍā suspected Maghāmiz of intentionally misrepresenting the Qur’ān through his assistance in the translation.<sup>80</sup> Zaidān later became a sympathiser of the Young Turks Revolution and strongly opposed any Arab attempt to form independent organisations, such as the Decentralisation Party of Riḍā and his group. Riḍā was very disappointed in Zaidān’s stance towards the Turks against the Arabs.<sup>81</sup>

<sup>77</sup> Philip, *Gurgi*, p. 219.

<sup>78</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>79</sup> The last volume of the Arabic edition of Zaidān’s work appeared in 1906. When it had been translated into Turkish six years later, Riḍā made his major effort to criticise it. *Ibid.*, p. 65.

<sup>80</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 25/10 (Sha’bān 1343/March 1925), p. 794.

<sup>81</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 107-109.

This attitude became clearer especially after Zaidān's death. Not long after his death, Riḏā (who was also present at his commemoration ceremony) wrote a biography in which he discussed in detail the late Zaidān's sympathy to the ideas of Ottomanism. For Riḏā, Zaidān was one of the pillars (*rukn*) of the modern Arab renaissance (*nahḏa*). However, after his trip to Istanbul (1908) Zaidān tried to revive the *shu'ūbī* (anti-Arab sentiments) beliefs among the Christian intelligentsia, and became convinced of the validity of absorbing the Arab provinces back into the Empire. He considered Zaidān's tendency as an attempt to champion the Turkish culture over the Arabs. Riḏā, who previously praised his works on Arab civilisation, now viewed them as an attack on the Arab identity. For this reason, he allowed Nu'mānī's criticism to be published in his journal in order to prevent the Turks from using Zaidān's works as a source of criticism against the Arabs.<sup>82</sup>

### 2.1.3. *Ya'qūb Ṣarrūf and Fāris Nimr* (al-Muqtaṭaf)

As has been mentioned above, *al-Muqtaṭaf* was one of the Arabic periodicals that brought Riḏā into contact with the Western world during his Syrian years. It was founded by the Syrian Christians Ya'qūb Ṣarrūf (1852-1927) and Fāris Nimr (1856-1951) after their arrival in Egypt in 1876. The great contribution of this journal was the revival of the Arabic language by introducing science and technology to an initially narrow, but ever-increasing Arabic reading public in a simple and sound language.<sup>83</sup>

*Al-Muqtaṭaf* met with strong opposition from entrenched traditionalist circles in the Muslim world. When its first issues arrived in Baghdad, for instance, conservatives in all communities, Sunnī and Shī'ī, Christian and Jewish resisted it because it preached new and 'dangerous' doctrines. Only some of the younger generation welcomed it.<sup>84</sup> But its appeal to the awakening needs of the Arabic-

<sup>82</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 17/8 (Sha'bān 1332/24 July 1914), pp. 638-640; Ware, *op. cit.*, pp. 199-200.

<sup>83</sup> L.M. Kenny, 'East versus West in *al-Muqtaṭaf* 1875-1900,' in D. Little, ed., *Essays on Islamic Civilization presented to Niyazi Berkes*, Leiden, 1976, p. 145; More about its linguistic contributions, see, Adrian Gully, 'Arabic Linguistic Issues and Controversies of the Late Nineteenth Centuries,' *Journal of Semitic Studies* 42/1, 1997, pp. 75-120.

<sup>84</sup> Hourani, *Arabic Thought*, p. 247.

speaking East was broad enough to quickly win the support of Muslim intellectual leaders.<sup>85</sup>

Riḍā had friendly relations with the editors of the journal, and never had any confrontations with them. He always paid tribute to the skills of the editors and the quality of their journal. His attitude should be explained against the background of *al-Muqtaṭaf*'s position towards religion in general, and Islam in particular. The journal in many places stressed that there was no conflict between science and religion, and that the revealed Scriptures were not to be read as scientific textbooks.<sup>86</sup>

It was Jurjī Zaidān who recommended Riḍā to the founder of *al-Muqtaṭaf*. He also informed Ṣarrūf about Riḍā's coming to Egypt. In their earliest meeting, Riḍā discussed with him various subjects, including his main goal of establishing a journal in which he intended to propagate religious reform and the reconciliation between Islam and Christianity. In their discussion, Ṣarrūf explained to Riḍā the difference between Syria and Egypt by attributing the spread of knowledge and reform in the Syrian territory to the consciousness of its people. But in Egypt its spread was due only to the efforts made by its government to establish freedom. As Ṣarrūf was greatly interested in philosophy, Riḍā made it clear that his intended journal was also an attempt to remove the idea in the minds of the majority of Muslims that philosophy contradicts religion.<sup>87</sup>

In his speech during the tenth anniversary of *al-Manār*, Ṣarrūf expressed his admiration for Riḍā's journal and its role in 'serving religious freedom and fighting innovations and superstitions.' He told the audience about his primary impression of Riḍā when he read the early issues of his journal. He became convinced at that moment that Muslims would one day esteem the reforms of Riḍā and his teacher 'Abduh in Islam just as Calvin and Luther were highly regarded as reformers of Christianity. Muslims, Ṣarrūf went on, were in dire need of that kind of reformation, which was strongly endorsed in Riḍā's journal by combining religion and civilisation. He also stressed that Riḍā's work should please Christians as well as other minority groups

---

<sup>85</sup> Kenny, *op. cit.*, p. 153.

<sup>86</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 142.

<sup>87</sup> Riḍā's diary, 1897-1898.

in the East, as 'the Near Orient would never advance without the progress of Muslims.'<sup>88</sup>

Riḍā's initial impression of the editors of *al-Muqtaṭaf* was that they tended to be 'atheists' or 'antagonists' in faith.<sup>89</sup> Their later discussions on the divine and other religious issues revealed to him that they (especially Ṣarrūf) were not total disbelievers in the existence of God and His might over the world. He enthusiastically quoted the response of *al-Muqtaṭaf* to a letter by the Coptic writer Salāma Mūsā (more about him below) in which he declared his pride in becoming an agnostic and gave his full sympathy to socialism versus any faith in God. Ṣarrūf argued that 'the rejection of God is the road towards the destruction of human civilisation.'<sup>90</sup> Riḍā praised this way of thinking, which to a certain degree resembles the Qur'ānic manner of proving the existence of God.<sup>91</sup>

Riḍā's admiration of *al-Muqtaṭaf* and its founders made him propose an event to celebrate the golden jubilee of the journal.<sup>92</sup> In his speech during that event (30 April, 1926), Riḍā admitted the scientific contributions of the founders of *al-Muqtaṭaf* to the revival of the Arabic language and its serving the whole umma. However, he was certain that due to the stagnation of scientific and literal movements in the Arab world *al-Muqtaṭaf* did not receive the recognition or the circulation it deserved in its time. Riḍā expressed his strong belief that 'the divine destiny was the moving factor in choosing the founders of *al-Muqtaṭaf* to be one of the corners of the Arabic scientific renaissance.'<sup>93</sup> He maintained that it was predestined by the divine providence that the Americans would come to the East to establish their missionary college in Beirut. In that institution the founders of *al-Muqtaṭaf* had the chance to become very qualified in their native language and skilled in other languages. The divine providence, Riḍā went on, was also behind their departure with their journal to Egypt

<sup>88</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol 10/9 (Ramaḍān 1325/November 1907), pp. 717-718, cf. 'Al-Iḥtifāl bi-al-Manār,' *al-Muqtaṭaf*, vol 33/1 (January 1908).

<sup>89</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Al-Dīn wā al-'Ilḥād wā al-'Ishtirākīyya: Naṣr al-Muqtaṭaf al-'Imān 'alā al-Ta'īl,' vol. 13/12, pp. 912-921.

<sup>90</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 915.

<sup>91</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>92</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Athar al-Muqtaṭaf fī Nahḍat al-Lughah al-'Arabiyya,' vol. 27/10 (Jumādā al-'Ākhira 1345/January 1927) pp. 786-791.

<sup>93</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 789.

in order that they could enrich the Arabic language with their vast knowledge of science and foreign languages.<sup>94</sup>

#### 2.1.4. *Shibli Shumayyil: A Fervent Darwinist*

Shibli Shumayyil (1860-1917), of Syrian Greek Catholic origin, was a graduate of the medical school of the Syrian Protestant College. He also studied medicine in Paris before he settled in Egypt, where he practised his profession as a physician and took part in the public and intellectual life of the country. As a young man he clashed with the staff of the College over the theories of Darwin on the evolution. He was a sharp proponent of scientism, and stood out as the foremost populariser of Darwinism. The Arab world became acquainted with the theory of evolution through Shumayyil's translation of Darwin's works into Arabic.<sup>95</sup>

Like Riḍā, Shumayyil escaped the Hamidian tyranny, and sought liberty in Egypt. Despite his agnostic and secularist line of thought, Shumayyil's general views of politics, religion and sympathy towards Islam must have been the greatest motive for Riḍā to strengthen their relationship. In Shumayyil's view, religion was a factor of division: not religion itself, but the religious leaders, who sowed discord between men; and this kept society weak. He further extended his view to postulate that all types of extreme solidarity taking the shape of national fanaticism had the same danger as religion, because they lead to the division of society. For him, Christianity sprang from egoism: from the love of domination on the part of religious leaders, and the ordinary man's desire for individual survival. When Lord Cromer criticised Islam in his *Modern Egypt* as 'a social system [that] has been a complete failure,'<sup>96</sup> it was the Christian Shumayyil who rushed to the defence of Islam by stating that 'it was not Islam, nor the Qur'ān; but the power of the Sheikhs which kept the umma weak.'<sup>97</sup>

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., pp. 790-791.

<sup>95</sup> More about him, see, S. Shumayyil, *Majmū'at al-Duktūr Shibli Shumayyil*, 2 volumes, Cairo: Maṭba'at Al-Ma'arif, n.d.; Jean Lecerf, 'Shibli Shumayyil, métaphysicien et moraliste contemporain,' *Bulletin d'études Orientales* 1, 1931, pp. 153-86; Donald M. Reid, 'The Syrian Christians and early Socialism in the Arab World,' *International Journal of Middle Eastern Studies* 5, 1974, pp. 177-193; Hourani, *Arabic Thought*, pp. 248-253.

<sup>96</sup> Lord Cromer, *Modern Egypt*, New York: The Macmillan Company, 1908.

<sup>97</sup> See his article, 'Al-Qur'ān wā al-'Umrān,' firstly published in *al-Mu'ayyad* (1908), reprinted in his *Majmū'at*, vol. 2, pp. 57-63; cf. Hourani, *Arabic Thought*, pp. 250-253.

In his eyes, there was no difference between Christianity and Islam (though he favoured Islam in other occasions) with regard to their inclination to achieve social equality among people,<sup>98</sup> but his method of comparison between Islam and Christianity was sometimes seen by Christians as an attack on Christianity.<sup>99</sup>

Shumayyil's favourable impression of Riḍā was reflected in his regular praise for him and his journal. For him, Riḍā was a typical Muslim reformer who was 'keen in his *Manār* on unshackling [...] Islam from all fetters imposed by [conservative] scholars as an attempt to liberate religion from any blemish, and to make it attain its ultimate goal through *al-'Amr bi al-Ma'rūf wā al-Nahy 'an al-Munkar* (to enjoin what is good and forbid what is wrong).'<sup>100</sup>

Riḍā considered Shumayyil's positive views of Islam as a kind of recognition by non-Muslims regarding the authenticity of its divine message.<sup>101</sup> Shumayyil once wrote to him (see, appendix V): 'You look at Muḥammad as a prophet and make him great, while I look at him and make him greater. Although we are in contrast with each other, what we have in common are broad-mindedness and sincerity [...]—and that makes our bond of friendship stronger.'<sup>102</sup> Despite the fact that Riḍā was appreciative of Shumayyil's high esteem of the Prophet of Islam, he did not accept his statement that the Prophet's political career had been stronger than his prophecy.<sup>103</sup>

<sup>98</sup> *Majmū'at*, vol. 2, p. 58.

<sup>99</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 72-73.

<sup>100</sup> The article was firstly published in the Egyptian daily *al-Akhbār*, 1907. It has been reprinted in *Majmū'at*, pp. 243-244.

<sup>101</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 11/1, pp. 10-11

<sup>102</sup> Letter from Shumayyil to Riḍā, n.d., the letter contained a poem by Shumayyil on the Prophet. It was also published in *al-Manār*, vol. 11/1, p. 11.

ما قد نجاه للحمة الغايات	دع من محمد في سدى قرآنه
هل أكرن بمحككم الآيات	إني وإن الك قد كفرت بدينه
حكروادع للهوى وعظمت	أوما حوت في ناصع الألفاظ من
ما قيد والعمران بالعادات	وشرائع لوأنهم عقلوا بها
رب الفصاحة مصطفي الكلمات	نعم المدبر والحكيم وإنه
بطل حليف النصر في الغارات	رجل الحجارجل السياسة والذها
ونسيفه أنجي على الهاميات	ببلاغه القرآن قد خلب النهي
من سابق وألاحق أوأت	من دونه الأبطال في كل الورى

<sup>103</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 11

In a letter to Riḍā, ‘Abd al-Qādir al-Qabbānī (1848-1935),<sup>104</sup> a Syrian journalist, disapproved of Shumayyil’s propagation of Darwinism as a sign of total rejection of religion.<sup>105</sup> Riḍā was not alarmed by Qabbānī’s accusations, and saw them as little more than exaggeration, since the theories of Darwin were not ‘evil’ and did not in principle conflict with Islamic fundamental doctrines. Darwinism was merely a scientific school and should not be studied within the context of religious thought. Despite Shumayyil’s agnosticism, Riḍā defended him as somebody who never intended exclusively to disprove religions. For him, Shumayyil was one of the most erudite and independent people in his thinking. Just as with many educated Christians, the reason behind his scepticism was his training in the exact sciences according to the European traditions without having any parallel religious education that would convince him of the agreement between science and religion. He reminded his questioner that Shumayyil, on several occasions, had admitted that ‘there is no socialist religion, except the religion of the Qur’ān.’<sup>106</sup> Instead of accusing the Christian Shumayyil of unbelief, Riḍā requested Qabbānī and other Muslim writers to sustain him in his struggle against superstitions prevailing among Muslims. They should rather spare their efforts to fight those ‘ignorant scholars’ of Islam, whose ideas were, in his view, more dangerous to their religion than such theories as Darwinism.<sup>107</sup> If his mission succeeded, Riḍā dared to guarantee that the educated class of non-Muslims (physicians, chemists, astronomers, socialists, lawyers and politicians) would one day convert to Islam!

As far as Shumayyil was concerned, Riḍā had a strong wish that he would once adopt Islam. He was also convinced that if he just had had the chance to study Islam in the way he had studied Darwinism, he would have become a Muslim. Riḍā once asked Shumayyil: ‘due to your respect of the Qur’ān and the Prophet you are symbolically

---

<sup>104</sup> The founder of the journal *Thamarāt al-Funūn* (Fruits of the Arts, founded in 1876). For more about the journal’s history, see Donald Ciota, ‘*Thamarat al-Funun: Syria’s First Islamic Newspaper, 1875–1908*,’ PhD Dissertation, University of Chicago, 1979.

<sup>105</sup> The letter was sent to Riḍā as a result of Qabbānī’s reading of one of Shumayyil’s articles in *al-Hilāl*, (June 1909); ‘al-Duktūr Shiblī Effendi Shumayyil,’ *al-Manār*, vol. 12/8 (Sha’bān 1327/September 1909), pp. 632-637.

<sup>106</sup> Ibid.

<sup>107</sup> Ibid.



a Muslim!' In his answer, Shumayyil answered: 'No, I am a Mohammedan!'<sup>108</sup>

When the Iraqi-Kurdi poet Jamil Şidqî al-Zahâwî (1863-1936) published his article on women's rights in Islam in the Egyptian daily *al-Mu'ayyad* (August 1910), he was dismissed from his job as a teacher of Shari'a at the College of Law in Baghdad. Many Muslim writers in Iraq, Egypt, Syria and elsewhere accused him of 'infidelity' and 'atheism'.<sup>109</sup> In that article, Zahâwî criticised the position of women in Islam, the veil, the system of inheritance and Islamic regulations of divorce as unjust. In his writings, Zahâwî in general denied the existence of God as the Maker of the world, defied the authority of the Qur'an and was annoyed with the daily prayers and Ramadan.<sup>110</sup>

Zahâwî was influenced by Shumayyil's Arabic translation of Darwin's works.<sup>111</sup> As a result of the anti-Zahâwî campaign, Shumayyil requested Riđâ to write his views as a Muslim scholar on the ideas of the Iraqi poet. In December 1910, Riđâ responded to Shumayyil's request. He was very cautious not to label Zahâwî as an infidel, although he could be seen as an 'apostate' on the basis of his anti-Islamic statements. Riđâ, on the other hand, was more inclined to remind those who supported Zahâwî (such as Shumayyil) that his expression of such views was 'scorn' and 'ridicule' of Islam as the official religion of the Supreme Porte. His words should not be defended under the rights of freedom of expression.<sup>112</sup> Putting in mind that he was reacting at Shumayyil's request (whom he earlier

<sup>108</sup> See Riđâ's review of Shumayyil's Arabic translation of the theories of Darwin, *al-Manâr*, vol. 13/5 (Jumâdâ al-'Ülâ 1328/June 1910), pp. 374-376.

<sup>109</sup> The article was entitled: 'al-Mar'ah wâ al-Difâ' 'anhâ—Şawt Islâhî min al-'Irâq.' See the text of the article in 'Abd al-Râziq al-Hilâlî, *al-Zahâwî: al-Shâ'ir al-Faylasûf wâ al-Kâtib al-Mufakkir*, Cairo, 1976, pp. 190-189. A certain Muḥammad Sa'îd al-Naqshabandî wrote his *al-Sayf al-Bâriq fî 'Unuq al-Mâriq* against Zahâwî's views on women's rights. Later Riđâ published a treatise by the Najdî Muslim scholar Sulaymân b. Sađmân al-Najdî (d. 1930) in *Maṭba'at al-Manâr* in which he attacked Zahâwî: *al-Ďiyâ' al-Shâriq fî Radd Shubuhât al-Mâziq al-Mâriq*, *Maṭba'at al-Manâr*: Cairo, 1925. Cf. Sadok Masliyah, 'Zahawi: A Muslim Pioneer of Women's Liberation,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 32/3, 1996, pp. 161-171. For more about him, see, G. Widmer & G. Kampffmeyer, 'Übertragungen aus der neuarabischen Literatur. II Der iraqische Dichter Gamil Sidqi az-Zahawi aus Baghdad,' *Die Welt des Islams* 17/1-2, 1935, pp. 1-79; Wiebke Walther, 'Camil Sidqi az-Zahawi: Ein irakischer Zindiq im ersten Drittel dieses Jahrhunderts,' *Oriens* 34, 1994, pp. 430-450.

<sup>110</sup> Sadok Masliyah, 'Zahawi's Philosophy and His Views on Islam,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 12/2, 1976, pp. 180-183.

<sup>111</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 180.

<sup>112</sup> *Al-Manâr*, vol. 13/11 (Dhû al-Qi'da 1328/Decmebr 1910), pp. 841-846.

had praised for his independence of thought), Riḍā argued that Zahāwī should have pursued his mission of reforming the situation of Muslims in another way: by addressing those superstitions widely spread among Muslims, instead of attacking the religious fundamentals of Islam. Zahāwī was found by Riḍā as to have ridiculed the Islamic Law; and therefore was not entitled to teach it to Muslim students. In order to avoid chaos in society, he strictly forbade Muslim individuals to physically attack him, nor to raid on his property; but they were allowed to manifest their objections in all peaceful means.<sup>113</sup>

Forty days after Shumayyil's death (January 1, 1917), a memorial ceremony was held at the Syrian Club in Cairo. In an article in his journal, Riḍā eulogised the late Shumayyil as one of the 'unique and sincere seekers of civil and social reform.'<sup>114</sup> Shumayyil's influence, according to him, was extended to his genuine efforts for the socialist cause besides his profession as a physician. In his comment on Shumayyil's affinity with Darwinism, Riḍā was astonished that the Catholics (especially the Jesuits) did not publicly attempt to criticise Shumayyil and his adherence to such theories. According to him, some priests were said to resist Shumayyil's 'infidelity' and propagation of Darwinism by discouraging Christian patients to visit his clinic for treatment. But the majority of Christians acknowledged his social reform despite his atheism. In Riḍā's understanding, Muslims did not see his manifestation of unbelief as a reason for ignoring him. They treated him, however, as a non-Muslim physician and sociologist.<sup>115</sup> Shumayyil's appreciation of the Prophet's personality and his social role in Arabia enabled Riḍā to consider his adherence to atheism as less destructive. He believed that the only reason he did not embrace Islam was that he studied Islam while being an agnostic, who did not believe in the existence of God. For Riḍā, Shumayyil's attribution of the Prophet's success only to his human traits had prohibited him from studying his achievements as a Prophet dispatched by God to humanity. But in spite of Sumayyil's materialism, Riḍā praised him for his 'compassion, generosity, sincerity, bravery and sense of honour.'<sup>116</sup>

<sup>113</sup> Ibid., pp. 844-845.

<sup>114</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 19/10 (Jumādā Al-ʿĀkhira 1335/April 1917), p. 625.

<sup>115</sup> Ibid., pp. 625-626.

<sup>116</sup> Ibid., p. 629; after his eulogy of Shumayyil in *al-Manār* an anonymous graduate of Al-Azhar launched a campaign against Riḍā accusing him of infidelity for his

### 2.1.5. 'Ibrāhīm al-Yāzījī

Sheikh 'Ibrāhīm al-Yāzījī (1847-1906) was one of the most well-known Christian Arab literary figures in the late nineteenth century. His father Naṣīf al-Yāzījī was also a man of letters and a great Arab philologist. Sheikh Ibrāhīm had contributed to the Jesuit Arabic translation of the Bible. Before that, he had embarked upon learning Hebrew and Syriac. By 1889, he became a freemason in Syria, and migrated to Egypt in 1897 with other Syrian publicists, where he established or contributed to many Arab magazines.<sup>117</sup> He belonged to the group of Christian intellectuals who participated immensely in the revival of the Arabic language in modern times, and was one of the earliest proponents of Arab nationalism as well. For him, the Arabs were 'the most remarkable people among all nations.'<sup>118</sup>

During his early years in Syria, Riḍā had no personal contact with al-Yāzījī, but he formed an unfavourable judgement of him on the basis of stories attributed to him that he had attacked the Qur'ān and its language. At that time, Riḍā made no effort to get acquainted with him. Later in Egypt his image temporarily changed when he met with al-Yāzījī at the Egyptian Book Association. According to *al-Manār*, al-Yāzījī showed Riḍā 'friendliness, gentleness and good manners.' After that meeting, Riḍā started to praise him regularly as one of the most knowledgeable Syrian Christian literary figures. What attracted Riḍā to al-Yāzījī besides his earnest contributions to the revival the Arabic literary was his enthusiasm in opposing the archaic and foreign elements in the Arabic journals of his time.<sup>119</sup>

In a personal article written two years later entitled: 'We and al-Yāzījī,' Riḍā, however, noted that many Syrian Christians were disappointed with al-Yāzījī's pride and arrogance; and that his feeling of superiority had prevented him from sharing his knowledge with

---

acceptance of Darwinism and having put Shumayyil above the Rightly-guided Caliphs. See, *al-Manār*, vol. 20/1 (Shawwāl 1335/July 1917), p. 6.

<sup>117</sup> He established with other people newspapers and magazines before his migration to Egypt, such as *al-Najāḥ* (1872), and *al-Ṭabīb* (co-editors Khalil Sa'ādeh and Bishārah Zalzal, 1884-1885). In Egypt he established two: *al-Bayān* (1897-1989), and *al-Ḍiyā'* (1898). For more about his life and works, see, 'Isā Mikhā'il Sabā, *al-Sheikh 'Ibrāhīm al-Yāzījī* (1847-1906), Cairo: Dār al-Ma'ārif, 1955.

<sup>118</sup> Dawisha, *op. cit.*, pp. 25-26.

<sup>119</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/15 (Rajab 1319/October 1901), pp. 590-591.

others.<sup>120</sup> Riḍā pointed here to Yāziji's criticism of Ya'qūb Ṣarrūf, the founder of *al-Muqtataf*, for his use of colloquial or foreign words, and for occasional slight grammatical mistakes in his writings. Riḍā's view of al-Yāziji was that he himself often made mistakes in his writings.<sup>121</sup>

In 1903, one of the missionary magazines attacked the Qur'an on the basis of one piece of work attributed to al-Yāziji in which he was said to assault the Qur'anic language.<sup>122</sup> In his comment on Riḍā's stance, al-Yāziji blamed *al-Manār* for causing 'chaos' and 'disturbance of thoughts' among the public by stirring up such accusations with no verification.<sup>123</sup> On the other hand, Riḍā accused him of arrogance, stating that if he had been really innocent, he should have taken the effort to clear his name by at least writing a letter to the editorial of *al-Manār*. Riḍā repeated that al-Yāziji hardly had any sincere friends whether in Syria or in Egypt. He also concluded that *al-Manār*'s critical response to him should not be seen as an attack on al-Yāziji's person, but against the background of its general stance against missionary writings. There was thus in his view no contradiction in his eagerness to establish concord and friendship with fair Christians.<sup>124</sup> Al-Yāziji died three years later, and *al-Manār* was silent in giving any further responses to him during these years.

#### 2.1.6. *Khalīl Sa'ādeh*

Very little is mentioned in *al-Manār* about Riḍā's relation with the Syrian Orthodox Khalīl Sa'ādeh (1857-1934), whose significance actually lay in their co-operation in editing the Arabic translation of the controversial Gospel of Barnabas (see chapter 5). In view of the importance of the Gospel, it might be useful to discuss their relation in the light of some biographical information about Sa'ādeh in order to place him in the intellectual and political setting of our discussion.

Sa'ādeh was known as a 'politically engaged man of letters.' He was born in Shuwayr, Mount Lebanon, and studied medicine at the Syrian Protestant College. In 1882 he was chosen as the spokesman of the

---

<sup>120</sup> 'Naḥnu wā al-Yāziji,' *al-Manār*, vol. 6/8 (Rabi' al-Thānī, 1321/July 1903), p. 318.

<sup>121</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 319.

<sup>122</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>123</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>124</sup> *Ibid.*

student movement at the College. After his graduation in 1883 he became a staff member of the editorial board of the short-lived scientific and medical review *al-Ṭabīb* in Beirut (mentioned above). In the following years, he worked as a medical advisor for the Ottoman government in Palestine. In 1901 he left Syria for Egypt, where he eventually stayed till 1913. Like many of his Syrian fellows, he became involved in journalism, and wrote articles for *al-Ahrām*. He also became a correspondent of English papers, such as *The Times* and *The Standard*.<sup>125</sup> This period of his life witnessed an intense intellectual productivity and political involvement. He was able to read in French, Spanish, Portuguese, and Latin. Besides his work as a journalist, Sa'ādeh gained special qualifying skills in English and was able to write literary works in that language. He in fact wrote two novels: *The Syrian Prince* (London, 1893) and *Cesar and Cleopatra* (London, 1895). He compiled also an Arabic-English Lexicon during his stay in Cairo in 1911.<sup>126</sup>

Later he moved to Argentina, where he lived during World War I, until 1919. In 1919, he accepted an invitation from the Syrian community of Sao Paulo and moved to Brazil. There he founded the newspaper *al-Jarīda*, which developed into a cultural magazine and subsequently changed its name to *al-Majalla*. From 1930 until his death in 1934 he was the editor of the prestigious literary magazine *al-Rābiṭa*. During this period in South America, he did not write any direct contributions to Riḍā's journal. But from the Diaspora he had been sharing with him the struggle for the complete independence of Greater Syria. He also founded the Syrian League and the National Democratic Party to support the Syrian quest for complete independence.<sup>127</sup>

<sup>125</sup> C. Schumann, 'Nationalism, Diaspora and 'civilisational mission': the case of Syrian nationalism in Latin America between World War I and World War II,' *Nations and Nationalism* 10, 2004, pp. 599-618. More about him, see, Ali Hamie, 'Khalil Saadeh: L'homme en l'œuvre: 1857-1934,' unpublished PhD dissertation, Sorbonne, 1986 (Quoted below, 'L'homme'). Thanks to Dr. Hamie for sending me a copy of the thesis. It has been recently translated into Arabic, id. *al-'Allāma al-Duktūr Khalīl Sa'ādeh, siratuh wā A'māluh*, Beirut: al-Furāt li al-Nashr wā al-Tawzī', 2007 (Quoted below, *al-'Allāma*). My gratitude is due to my colleague Abdullāh Ṣofān of the American University in Beirut for sending me a copy of the book from Beirut.

<sup>126</sup> See the speech delivered by his granddaughter Sofia Sa'ādeh during the event of his honor held by the branch of the Society of Feminist Development in his village Shuwayr in 2002, p. 3; available at [http://www.shweir.com/ain\\_el\\_assis.htm](http://www.shweir.com/ain_el_assis.htm), accessed, 20 November 2006.

<sup>127</sup> Schumann, *op. cit.*, p. 606.

Sa'ādeh regarded journalism as the measure for the advancement of nations, and the mirror of their morals and cultural refinement.<sup>128</sup> According to Schumann, Sa'ādeh believed that the state of journalism was tied to the state of the nation itself. The nation would decline if the press declined and stagnated. If the nation woke up and joined the 'other living nations,' it would be most visible in the awakening of its press. Sa'ādeh wrote: '[Today] the hidden forces of the nation become evident in the advanced press. Its working spirits as well as its thinking brains become apparent, and its splendid literature emerges. There is no advanced press, however, unless it is based on excellence, unless its motto is knowledge and unless its strength is respect for the individual. Its content is nourishment for the brain the same way food is necessary for the stomach.'<sup>129</sup>

Sa'ādeh was a secularist, who was strongly convinced of the necessity of the separation between religion and state. In Sa'ādeh's view, Christianity (his religion by origin) had changed to be ritualistic. Contrary to early Christianity, whose followers had offered their lives for the cause of their faith, it had become one of the modern tricks in the hands of Christian states. He severely attacked religious fanaticism, but believed that religion is an integral part of the Oriental's life, and he had his strong faith that life is meant to dignify religion.<sup>130</sup> Like Riḍā, Sa'ādeh was aware of the diversity of voices and religious orientations in the Syrian homeland as well as in the Diaspora communities in South America. It was definitely not his goal to eliminate these differences. Yet he wanted to ensure that his compatriots were united at least in the defense of the national cause in order to make the Syrian voice heard within the international arena, thereby giving hope to the Syrians who had lived in despair.<sup>131</sup>

In 1906 Riḍā briefly mentioned one of Sa'ādeh's scientific works on pulmonary tuberculosis.<sup>132</sup> Sa'ādeh's fame as a good writer in English was primarily the reason for Riḍā to entrust him with the Arabic translation of the Barnabas Gospel. In his short biography of Sa'ādeh, Adel Beshara considered the publication of this Gospel as the most controversial event of his life. He wrote: 'the publication of

---

<sup>128</sup> Ibid.

<sup>129</sup> As quoted in *ibid.*

<sup>130</sup> See the booklet in his honour, p. 29.

<sup>131</sup> Schumann, *op. cit.*, pp. 606-607.

<sup>132</sup> Khalil Sa'ādeh, *al-Wiqāyah min al-Sull al-Ri'awī wā Turuq 'ilājuh*, Cairo, 1906. See the review of *al-Manār*, vol. 9/5 (Jumāda al-'Ūlā 1324/June 1906), p. 394.

Barnabas [Beshara reads it 'Barnabus'] in Arabic was met with some scepticism largely due to religious sensitivity. The late Rashīd Riḍā inflamed the public by prefacing the work with a preamble that took its entire meaning out of context. The preamble was incorporated into the book without Sa'ādeh's prior knowledge.<sup>133</sup> In his statement, Beshara relies on information cited by Badr Al-Hage, one of Sa'ādeh's biographers, in his collection of some of the unknown works by Sa'ādeh. In his account, al-Hage quoted Anṭūn Sa'ādeh, Khalil's son and the later founder of the Syrian Social Nationalist Party.<sup>134</sup> Tracing the exact source mentioned by al-Hage, I could not find the pages referred to by Anṭūn.<sup>135</sup>

After the English publisher had sent him the English translation of the Gospel, Riḍā soon settled an agreement with Sa'ādeh on publishing an exact Arabic translation by his *Manār*. It is conceivable that Sa'ādeh must have known Riḍā's reasons for publishing the Gospel. In his initial advertisement of *al-Manār*'s plan of cooperating with Sa'ādeh, Riḍā explicitly maintained that the Gospel's agreement with many Islamic principles stimulated him to think of translating it into Arabic. Besides, he was keen on making it known among Arab readers, just as the translators had done for English-speaking people. He also had a great desire that other translators would follow this step by increasing its publicity in all Western languages.<sup>136</sup> One year after the appearance of the Gospel's translation, Sa'ādeh contributed to *al-Manār* by publishing one of his scientific articles on Substance theory.<sup>137</sup> Sa'ādeh's granddaughter Sofia, presently professor at the American University in Beirut, rejects the argument that this period of her grandfather's life was controversial. In her own words: 'he was known among his contemporaries as a staunch secular person, and his translation of the Gospel was out of curiosity more than anything else. He tried also to refute the fact that it was genuine, but never

<sup>133</sup> Adel Beshara, 'Dr. Khalil Saadeh: Nationalist Crusader,' *al-Mashriq: A Quarterly Journal of Middle East studies* 3/12, 2005, p. 68.

<sup>134</sup> Badr Al-Hage, *Silsilat al-'A'māl al-Majhūlah: al-Duktūr Khalil Sa'ādeh*, London: Riad al-Rayyes Books, p. 17.

<sup>135</sup> He cited Anṭūn Sa'ādeh, *al-Athār al-Kāmilah*, vol. 12, Beirut, 1984, pp. 11-15.

<sup>136</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 10/5 (Jumādā al-'Ulā 1325/July 1907), pp. 385-387; Riḍā expressed his gratitude to the editors for sending him a copy of this work. This copy still exists in Riḍā's family archive with his own signature: *Milk al-Sayyid Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā* (Owned by Al-Sayyid Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā).

<sup>137</sup> Khalil Sa'ādeh, 'Istihālat al-Māddah,' *al-Manār*, vol. 11/8, pp. 608-610.



publicly fought with Riḏā on this specific matter even after his migration to South America.<sup>138</sup>

Later we shall discuss Sa'ādeh's detailed evaluation of the Gospel, but it suffices here to stress that his very objective of translating the Gospel was spelled out in his introduction by saying:

'I started translating this book, which is called the Gospel of Barnabas well aware of the responsibility that I had undertaken. My aim was to serve historical studies and of course our language which is perhaps the most logical medium into which this work should be translated. This is the first time this book has come out in the Arabic language. It is a gospel about which scholars and historians have differed sharply. In these closing comments, though, I do have to stress that in this introduction all my discussions are purely scientific and historical in orientation and that I have been scrupulous to avoid all religious controversies which I left to those who are better equipped to deal with them.'<sup>139</sup>

Even after the Gospel's publication, Sa'ādeh remained in solidarity with other Syrian nationalists, including Riḏā himself (see, appendix VI). Among Riḏā's papers, I found the charter of the Ottoman Socialist Party, founded in Cairo in December 1910. The charter was signed by Sa'ādeh as its secretary general. Among the founders of the Party were its president Shiblī Shumayyil and Rafīq al-'Aẓm (1867-1925), the prominent Sunnī Muslim and the chairman of the Decentralisation Party.<sup>140</sup> Although Riḏā's name was not included among the founders, the party's resolutions came close to his later Decentralisation Party, which demanded administrative autonomy for the Arab provinces of the Ottoman Empire. Sa'ādeh, Shumayyil and al-'Aẓm shared Riḏā's political cause, and later became members of his above-mentioned Decentralisation Party.<sup>141</sup>

### 2.1.7. Al-Machreq: A Jesuit Syrian Review

Let us now turn to discuss Riḏā's polemics with the Catholic Arabic magazine *al-Machreq*. As the mouthpiece of the Syro-Lebanese Jesuits in Beirut since its first publication in 1898, this magazine attempted to convey for the Catholic Arab communities the value and signifi-

<sup>138</sup> E-mail to the present writer, 28 April 2005.

<sup>139</sup> As quoted in Beshara, *op. cit.*, pp. 68-69.

<sup>140</sup> MS, the charter of Al-Ḥizb al-'Uthmānī al-Ijtimā'ī, handwritten by Khalil Sa'ādeh, Riḏā's private archive.

<sup>141</sup> See, Hamie, 'L'homme,' pp. 101-104.



cance of Western science and technology as well as the cultural heritage of the Near East.<sup>142</sup> Riḍā was involved in controversies with *al-Machreq* around a variety of issues, especially on what he often wrote in his journal on Christianity. According to Riḍā's archival documents, he used to exchange the published issues of *al-Manār* with those of *al-Machreq*. The Oriental Library of the Jesuit Saint-Joseph College was subscribing to his journal, and many of its issues were kept there. Despite their heated polemics, the library secretary praised Riḍā's journal as having been the 'mouthpiece of the Islamic Salafī renaissance' (see, Appendix VII).<sup>143</sup>

As soon as the above-mentioned *al-Manār* polemicist Ṭāhir al-Tannīr published his anti-Christian book, Father Louis Cheikho (1859-1927), the editor of *al-Machreq*, fervently attacked the author.<sup>144</sup> Tannīr's treatise, for him, was nothing but 'a childish' attempt to emulate earlier European works of 'unbelievers, Protestants, and heretics' in their critique of Christianity.<sup>145</sup> In the same year, *al-Machreq* accused Riḍā's journal of having 'exceeded the proper bounds by attacking the Catholic belief.'<sup>146</sup> When *al-Manār* quoted an article from the Russian Muslim paper *Shūrā* (Council, founded in 1908)<sup>147</sup> in which Luther had been eulogised for his reformation, the editorial of *al-Machreq* immediately blamed Riḍā for praising him on the basis of his conflict with Catholicism. 'Had the *Shūrā* and *al-Manār* known

---

<sup>142</sup> *Al-Machreq: revue catholique orientale*. See, Campbell, Robert Bell, 'The Arabic Journal, 'al-Mashriq': its Beginnings and First Twenty-Five Years under the Editorship of Père Louis Cheikho, S.j.,' unpublished PhD dissertation, the University of Michigan, 1972. More about Cheikho, see: Zirikī, *op. cit.*, vol. 5, pp. 246-247.

<sup>143</sup> Letter, *al-Machreq* to Riḍā, Beirut, 2 November 1928, Riḍā's private archive.

<sup>144</sup> Cheikho reacted with a tractate, *Tafnīd al-Tazwīr li Muḥammad Ṭāhir al-Tannīr* (Refutation of the falsification of Muḥammad Ṭāhir al-Tannīr), Beirut, 1912; as quoted in, G., 'Book Review,' *The Moslem World* 3/2, April 1913, pp. 197-200. See also, *al-Machreq*, vol. 15 (1912), pp. 432-445 & pp. 529-543. In his answer, Cheikho also quoted Western works, such as, Laouan, *Du Brahmanisme et ses rapports avec le Judaïsme et le Christianisme*, Paris, 1888. See also, Arthur T. Upson, 'A Glance at *Al-Manār*,' *The Moslem World* 4/4, 1914, pp. 394-395 (Quoted below, 'Glance').

<sup>145</sup> *Al-Machreq*, vol. 15, pp. 435-436.

<sup>146</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 718.

<sup>147</sup> It was edited in Ottomanised Tatar language in the southern Uralian city of Orenburg by Riḍā al-Dīn b. Fakhr al-Dīn (1859-1936). The *Shūrā* was much influenced by *al-Manār*'s reformist ideas. More about the paper, its founder and the influence of *al-Manār*, see, Stéphane A. Dudoignon, 'Echoes to al-Manār among the Muslims of the Russian Empire: A preliminary research note on Riza al-Dīn b. Fakhr al-Dīn and the *Shūrā* (1908-1918),' in Dudoignon (et al), *op. cit.*, 2006, pp. 85-116.

who Luther and his works precisely were,' *al-Machreq* wrote, 'they would have entirely discarded him and would have never contaminated their pages by mentioning his name.'<sup>148</sup>

In response to *al-Manār*'s postulation of the doctrine of Trinity, Cheikho counterattacked Riḍā for using the Gospel of Barnabas as a weapon against it. *Al-Machreq* challenged Riḍā that he brought forward an Arabic translation of a 'forged' Gospel, when he lacked solid proofs against Christianity.<sup>149</sup> Riḍā, according to him, failed to recognise the sense of the Trinity's divine mystery. Cheikho's article was specifically formulated in reaction to Riḍā's views (mentioned in the context of his response to the Danish missionary Alfred Nielsen, see, chapter 3) that: 'Muslim theologians agree that there is nothing in the Islamic faith which is logically impossible (*muḥāl* 'aqlan), meaning that the Muslim is not required to believe in anything that is logically impossible [...] Other religions than Islam require people to believe in what is rationally impossible, *i.e.*, the reconciliation between two antitheses or opposites, such as the real Unity and the real Trinity. In other terms, that God is truly one, and truly more than one at the same time.'

Cheikho rebuked Riḍā for his allegation that the Catholic doctrine insists on combining contradictions.<sup>150</sup> 'It is not logical,' Cheikho contended, 'that such a paradoxical faith would be adopted by more than one third of the inhabitants of the globe among whom are the most civilised nations—such as the Greeks, the Romans and the Arabs.' He insisted that Trinitarian concepts had been taken from the divine revelation, and Biblical prophets implicitly referred to them in the Old Testament. He pointed to many examples, such as God's use of the plural form with reference to Himself, and to the plural form for 'Lord' used frequently in the Old Testament. In his conclusion, Cheikho reminded Riḍā that Catholic believers do not entirely grasp the mystery of the Trinity. But it is enough for them to know that God revealed it to them. He further upheld that there are many secrets that cannot be interpreted by human intellect, and that it is

<sup>148</sup> Ibid., p. 719.

<sup>149</sup> *Al-Machreq*, vol. 12 (1909), pp. 558-559.

<sup>150</sup> L. Cheikho, 'Lā Tanāquda fī al-Tawḥīd wā al-Tathlīth,' *al-Machreq*, vol. 22 (1924), pp. 737-744. Among Riḍā's papers, I have found an unpublished anti-Cheikho article. It was written by a Shī'ī Muslim from Iraq, who signed it as Muslim Najafī under the title: 'al-Qawl al-Saḥīḥ fī Daḥḍ 'Ulūhiyyat al-Masiḥ (The True Saying in Refuting the Divinity of Jesus).' MS., Riḍā's private archive.

impossible for human beings to grasp God's true nature; otherwise they would share with God his divine essence.<sup>151</sup>

*Al-Machreq* had many criticisms with regard to Riḍā's religious views of the church. For example, it suggested that his statement in one of his *fatwās* on polygamy that the Pope had authorised Charlemagne's polygamy was historically mistaken. As a matter of fact, although Charlemagne, who was holding power over both the Church and state, married many wives, the Catholic Church had never authorised him to do so.<sup>152</sup> Riḍā, according to *al-Machreq*, insisted on writing on many subjects about which his knowledge was deficient. A prominent example was his insistence that freemasonry organisations collaborated with the Jews to demolish the Papal power in Europe.<sup>153</sup>

In 1922, one of *al-Manār*'s readers in Beirut complained to Riḍā about the writings of *al-Machreq* on Islam.<sup>154</sup> When the tenth volume of *Tafsīr al-Manār* was first published in 1932, *al-Machreq* was critical of its author's Islamic religious views. It described Riḍā's commentary on the Qur'ān as a 'naïve attempt to combine between the Qur'ān and modern scientific discoveries, which had been never known in the time of the Prophet of Islam.'<sup>155</sup>

The controversy between Riḍā and *al-Machreq* culminated in 1934, when the Catholic journal embarked upon reacting to his above-mentioned work *al-Wahī al-Muḥammadī*. *Al-Machreq* introduced Riḍā to its readers as 'a Muslim conservative luminary in Egypt, a friend of the Wahhābī Ibn Sa'ūd, and a fervent Muslim apologist, who firmly adhered to the traditions and rejected anything that is not in agreement with the way of the Salaf.'<sup>156</sup> It also depicted Riḍā's work as an attempt to idealise Islam, which did not add any new aspect of knowledge to the understanding of the concept of revelation in Islam.<sup>157</sup>

<sup>151</sup> Ibid., p. 743.

<sup>152</sup> *Al-Machreq*, vol. 5 (1927), pp. 397-398; see, Riḍā's *fatwā*, *al-Manār*, vol. 28/1 (Sha'bān 1345/March 1917), p. 29.

<sup>153</sup> *Al-Machreq*, vol. 30 (1932), pp. 143-144. See, *al-Manār*, 14/3 (Rabī' Al-'Awwal 1929/March 1911), pp. 178; vol. 15/1, pp. 32; vol. 29/4, pp. 271-72. Cf. his article on the role of the Jews in the Freemasonry movement, vol. 6/5 (Rabī' al-'Awwal 1321/May 1903), pp. 196-200, see also, *al-Manār*, vol. 8/11 (Jumādā Al-'Ākhira 1323/August 1905), pp. 401-403.

<sup>154</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 23/4, p. 267.

<sup>155</sup> *Al-Machreq*, vol. 30 (1932), pp. 237-238, cf. vol. 29 (1931), pp. 315-316.

<sup>156</sup> *Al-Machreq*, vol. 31 (1933), p. 956.

<sup>157</sup> Ibid., p. 956.

The author's exclusive concern was to respond to Christians and verify the superiority of Islam over Christianity without giving profound treatment to any of his themes. *Al-Machreq* did not deny the religious value of the Qur'an and its impact on Muslim believers in their liturgy and prayers, but this was not enough to prove its miraculous nature.<sup>158</sup> The writer of *al-Machreq* was of the view that the linguistic value ascribed to the Qur'an was no miracle in its own, and should be seen as equal to the high standard of the English or German translations of the Bible. In spite of admitting its aesthetic elements, *al-Machreq* alleged that there are many other linguistic and historical contradictions and defects in the Qur'an.<sup>159</sup> With regard to Riḍā's arguments that the Qur'anic miracle was proved by its influence and the change achieved by Islam in many parts of the world—the same argument which was earlier used by Cheikho to prove the authenticity of Catholic belief—*al-Machreq* viewed it as improbable. The Arabs had conquered decadent nations with ease. Muslims also learnt philosophy and other sciences from other nations, not directly from the Qur'an. In conclusion, *al-Machreq* wondered why Riḍā dedicated his book to the civilised nations: 'Is it because he knows perfectly well that Islam has not gained any of the civilised nations in the modern time? Or because he knows that the majority of the more than 240 million Muslims [in the 1930s] were formerly heathens, who considered Islam civilised as compared to their previous paganism?'<sup>160</sup>

In his introduction to the book, Riḍā's stated that his work was primarily a proposal to 'call civilised countries of the West and Japan (see chapter 3) [...] and free-thinking Western scholars to Islam.' He suggested that there were three obstacles that prohibit non-Muslims from grasping the divine message of the Qur'an: 1) the Church, which opposed it by propagating a tirade of lies and accusations; therefore, its students believe every Muslim to be an enemy of Christ and Christianity; 2) Western politicians, who inherited antagonism from the Church, and accepted its fabrications in order to serve their imperialistic policy; and 3) the state of decadence among Muslims, who were blissfully ignorant of their religion.<sup>161</sup>

<sup>158</sup> Ibid., pp. 957-958.

<sup>159</sup> For examples of these, see, *ibid.*, pp. 958-959.

<sup>160</sup> Ibid., p. 960.

<sup>161</sup> See the English translation, *The Revelation to Muḥammad*, trans. by Abdus-Samad Sharafuddin, Saudi Arabia, 1960. The book is also mentioned in, Fehmi Jadaane, 'Revelation et Inspiration en Islam,' *Studia Islamica* 26, 1967, pp. 23-47.

On May 16, 1934, a letter from Beirut signed by a certain Cheikh & Ladki (?) drew Riḍā's attention to Cheikho's attacks on his book. According to this letter, a group of scholars intended to react to Cheikho's critique of *al-Manār*. The sender of the letter (Cheikh & Ladki) advised them to wait, since it was the author of the book who should reply (see, appendix VIII).<sup>162</sup> Some weeks later, Riḍā started to respond to Cheikho in a series of four articles in his journal. He understood that the writer's aim to define him in such a way was to inoculate his readers with the idea that he and his journal would reject any modern religious, scientific and industrial innovations. Nonetheless, Riḍā defended himself by stating that his religious call was bound to the Qur'ān and the Sunna, while summoning Muslims to acquire all useful modern understanding in their lives, in as far as it did not contradict their religious principles.<sup>163</sup> Riḍā was deeply frustrated by the writer's belittling of his work, blaming him for looking at it 'from behind a black-tinted Jesuit pair of glasses.'<sup>164</sup> On the basis of an Arabic translation of the secrets of the Jesuit order (probably made by Kirām, mentioned above, chapter 1), Riḍā judged that 'the Jesuits are more extravagant and extreme in adoring money than the Jews and capitalists.'<sup>165</sup>

In his reply, Riḍā again insisted that Islam remains a 'friend' of Christianity, but not a friend of the Church. For him, Islam was also completing the 'real Christian message.' As a Muslim scholar he still regularly wished to cooperate with Christian religious bodies (especially the Vatican) to oppose atheism.<sup>166</sup> The author of *al-Machreq* criticised Riḍā's delineation of Islam as the religion of freedom and brotherhood as contradictory. On the one hand, he asserted that Islam gives people of other religious denominations their rights under Muslim rule, while, on the other, he strove for 'one Arab and Muslim world' by claiming that social and political reform would never be accomplished without the unity of all nations in terms of religion, language, politics and judiciary system. Riḍā asserted that human reform cannot be entirely attained without homogeneity of the vari-

<sup>162</sup> Letter to Riḍā, Cheikh & Ladki, Beirut, 16 May 1934, Riḍā's private archive.

<sup>163</sup> 'Tafnīd I'tirāḍ Kātib Jesuīti 'alā Kitāb al-Waḥī al-Muḥammadi (A refutation of an objection made by a Jesuit writer to al-Waḥī al-Muḥammadi,' *al-Manār*, vol. 34/2 (Ṣafar 1353/June 1934), pp. 147-151.

<sup>164</sup> *Ibid.*, 148.

<sup>165</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 150.

<sup>166</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 34/3 (Rabī' al-'Awwal 1353/July 1934), pp. 227-231.

ous aspects of life, even when there is no Arab nation or Muslim legislation. Riḍā insisted that Islam is the most homogenous religion capable of achieving this goal, when we compare it to other religions. The truth of Islam, he went further, does not rely on its acceptance by all human beings; and the goal of each religion is the attainment of the highest level of human perfection.<sup>167</sup>

With regard to *al-Machreq*'s rejection of the miraculous nature of the Qur'ān, Riḍā argued that to compare the Qur'ān to English or German translations was not valid. The Qur'ān, in itself, was inimitable in its language. It had been revealed to those who were known in their age for their eloquence; while Muḥammad did not belong to the category of well-known Arab poets. Islam also challenged the Arabs to produce verses similar to the Qur'ān, but they failed. On the other hand, none of the English or the German translators had ever claimed that their work was inimitable.<sup>168</sup>

Secondly, Riḍā defended the Qur'ān as the miraculous word of God by stressing again that many Western scholars agreed upon that and admitted the prophecy of Muḥammad. In his book, he cited scholars such as Edouard Montet (see, chapter 1), who explained the prophetic characteristics in Islam and stressed the rationalistic essence of Islam. Riḍā moreover tried to rationalise that the prophet, without having received such a divine message, would have never been able to bring out such an 'excellent' book containing all those religious, literary and legislative sciences after having reached the age of forty. Riḍā associated the success of the Prophet's mission with the growing number of Muslims throughout history. He compared the Qur'ān to a medical guide brought forward by a physician to cure people. If he were able to cure all of his patients with the help of his guide, people would definitely believe in the soundness of his knowledge. In the same way, he went on, a huge number of non-Arabs adopted Islam because they believed in the power of its truth to guide them. As for the Arabs especially, they had adopted Islam as a result of the impact of its eloquent language on them.<sup>169</sup>

---

<sup>167</sup> Ibid., pp. 227-228.

<sup>168</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 34/4, pp. 311-315.

<sup>169</sup> Ibid., p. 315. See also, *al-Manār*, vol. 34/5, pp. 376-381.

## 2.2. *The Egyptian Coptic Community*

Some of the Egyptian Copts saw Riḍā as an intruding Syrian (*dakhīl*), who had no right to interfere in Egyptian affairs.<sup>170</sup> The first one to coin the term *dukhalā'* (intruders) for Syrians in Egypt was the founder of the Egyptian Nationalist Party Muṣṭafā Kāmil. He advocated that the Syrians (especially Christians) were collaborators with the British and hostile to the Egyptian nationalist cause at the beginning of the twentieth century.<sup>171</sup> In the following section we will discuss Riḍā's various reactions to the Coptic community in Egypt.

### 2.2.1. *Riḍā's Attitudes towards the Copts before 1911*

By the late nineteenth and early twentieth century, the Coptic question and their demands for social and religious equality with Muslims had gradually become visible in the political scene of Egypt. In 1897, for example, a Coptic delegation handed a petition to the Egyptian Prime Minister and the British High Commissioner complaining that Copts were underrepresented in key political and administrative posts.<sup>172</sup>

The Copts, who viewed themselves as alienated within their own society, undertook the defence of their interests in their different newspapers and periodicals. The years 1908-1911 witnessed one of the most critical moments of the Muslim-Christian relations in the country. Muslim and Christian papers launched mutual accusations and their confrontation came to a head. The debates focused primarily

<sup>170</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 15/1, pp. 48-49.

<sup>171</sup> For Kāmil's ideas on the concept of nationalism, see, Fritz Steppat, 'Nationalismus und Islam bei Muṣṭafā Kamil. Ein Beitrag zur Ideengeschichte der ägyptischen Nationalbewegung,' *Die Welt des Islams* 4/4, 1956, pp. 241-341. Riḍā was a sharp critic of Kāmil's nationalism, and was one of the early Muslim thinkers who at that moment saw the threat posed by the concept of nationalism to Islamic doctrine. About his rejection of nationalism, see, Safran, *op. cit.*, pp. 75-84. In his turn, Kāmil declared that the Khedive himself was not pleased with Riḍā's stances (especially his regular critique of Al-Azhar), and had a serious plan to send him away from Egypt. See, 'Al-ʿAṣabiyya al-Jinsiyya wā al-Liwā', *al-Manār*, vol. 10/7, pp. 536-540. Riḍā defended the existence of the Syrians in Egypt, and fervently propagated the idea that the Syrians were the closest and most united faction among all emigrants to the Egyptians. See, 'Mūṣāfaḥat al-Sūriyyīn lil-Miṣriyyīn,' *al-Manār*, vol. 11/3 (Rabi' al-'Awwal 1326/May 1908), pp. 230-231.

<sup>172</sup> *Al-Ahram Weekly*, no. 691 (20-26 May 2004).



on representation in civil servant employment.<sup>173</sup> In 1908 the Coptic Reform Party, founded by Akhnūkh Fanūs, a wealthy Presbyterian Coptic landlord and member of the Legislative Assembly, had highlighted the Coptic demands as discrimination in employment and promotion, and the practice of religious rights. But other Coptic groups were anxious about their Muslim fellow-citizens. Some prominent Coptic figures accused Fanūs of collaboration with the British authorities in destroying the national spirit in their homeland.<sup>174</sup>

In the early issues of *al-Manār*, Riḍā's views of the Copts were positive in the general sense. He constantly praised their religious zeal and concern for education, emphasising that they were more organised than their Egyptian Muslim compatriots. He maintained that following the steps of other 'civilised lands,' the Copts set up schools to teach their children modern sciences, while keeping up their belief and religious identity. As an active class in society, they promoted proper education to the degree that it had been said that no illiteracy was to be found among them. Muslims, on the other hand, had hardly any similar organisations.<sup>175</sup>

Riḍā later developed a negative attitude as a result of what he saw as a campaign of protest against Muslims. He denounced the way the Copts presented their demands by arguing that Muslims deliberately aimed at 'rooting' them out of the country. For him, it was natural from a sociological point of view that any religious minority group would be overzealous in striving for unification in order not to be assimilated within the majority group. Being of Syrian origin, Riḍā made no distinction between any of the Egyptian minority groups including the Jews, the Copts or naturalised Orthodox Christians of Syrian or Armenian origin. He affirmed that if the Copts were serious about raising their demands of equality in the public debate, they

---

<sup>173</sup> Ami Ayalon, *The Press in the Arab Middle East, A History*, Oxford University Press, 1995, p. 61.

<sup>174</sup> Ṭāriq al-Bishrī, *al-Muslimūn wā al-Aqbāṭ fi Iṭār al-Waḥda al-Waṭaniyya*, 4th ed., Cairo: Dār al-Shurūq, 2004, pp. 79-81. Fanūs had sympathy for the British presence in Egypt. He drafted his project of establishing the Egyptian Party, which called for Egyptian-British friendship, see, id., pp. 72-73.

<sup>175</sup> See his articles, 'Al-Madāris al-Waṭaniyya fī al-Diyār al-Miṣriyya,' *al-Manār*, vol. 1/15 (Ṣafar 1316/July 1898), pp. 260-261. In 1898 he wrote that the Copts of Egypt as a minority group had 40 charitable schools of their own while Muslims had only one; see, *al-Manār*, vol. 1/21 (Rabī' al-'Awwal 1316/August 1898), pp. 388-389. See also, 'al-Muslimūn wā al-Qibṭ: Aw 'Ayat al-Mawt wā 'Ayat al-Ḥayāh,' *al-Manār*, vol. 8/9 (Jumāda al-'Ulā 1323/July 1905), pp. 327-330.



would have included other Christians in their appeal. The Copts should also stop claiming in their newspapers that Muslims were colonisers and conquerors, and had no right to be in the country. However, he also criticised those Muslims who exceeded their boundary by taking harsh stances and constantly offending Coptic religious feelings.<sup>176</sup>

The Coptic newspaper *al-Waṭan* ('Homeland') was launched in 1877 primarily in order to provide the Coptic community with an outlet for its collective views and grievances. It soon became one of the strongest platforms for enflaming Coptic confrontation with Muslims. According to *al-Manār*, when the Egyptian government started the project of the revival of Arab literature in the beginning of the 20th century by reprinting famous literary works at the expense of the national budget, *al-Waṭan* vigorously attacked the project as a return to 'backwardness.' The Coptic journal criticised the Egyptian government for having embarked upon a project that would 'adulterate its people's taste for sound literatures and useful sciences.'<sup>177</sup> Instead of promoting the Egyptians to the level of civilised nations, the paper went on, the government aimed at 'thrusting them to the darkness of Arab superstitions, nonsense and ignorance.'<sup>178</sup>

Riḍā was very discontent with these writings and contrasted *al-Waṭan*'s stance with the initiatives of European scholars and other Arab Christians (such as the Jesuits in Syria), who were keen on preserving Arab literary works by printing them. Riḍā counterattacked by maintaining that *al-Waṭan*'s campaign aimed explicitly at 'erasing' Islam, its language and literature from Egypt and replace them with their sense of 'Coptism.' He described the Coptic writer of this article as 'fanatic,' 'rude' and 'ignorant' of Arab literature and civilisation. The Arabic language was not confined to Muslims, but was always a common ground for Jews and Christians of the Arabian Peninsula before Islam. Riḍā reminded the writer of 'fair-minded' Western thinkers (such as Le Bon and others), who admitted the significance and position of the Arabs and their language and literature in history. If the Coptic writer had been motivated to reach his conclusion by the anti-Christian statements in some of the circulating

---

<sup>176</sup> 'Al-Muslimūw wā al-Qibṭ,' vol. 11/5 (Jumādā al-'Ūlā 1326/June 1908), pp. 338-347.

<sup>177</sup> As quoted in *al-Manār*, vol. 13/12 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1328/January 1911), p. 909.

<sup>178</sup> Ibid.

Arabic works, he should have not ignored the anti-Islamic tone in Arabic Christian as well as in Western missionary works. Riḍā ascribed all these remarks to *al-Waṭan*'s insistence on causing religious strife between Muslims and Copts with confidence that the British authorities would support them in their campaign.<sup>179</sup>

### 2.2.2. *The Coptic Congress of 1911*

Before analysing Riḍā's response to the Coptic Congress and the assassination of the Coptic Prime Minister Buṭrus Ghālī, we should dwell briefly upon some parts of the historical background of the crisis and its impact on the political scene of the Egypt of 1910-1911.

During his interrogation, the afore-mentioned al-Wardānī (see, the introduction), confessed that he had murdered Ghālī for his mediation between British imperial officials and Egyptian officialdom. Most Egyptian Muslim nationalists viewed Ghālī as too pliant and too willing to serve the British interests. He also represented the cabinet on the bench in the notorious Dinshiwāy trial in 1906, which resulted in the death sentences for many Egyptian farmers, the event that gave rise to the National Party of Muṣṭafā Kāmil.<sup>180</sup>

Although al-Wardānī was sentenced to death, common Muslims held him in esteem as a national hero. During his diplomatic trip in Egypt, the former president of the United States Theodore Roosevelt fanned the flames during his speech at the Egyptian University. In that speech, he praised the British rule, condemned nationalists and vilified the assassin.<sup>181</sup> However, al-Wardānī made it clear that although he was a Muslim and Ghālī a Coptic Christian, religion had no bearing on the motives for shooting the Prime Minister, whom he considered a traitor.<sup>182</sup>

Soon in 1911, a lay Coptic Congress was convened at Asyūṭ (Southern Egypt), whose main agenda was to ask for equal rights of citizenship. Asyūṭ was chosen because it was an important center for

<sup>179</sup> Ibid., pp. 908-912.

<sup>180</sup> Charles D. Smith, 'The Egyptian Copts: Nationalism, Ethnicity, Definition of Identity for Religious Minority,' in Maya Shatzmiller, ed., *Nationalism and Minority Identities in Islamic Societies*, McGill-Queen's Press, 2005, pp. 68-69. Bishrī, *op. cit.*, pp. 81-82. More about Ghālī's life, see, for example, Muḥammad Ḥusayn Haikal, *Tarājim Miṣriyya wā Gharbiyya*, Cairo, 1929, pp. 119-138; Arthur Goldschmidt, *Biographical Dictionary of Modern Egypt*, Lynne Rienner Publishers, 1999, pp. 61-62.

<sup>181</sup> Reid, 'Cairo', pp. 51-75.

<sup>182</sup> Badrawi, *op. cit.*, p. 22.

the Coptic community, a very significant centre for Protestant missionaries who also supported the idea.<sup>183</sup> The Coptic Congress, numbering 500 members or more (Riḏā counted more than 1000), was held in spite of the opposition of Patriarch Kyrollos V and many other notable Coptic figures. They, as well as the government, feared that the Coptic meeting in Asyūṭ would agitate the public. The Egyptian Khedive ‘Abbās Ḥilmī did not welcome the idea of the congress either, and refused to meet its delegation in the Palace.<sup>184</sup>

The congress, however, resulted in a petition briefing the Coptic demands before the khedive and the British. The representative of the Coptic Press in London, Kyriakos Mikhail, recorded the works of the congress and other relevant discussions.<sup>185</sup> The congress demanded the government: 1) to exempt the Coptic government officials from their jobs and students from study on Sundays, 2) to open all administrative posts in the government services to the Copts, 3) to change the electoral system in the Egyptian provincial Councils to one similar to that in operation in Belgium in order to secure their rights as minorities, 4) the Copts should have equal rights to take advantage of all educational facilities provided by the new Provincial Councils; and 5) government grants should be bestowed on deserving institutions without any distinction of race or creed.<sup>186</sup>

In April 1911, Muslim Egyptians denounced the requests by organising a rival congress in Heliopolis in Cairo under the auspices of the then Prime Minister Muḥammad Riyāḏ Pasha, and other politicians. The congress committee reported that the Copts were planning to establish ‘a separate state for themselves.’<sup>187</sup> They also protested against the endeavour of the Copts ‘to divide the Egyptian nation as one political unit into two religious groups, a Muslim majority and a

<sup>183</sup> Bishrī, *op. cit.*, p. 88.

<sup>184</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 86-87.

<sup>185</sup> Mikhail, *op. cit.* The Coptic community was planning to hold such a congress even before the murder of Ghālī, but that incident encouraged them to put it into reality. See, Bishrī, *ibid.*, p. 82. The demands of the Congress were not different from the ones presented to Lord Cromer and Muṣṭafā Fahmī Pasha (d. 1914), who was a strong supporter of British interests in Egypt. The Copts submitted a similar petition to Lord Cromer and Fahmī Pasha in which they requested complete equality in the appointment of administrative jobs, closing the courts on Sunday, appointing an additional member to consultative council, and teaching Christianity to Christian students in governmental schools, see, Tagher, *op. cit.*, p. 215.

<sup>186</sup> Mikhail, *ibid.*, pp. 28-30.

<sup>187</sup> Tagher, *op. cit.*, p. 211f. More about the resolutions of the congress, see, *al-Manār*, vol. 14/5 (Jumādā al-ʿUlā 1329/May 1911), pp. 353-372.

Coptic minority.<sup>188</sup> It also concluded that the prime reason behind the escalation of the problem was the close relation of the Coptic organisers with Western missionary bodies in Southern Egypt, who had convinced them that the Europeans could give them protection in the event that they failed to get their demands.<sup>189</sup>

In his immediate reply, Riḍā reacted to the Coptic demands in some articles in *al-Manār* and *al-Mu'ayyad*, which he later compiled in one small volume.<sup>190</sup> He considered the Coptic congress as exercising influence in awakening Egyptian Muslims to organise their own Islamic one, and making them seriously deliberate their common social and religious affairs. He propounded to the Muslim Congress that its participants should try to avoid any discussions on politics, and to engage themselves instead of that in preparing statistical tables on the number of Coptic employees in various sectors in Egypt.<sup>191</sup>

Riḍā deplored the loss of Buṭrus Ghālī as a prudent leader. Contrary to the organisers of the Coptic Congress, he was capable of defending the interests of his community in a peaceful way. Despite Ghālī's participation in the Dinshiwāy trial and his siding with the British, Riḍā enumerated many of his attributes. The most important of these was his concern for his own community, while being fair in dealing with other groups.<sup>192</sup> Riḍā was convinced that the real motive behind his assassination was secular, not religious. Al-Wardānī made his attempt on the basis of the ideas he learnt during his stay in Europe, not at Al-Azhar or any other religious institution. The Copts, in Riḍā's view, were not satisfied with the official Muslim condemnation of the act, but intensified their accusation of Muslims as fanatics on the basis of this individual case only.<sup>193</sup> It might be interesting to know that al-Wardānī had mixed with anarchists in Lausanne, and was influenced by their ideas. His two-year sojourn in Switzerland

<sup>188</sup> The congress proceedings, Cairo, 1911; as quoted in *ibid.*, p. 218.

<sup>189</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/5, p. 356.

<sup>190</sup> Riḍā, *Mu'tamar*.

<sup>191</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/2, p. 158. Participants of the congress probably presented such statistical numbers before the congress; see, for example, the report of education in Egypt and the share of Muslims and Copts. See, *al-Ta'līm fī Miṣr wā Haḡ al-Muslimīn wā al-Aqbāṭ Minhū*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-al-Adāb wā al-Mu'ayyad, n.d. In his report, Sir Eldon Gorst also presented statistics of employment of Copts and Muslims in the Civil Service, see, Mikhail, *op. cit.*, pp. 43-44.

<sup>192</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/3 (Rabī' al-'Awwal 1329/March 1911), p. 202.

<sup>193</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 203-204.

stimulated his interest in European institutions, and induced him to obtain pamphlets on different aspects of humanitarian concerns.<sup>194</sup>

In his judgement of the religious motives behind the Coptic Congress, Riḍā was cynical. He stressed that the Muslim majority would have the right to determine the weekly day off. 'If they had no desire to work on Sundays in the Muslim government of Hājī 'Abbās Ḥilmī [Khedive of Egypt],' Riḍā said, 'they would better relinquish their jobs and exclusively devote themselves to contemplation and prayer.'<sup>195</sup> He also refused any Coptic claim that they as original inhabitants of Egypt had the right to rule the country. The Copts were, for Riḍā, subjects to the 'Muslim Prince' of Egypt, who granted them their posts in the government services by means of tolerance, and not as a matter of obligation.<sup>196</sup>

Riḍā, nevertheless, demonstrated that the Islamic government throughout its history contained different people with other religious beliefs, though its legislative and political principles remained decided by the majority group. He also stressed that the Islamic law gave other religious groups the right to follow their religious laws freely, without complying with Islamic rules.<sup>197</sup>

In Riḍā's thinking, 'Coptism' should remain a religious identity, and not to be mixed with any political ideologies. In other words, the Christians of Egypt should use the word 'Copt' only in addressing their religious affairs. They should only express themselves as 'Arab Egyptians.' He warned the Copts that Muslims were the majority, and they should avoid any clash with them; otherwise it would certainly end up in the loss of their rights as a minority group in case Muslims decided to boycott them. Riḍā postulated that the Copts might have been swayed by the idea that 'Christian Europe' would interfere to force the Muslim majority to yield to their demands. In that case, Muslims would subtly try to exclude them from social life, by favouring Muslims by all means in all official posts.<sup>198</sup>

---

<sup>194</sup> His landlady in Lausanne would later speak of his gentleness, loyalty and kindness, but he became quite agitated and upset whenever he spoke of Egypt. Another Swiss would observe that the youth spoke of nothing but politics, and that he did so very passionately. Bardawi, *op. cit.*, p. 28.

<sup>195</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 207.

<sup>196</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>197</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 208.

<sup>198</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 211-212. In December 1930, Riḍā, as advocate of Arabism, was invited to take part in a public debate held at the Faculty of Law (the Egyptian University) on the concepts of 'Coptism' and 'Pharaonism.' His counterpart was the

In his address to the Coptic Congress, the orator of the Coptic movement Akhnūkh Fanūs stressed that working on Sunday was a violation of the divine obligation upon Christians as ‘a holy Sabbath.’<sup>199</sup> He further clarified that ‘any Christian who intentionally works on Sunday should be put to death.’<sup>200</sup> As a reply to the congress’ demand in this regard, Riḏā turned to expound his religious views on the ‘weekly feast’ in the three monotheistic religions. As compared to Riḏā’s analysis, the Muslim Egyptian Congress accused the Copts of raising the issue out of ‘greediness’ and ‘opportunism’ because they had certain expectations from the ‘Christian’ imperial powers to assist them in removing Islamic features from the whole of society.<sup>201</sup>

Riḏā maintained that he did understand the prime significance of weekly holidays for all nations as a sign of unity, without which religious minority groups could also become weak and liable to vanish. But the national unity of each state should be given priority. He pointed out to the Coptic Congress that the Sabbath was clearly based on many passages in the Old Testament. The sanctification of Sunday, however, was not obviously established in the New Testament; and nowhere did we find in the Bible that Christ or the Apostles ordered the Sabbath to be changed from Saturday to Sunday. Riḏā referred to passages from the Old Testament relating that it was a ‘perpetual covenant ... [for] the people of Israel’ with regard to the day during which God rested after having completed the Creation in six days.<sup>202</sup> He insisted that Jesus did not break the Sabbath, and did not permit his disciples to break it. Riḏā quoted other New Testament passages in which it was related that Jesus allowed his followers to do a little or good activity on the holy day.<sup>203</sup> In order to differ from the Jews, Riḏā went on, the Church replaced Saturday with Sunday, and Paul named it the Lord’s Day.<sup>204</sup> He also stressed that Jewish and Muslim scriptures proving the importance of the weekly day of rest were clearer than the Christian ones. Riḏā was not concerned that minorities would follow the majority in this regard,

---

Egyptian lawyer Luṭfi Jum’ah. See, *al-Manār*, vol. 31/6 (Sha’bān 1349/January 1931), pp. 465-474.

<sup>199</sup> Bishrī, *op. cit.*, p. 98. Riḏā connects here Sunday to the Sabbath in the Old Testament: Exodus (31:14-15) and Exodus (35:2).

<sup>200</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 31/6, p. 216.

<sup>201</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/5, p. 358.

<sup>202</sup> Such as, Genesis 2:2-3, Exodus 23:12, 31:16-17, and Isaiah 56:6-8.

<sup>203</sup> Such as, Matthew 12:1-12, Mark 1:21-22, Luke 13:10-17, and John 5:1-18.

<sup>204</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/3, pp. 214-215.

as was the case with Christians leaving work on Fridays under the Islamic rule, and Muslims on Sundays under the Russian Christian government. Riḍā, however, lamented that religious Christians were able to convince Muslim traders in some Islamic states to leave work on Sundays instead of Fridays. Muslims were not entirely prohibited from working on Fridays. But Riḍā argued that it was not acceptable to open government offices on Fridays, because it was highly recommended in Islam to attend the service on Friday at the mosque as early as possible. For the sake of public interest and social unity, Riḍā concluded that all religious groups in Egypt should accommodate their official schedules according to the majority in matters of labour and government office hours.<sup>205</sup>

The Coptic Congress also raised the question of equality between Muslim and Coptic children in religious education. They pleaded that all the *kuttābs* (local religious schools) and the official schools should be open to all Egyptian children irrespective of their religion. The *kuttābs* were officially declared by the Ministry of Education to be purely Islamic institutions. The Coptic Congress requested that Coptic children should have their religious teaching within the *kuttābs*, just as their Muslim counterparts did. According to the Provincial Councils, none of the tax revenues were devoted to Coptic educational interests, and the children of poorer Copts were dependent for their education upon private enterprise and generosity.<sup>206</sup>

The issue of Copts partaking in religious education in primary schools had been debated in Egypt earlier. In 1907 Riḍā asserted that the Coptic demand had its religious and political aspects. From a religious point of view, accepting their demand would be also profitable for Muslims, who would be stimulated to revive their religious education parallel to that of their Christian fellows. Riḍā warned the Copts against the harm that might be caused by random attacks on the part of Muslim riot-makers in the event that the government should take any positive decision in that regard. The riot-makers would use it as a pretext to warn public opinion against what they would see as a potential plan to replace the Islamic government entirely. At that time, Riḍā however was not anxious about the introduction of Coptic religious education at primary schools, and did not

---

<sup>205</sup> Ibid., pp. 218-219.

<sup>206</sup> Mikhail, *op. cit.*, p. 29.



fear that it would lead to any kind of religious fanaticism among the members of both communities.<sup>207</sup>

In response to the Coptic Congress, Riḍā argued that it was known that there were many states which were not obliged to provide religious education to different religious groups. As it represented the majority group, the Russian state schools for instance did not teach any other religious faith, except the Orthodox doctrine. Jewish and Muslim communities had no right to give their children their own religious education in public schools. As part of the Ottoman Empire, Egyptian state schools confined their religious education only to Islam according to the Ḥanafī School of Law. For Riḍā, it was reasonable that the ruling majority would have the right to decide upon religious education. It was unreasonable of the Coptic Congress to appeal to the Muslim government in Egypt to change the religion of the majority. It would be unfair if the government introduced Coptic religious education in state schools, without including other religious denominations, such as all the various divisions of Judaism and Christianity.<sup>208</sup> ‘Opening the gate’ of pluralism would also make the followers of the other Islamic *madhāhib* (schools of law) require the government to include their doctrines in religious education.<sup>209</sup>

The Copts pleaded for more rights than any other religious community, as they considered themselves to be the native population of the country. Riḍā did not entirely disagree with that view. But his remark in this regard was self-contradictory. He contended that ‘suppose that you [Copts] were the original descendants of the ancient Egyptians, then we [Muslims] would also have the option to follow the model of America—the most civilised Christian government in knowledge, justice and freedom—in [persecuting] native Americans.’<sup>210</sup> But he immediately renounced that by stating that the Muslim Egyptian government gave equal rights to the Copts as nationals of the country. All holders of Egyptian citizenship, Riḍā went on, had equal rights with no regard to their Pharaonic, Israelite, or Arab origin. However, if the Copts’ allegation of being descendants from the ancient Pharaohs was true, the Jews in their progeny should be, according to Riḍā, nobler, since they descended from the line of

<sup>207</sup> ‘Al-Ta’līm al-Dīnī,’ *al-Manār*, vol. 10/2, p. 128.

<sup>208</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/3, pp. 221-222.

<sup>209</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 224.

<sup>210</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 222-223.



Prophets. But Islam did not make any differentiation between both groups regarding their religion.<sup>211</sup>

Riḍā argued that it would not have been unusual if the Egyptian government had followed the European example in stipulating one religion to be taught to all children in public schools. In Egypt, however, there were Muslim institutes, which were supported by the *'Awqāf* system (religious endowments) and fed by Muslims resources, donated for teaching Muslim children. Such institutes, which were run by the government, accepted both Muslim and Coptic children. These endowments, according to Riḍā, used to pay the Egyptian University five thousand pounds annually (which accepted members of both communities as well). Riḍā was convinced that although they were a minority, the Copts were more active, and their demands were merely a token of their being immoderately desirous of acquiring more power over the Muslims.<sup>212</sup>

The Coptic press attacked Riḍā for his articles about their congress. Riḍā defended himself by stating that he never thought of causing discord between the two communities. His contribution to the whole debate was purely intended for the sake of public interest. He reminded his Coptic opponents of his earlier writings in which he as, a non-Egyptian, had drawn attention to the religious and social unity and strength of the Coptic minority community in comparison with their Muslim counterparts whom he frequently accused of religious laxity.<sup>213</sup>

What troubled Riḍā was what he saw as a Coptic demand of establishing a secular system in Egypt. His reaction to this point can be seen as a new phase in his thinking. He considered their demand as a threat that would diminish the Islamic presence in Egypt. The Coptic Congress had actually softened its language by asking for equality between Muslims and Copts.<sup>214</sup> Despite its mild tone, Riḍā still understood the Coptic plea as an attempt to replace Islam altogether with a new Coptic religious system. In line with the Muslim Egyptian Congress, he reconfirmed that the Egyptian 'Islamic' government treated the Copts with 'excessive tolerance and generosity.' Foreign powers had accused the 'fragile' Muslims of discriminating against religious minority groups. He understood that members of the Coptic

<sup>211</sup> Ibid., pp. 223-224.

<sup>212</sup> Ibid., pp. 225-226.

<sup>213</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/4, pp. 273-279.

<sup>214</sup> Bishri, *op. cit.*, pp. 97-100.

Congress not only claimed more rights for the Copts, but also pleaded for an Egyptian government which should remain Islamic. Despite the spread of non-Islamic 'illicit' acts (such as wine-drinking and adultery), Riḍā defended the Egyptian government as Islamic. Islamic Law, he argued, does not consider those who commit sins as unbelievers. Although the foreign authorities did not give Egypt complete independence at that time, Riḍā still believed that the government had not entirely lost its Islamic face. Many Islamic features characterised Egyptian society, such as the Shar'ī judicial system, religious endowments, Al-Azhar's religious institutions, and religious feasts. In their demands, the Copts, Riḍā stressed, aimed indirectly at 'erasing' these Muslim aspects and replacing them with their own.<sup>215</sup>

Riḍā believed that due to their Western education Eastern Christians in general became very keen on power and authority; and had a strong desire that both Ottoman and Egyptian governments had to forsake their Islamic character altogether. He concluded that the Copts rushed to put forward their demands out of their 'hatred' against the Arabs. At the same time he referred to those whom he often called ironically 'geographic Muslim leaders,' who he had a stronger desire to remove the Islamic nature of Egypt as well. He was convinced that such a secularist group among Muslims would gradually attain the same aim by weeding out Islamic elements in their opposition to any Islamic initiative in the society. Riḍā again warned the Copts that they should remain content with the rights they had already been given enabling them to reach high official positions in Egypt. He further notified the Copts that their demands would agitate the Muslim public feelings against them, if their wishes to replace the Muslim character of the government were to be put into practice. The Supreme Porte might also take strict measures to retain its Islamic state. It would also widen the gap of understanding between Islam and Christianity in other Muslim lands, since Egypt was seen as one of the pivotal centres of Islam. The British officials, as a result, would try to quell any discontent among Muslims in their colonies (especially India) by opposing the Coptic plans. The Copts, Riḍā argued, would in this way harm their status and lose some of their rights instead of gaining any.<sup>216</sup>

---

<sup>215</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/4, pp. 279-284.

<sup>216</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 285-287.

Although he did not take part in its activities, Riḏā stood firmly behind the Muslim Egyptian Congress. It was, in his view, effective, but belated. The first fruitful consequence was the change of tone in the Coptic protest. He believed that the Copts adopted a milder tone in presenting their requests after they saw that the Muslim majority were attempting to recover their unity. He compared the situation in Egypt with India. Muslims of India had recognised the importance of their unity by holding their annual meetings and congresses, when they saw the Hindus trying to promote their social unity. The same held true for Egyptian Muslims who through this congress achieved a remarkable progress in the direction of their unity. The dependency of Muslim Egyptians on their government in regulating their affairs was, in Riḏā's view, the reason they had been tardy in achieving integrity and unity. Following al-Afghānī's political ideas, Riḏā strongly believed that any governmental reform could not be established without the reform of the state as a whole. The leaders of any state should also exert many of their efforts and the natural resources of their countries in serving their subjects, preventing their people from any unneeded involvement in politics. Politics, as well as religious, economical and social public affairs should be run by a group of experts whom the people trust. Riḏā related the success of Western societies to their careful concern to promote talented people in various fields and giving them leadership in offices and institutions. He was therefore satisfied with the decision of the Muslim Egyptian Congress not to interfere in any political discussion or conflict, and to concentrate on investigating the Coptic demands only, and on collecting facts and statistics about Coptic and Muslim officials in various offices. He again warned the Copts to stop accusing Muslims of stirring up religious fanaticism and to make an end to their writings in such a 'despising' language in their press.<sup>217</sup>

Riḏā concluded by recommending that the Muslim Egyptian Congress should regulate religious and social Islamic affairs. His proposal was general and did not include any suggestion directly related to the Coptic question. He prompted its members to have its center in Cairo and establish five permanent committees: 1) an administrative committee to regulate all further work; 2) a committee for education, which would organise charitable educational institutes and

---

<sup>217</sup> Ibid., pp. 288-291.

schools, and would in the future make a plan for establishing an Islamic college for girls; 3) a committee for preaching and guidance (*al-Wa'z wā al-'Irshād*), which would be entrusted to supervise preachers who would be sent all over the country; 4) an economic and financial committee, which would take care of investigating the matter of giving loans to poor families and combating usury and non-Islamic financial transactions; and 5) a charitable committee, which would provide assistance for aged, orphans and needy people.<sup>218</sup>

### 2.2.3. *Salāma Mūsā*

Even after his sharp critique of the Coptic Congress, Riḍā still admitted its success in strengthening to the social and ethnical bond among the Copts. At the same time, he constantly accused 'Coptic Egyptianists' of attacking *al-Manār* as a platform for Islamic ideas. Some of the Coptic newspapers also heavily criticised Riḍā for his anti-Christian writings.

Riḍā took part in polemics against the Coptic intellectual Salāma Mūsā (1887-1958) for his writings on Islam and religions in general. It is worth noting that Mūsā was the foremost disciple of the Syrian intelligentsia in Egypt. By the 1920s, when the zenith of the Syrian Christians in Egypt started to be on the wane (Zaidān died in 1914, Shumayyil in 1917, Anṭūn in 1922, and Ṣarrūf in 1927), Mūsā adopted without any hesitation the secularism of Syrian Christians. His readings in their works had clearly moulded his ideas on various subjects. Unlike his Syrian mentors, Mūsā was blunt and straightforward in his critique of Islam. Zaidān once advised him to omit a few offending paragraphs in one of his articles on Islam. 'Never mind,' said Zaidān, 'if we criticise the Christians, for they themselves have already written the critique of their religion [Christianity]. But we must treat Muslims with circumspection. They have not yet produced any self-criticism.'<sup>219</sup> Mūsā developed his philosophy of 'Egyptianism,' and advocated the idea of liberating society from what he deemed as shackles of theological traditions. Unlike the sense of 'Arabness' we have noted among Syrian Christians, Mūsā argued that Arabic should

<sup>218</sup> Ibid., pp. 295-298.

<sup>219</sup> Salama Musa, *Tarbiyat Salāma Mūsā*, Cairo, 1947, p. 185; English Translation, *The Education of Salama Musa*, Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1961, p. 153.

be 'declassicised' for the sake of Egypt. He encouraged therefore the idea of promoting the Egyptian dialect in literary works.<sup>220</sup>

In 1912 Salāma Mūsā published his Arabic translation of the treatise of the famous British writer Grant Allen (1848-99), *The Evolution of the Idea of God*.<sup>221</sup> Throughout his work, Allen tried to demonstrate that theology is a product of the human mind, and Christianity is riddled with pagan traditions. Two years later, Riḍā reviewed the book by stating that such attacks of modern atheists on religion have no impact on the conception of monotheism in Islam. Such European writers, he argued, became very critical of Christianity once they observed its 'pagan' elements.<sup>222</sup> Consequently, the Coptic newspaper *Miṣr* ('Egypt,' firstly published 1895) launched a campaign against Riḍā for his assault on Christianity as a pagan religion. The paper appealed to the Egyptian government to ban Riḍā's journal and banish him from Egypt for causing religious strife among Muslims and Copts. Ḥusayn Rushdī (1863-1928), the then Prime Minister, invited Riḍā to his house to discuss the matter.<sup>223</sup> Riḍā explained to him that he had published a review of the book just as many other Egyptian papers had done. He also elucidated that his intention was to defend Islam against missionary writings by using such critical writings in his counterattack. He adamantly added that his journal would continue its anti-missionary campaign as long as they continued to publish their attacks on Islam. Rushdī requested Riḍā to confine his writings to defence only. Riḍā expressed his readiness to prepare a long list of anti-Islamic citations in missionary literature. He also tried to convince the Prime Minister that the Coptic daily was seeking the support of British missionaries in order to close down his journal and his preaching of Islam in Cairo.<sup>224</sup>

According to Riḍā, the anti-*Manār* campaign was led by Yūsuf al-Khāzin (died in Italy, 1944), a Christian Syrian editor in Cairo. He

---

<sup>220</sup> More about him, see, Sylvia G. Haim, 'Salama Musa, An Appreciation of his Autobiography,' *Die Welt des Islams* 2/1, 1952, pp. 10-24, Ibrahim A. Ibrahim, 'Salama Musa: An Essay on Cultural Alienation,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 15, 1979, pp. 346-357, Vernon Egger, *A Fabian in Egypt: Salamah Musa and the Rise of the Professional Classes in Egypt, 1909-1939*, University Press of America, 1986.

<sup>221</sup> Grant Allen, *The Evolution of the Idea of God*, London, 1903.

<sup>222</sup> See, *al-Manār*, vol. 17/3, pp. 225-231.

<sup>223</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Muḥārabat Muta'aṣṣibi al-Qibṭ wā Ghayrihim lil-Manār (The Fanatic Copts [...] Combating *al-Manār*),' vol. 17/6 (Jumādā al-'Ākhira 1332/May 1914), pp. 487-490.

<sup>224</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 479.

was a member of the staff editorial of the above-mentioned Coptic newspaper *al-Waṭan*.<sup>225</sup> Riḍā accused him of being one of the most fanatic Christians. According to *al-Manār*, al-Khāzin was reported to have said that he ‘felt uncomfortable when a Muslim would greet him.’<sup>226</sup> Riḍā again claimed that his opponents made another attempt to request the British Commissioner and the Egyptian government to imprison or banish him from Egypt, but that their campaign was not successful. He moreover stressed that people knew the objective of his journal from its early beginning; it never intended to propagate any religious strife or animosity against Christians.<sup>227</sup>

In Riḍā’s view, worse than missionaries were those westernised Muslims and Christians. He deemed that Salāma Mūsā, born a Christian, was one of the strongest propagators of ‘atheism’ and ‘absolute looseness,’ who certainly endangered the Egyptian nation through his contributions in *al-Hilāl*,<sup>228</sup> in which he became the principal writer and a leading pundit by the 1920s. He had also published nine books since he had joined the staff of its company.<sup>229</sup> Riḍā became upset that Emile Zaidān, the subsequent editor of *al-Hilāl*, gave Mūsā this opportunity of attacking religion, and did not follow the line of his father who was more mindful of religions, their values and the entity of the Arab nation. Riḍā saw Mūsā’s books published by *al-Hilāl* as a ‘destructive propaganda against any oriental nation, which might be dazzled by his subverting materialistic philosophy.’<sup>230</sup> On its part, Mūsā’s own magazine *al-Majalla al-Jadīda* accused Riḍā of accumulating huge wealth through the distribution of his journal in which he offended Muslim thinkers by constantly charging them with infidelity.<sup>231</sup>

Riḍā was one of the founding members of the above-mentioned Jam‘iyyat al-Rābiṭa al-Sharqiyya (Association of Oriental League, established 1921-1922).<sup>232</sup> When the mouthpiece of the association,

<sup>225</sup> In Cairo, he founded other journals *al-Akhbār* (1896), *al-Khizāna* (1900), and *al-Aḥād*. Later he became a member of the Parliament in Lebanon. See, Zirkli, *op. cit.*, vol. 8, p. 228.

<sup>226</sup> ‘Al-Ta’aṣṣub ‘alā al-Manār,’ *al-Manār*, vol. 17/4, p. 17.

<sup>227</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 318-319.

<sup>228</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 29/2 (Shawwāl 1346/April, 1928), p. 118.

<sup>229</sup> Egger, *op. cit.*, p. 169.

<sup>230</sup> *Al-Manār*, 29/2, p. 118.

<sup>231</sup> *Al-Majalla al-Jadīda*, vol. 2/10 (August 1931), p. 1180.

<sup>232</sup> The Association of the Oriental League was Egypt’s Asian affiliation. It aimed at disseminating the arts, literatures and sciences of the Orient, strengthening rela-

*Majallat al-Rābiṭa al-Sharqiyya*, first appeared in 1928, its editorial included the controversial modernist ‘Alī ‘Abd al-Rāziq, and several of its contributors were leading Egyptian liberals, including Salāma Mūsā. Mūsā openly proclaimed his ‘disbelief’ in the East and ‘faith’ in the West. His ‘anti-Easternism’ caused controversy and he was criticised for his assertions that Egypt was historically part of the Western rather than the Eastern world and that even the ethnographic and linguistic roots of Egypt were closer to the peoples of Europe as opposed to those of Asia.<sup>233</sup>

Riḍā immediately attacked the association for its drift towards ‘spreading atheist culture’ by publishing the views of such liberals in its magazine.<sup>234</sup> He was disappointed that the association, which had earlier gained his support, had now given an opportunity to Mūsā as ‘propagator of unbelief and impudence’ and an ‘enemy of religions in general and Islam in particular, of morality and spiritual values, and of any Eastern nationalist, ethnical or linguistic bond.’<sup>235</sup> Riḍā was concerned at Mūsā’s demands for a ‘westernised’ Egyptian society, and the excessive praise in his writings of the British as an attempt to convince his readers of the necessity of ‘assimilating Muslims into the English nation.’<sup>236</sup> For him, the westernisation of Muslims would only be achieved at the expense of Islamic traditions and values. The present Christianity and its doctrine of the Trinity, for Riḍā, were far removed from the authentic message of Jesus, which was only to be found in the Gospel of John: ‘Now this is eternal life: that they may

---

tionships between countries of the region and acquainting Egypt with that part of the world, regardless of race and religion. More about the association, see, J. Jankowski ‘The Eastern Idea and the Eastern Union in Interwar Egypt,’ *The International Journal of African Historical Studies* 14/4, 1981, pp. 643-666. More about Riḍā’s activities in the association, see *al-Manār*, vol. 23/3 (Rajab 1340/March 1922), pp. 219-223. In Riḍā archive, there are copies of the charter of the association and some reports of its gatherings besides some remaining letters addressed to him by its chairman Aḥmad Shafiq Pasha.

<sup>233</sup> Ibid., p. 645. More in Egger, *op. cit.*, pp. 124-132.

<sup>234</sup> Ibid., p. 660. Riḍā’s major opponent in the League was ‘Alī ‘Abd al-Rāziq, the author of the well-known book *al-Islām wā Uṣūl al-Ḥukm*, who was also appointed as the editor of the magazine. The tension between *al-Manār* and the League’s magazine escalated, and both sides exchanged insults. Amīn al-Ḥusaynī, the mufti of Jerusalem, had to interfere to reconcile between both sides. See, *al-Manār*, vol. 29/10 (Shawwāl 1347/April 1929), p. 788-791

<sup>235</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 29/8 (Jumādā Al-‘Ākhira 1347/December 1928), p. 620.

<sup>236</sup> Ibid., p. 623; Mūsā described the English as ‘the greatest nation on earth,’ their government is the most advanced, England surpasses all other countries, the English are unsurpassed in quality of character. See Egger, *op. cit.*, pp. 126-127.



know You, the Only True God, and Jesus Christ, whom You have sent' (3:17).

In the 1930s Riḍā became involved in public discussions about Egypt's religious and national identity. A well attended debate over the issue of whether Egypt's culture was 'Pharaonic' or 'Arab' was held at the Faculty of Law of the Egyptian University in December 1930. In this debate Riḍā claimed the massive and decisive Arab and Islamic character of Egypt, while his counterpart the Egyptian lawyer, Muḥammad Luṭfi Jum'ah, defended the uniqueness of Egyptian culture.<sup>237</sup> Mūsā advocated the Pharaonic identity of Egypt as well, which he considered as superior to the Arab-Islamic heritage both by virtue of its more ancient age and its remarkable achievements.<sup>238</sup> In his debates on the 'Arabness' of the Egyptian culture, Riḍā frequently ridiculed Mūsā for his backing of the concept of Pharaonism. What irritated Riḍā was Mūsā's giving precedence to the ancient Egyptian culture above the Shari'a besides what he understood as 'insults' and 'offences' against anyone who would advocate Islam and its establishments in Egypt. He was very saddened by Mūsā's depiction of Shakīb Arslān as 'villain' (*waghd*). Riḍā also felt very offended and tried to prove his Egyptian nationality, when Mūsā personally debunked him as a non-Egyptian, who had no right to interfere in such Egyptian affairs. Mūsā now reminded his readers of Riḍā's part in the 'Abduh-Anṭūn debate by pointing out that *al-Manār* had assassinated *al-Jāmi'a*. By this the Egyptian youth had thus lost one of the significant intellectual sources in the country. In his words, Mūsā commented: 'we [Egyptians] should understand our duty [...] the Egyptian press should remain an Egyptian craft, not only with its Egyptian public readers, but also with its craftsmen and editors, who must also remain Egyptian.'<sup>239</sup>

Riḍā related Mūsā's views on Islam to his 'ignorance' and 'animosity.' An example was his critique of the inequality between men and women in the inheritance law. Riḍā believed that the reason behind Mūsā's criticism was his ambition to replace Eastern identity with Western models of life and style of dress. Again Riḍā was disappointed that the mouthpiece of the Oriental League had given Mūsā the chance

<sup>237</sup> Israel Gershoni and James P. Jankowski, *Redefining the Egyptian Nation, 1930-1945*, Cambridge University Press, 1995, p. 28.

<sup>238</sup> Egger, *op. cit.*, pp. 136-139.

<sup>239</sup> As quoted in *al-Manār*, vol. 32/1 (Jumādā al-Ākhira 1350/October 1931), p. 59.



to spread his ideas. Unlikely, the famous Egyptian feminist Hudā Shaʿrāwī (1879-1947), according to Riḍā, had once rejected a request put forward to her and her feminist society by Mūsā in which he appealed to the Egyptian government for the equality of inheritance law. She rejected his request because she was convinced that any plan to reform the social standards of women should emanate from Islamic Law itself.<sup>240</sup>

Riḍā took up the issue of women's inheritance law once again in a lecture which he delivered at the Egyptian University.<sup>241</sup> He attacked Mūsā again, suggesting that the overriding reason for his hatred against the Arabs was that they had conquered his land and had changed it into a Muslim state. He added that he would probably have preferred that Egypt should have remained a part of the Christian Roman Empire despite their persecution of his Coptic people for many years. Looking at Mūsā's own writings, we find that although he gave priority to the Pharaonic culture, he did not deny the social impact of Arabs and Islam on the Egyptians. He believed that the Arab conquest of Egypt had brought a new era of civilisation, and that Islam had unfettered its people from sectarian disputes and the Roman political and economical exploitation.<sup>242</sup>

In addition to his propagation of atheism, Riḍā continued, Mūsā in his animosity spared no effort to drive Muslims away from their religion. Some Muslim 'atheists' rallied behind him under the slogan of *tajdīd* (renewal). Riḍā referred to one of the lectures delivered by Mūsā in 1928 to the members of the Association of Christian Young Men (A.C.Y.M.). In this he held that the status of women in Islam was inferior, especially in its stipulation of inheritance. Riḍā maintained that Mūsā was the first writer to raise these allegations. The Egyptian Constitutionalist Maḥmūd 'Azmī and the Coptic-Catholic Faraj Mikhā'il delivered a similar lecture on the same subject. The three of them, Riḍā believed, brought forward the issue of women's inheritance not because they were concerned with removing inequality

<sup>240</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 29/8, p. 624.

<sup>241</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/9 (Dhū al-Qi'da 1348/April 1930), pp. 690-709.

<sup>242</sup> See, for instance, Ghālī Shukrī, *Salāma Mūsā wā Azmat al-Ḍamīr al-'Arabī*, Beirut, 4th edition, 1983, p. 137. Mūsā admitted the tolerance of Islam given to other religious groups, and attributed the negative behaviour to some Muslim rulers, id., p. 219.

between men and women, but by raising such discussions they aimed at causing the umma to disintegrate.<sup>243</sup>

### 2.3. Conclusion

In order to evaluate Riḍā's attitudes towards the Arab Christians of his age, we have analysed various cases. Syrian Christian émigrés in Egypt, who had lively relations with him, were mostly drawn to the world of journalism and political activism. We have observed how complex his approaches were towards them as secularists: sometimes they were on friendly terms, but he sometimes tended to have religious and intellectual controversies and heated polemics with some others as well. His positive or negative postures were mostly determined by his counterpart's stances towards the concepts which he adamantly espoused in his writings, especially those related to Islamism or Arabism. He was therefore pragmatic in his political co-operation with them, and ready to co-operate with many of them as long as they accepted the Islamic character of society. Riḍā's critique was coupled with an assault on those whom he called 'geographic Muslims,' who were also trying to weed out Islamic elements from society. I would venture to say that the rejection by Arab Christians of many Christian fundamentals and their sharp criticism of Christian clergymen were likely to be among the prime motives behind his willingness to cooperate with them. He, on the other hand, was not willing to tolerate the Jesuit attack on Islam and Mūsā's critique of Islam.

Riḍā's stance towards the Coptic community was more sensitive. Some Copts considered him a non-Egyptian 'intruder,' who had no right to interfere in Egyptian affairs. In its response to the Coptic Congress, *al-Manār* did not attempt to analyse in depth the drastic impact of al-Wardānī's assassination of Buṭrus Ghālī on the long-standing and sensitive relation between Muslims and Copts. Riḍā's position was more apologetic towards their demands. He did not take the issue further than discussing the status of non-Muslim minorities under Islamic rule, and accusing some Coptic groups of inflaming the religious strife among different communities. His tone was sometimes cynical. This was clearly shown when he cautioned the

---

<sup>243</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/9, p. 700.

Copts to be 'satisfied' with the rule of the Khedive 'Ḥājj Abbās.' Throughout his articles, Riḍā neither severely condemned Wardānī's crime, nor extolled his act. He was also silent on the religious discourse prevalent among Muslim scholars (who did not condemn his act) and some other nationalist groups (who hailed al-Wardānī as a national hero).<sup>244</sup>

---

<sup>244</sup> The then mufti of Egypt, for example, did not support the verdict of the Egyptian court by considering imposing the death penalty on al-Wardānī as unjustified from his own religious point of view. See, Badrawī, *op. cit.*, p. 41.



### CHAPTER THREE

#### AL-MANĀR VERSUS EVANGELISM: RASHĪD RIḌĀ'S PERCEPTIONS OF SOCIAL AND THEOLOGICAL ASPECTS OF MISSIONS<sup>1</sup>

What follows here is a systematic treatment of Riḏā's various polemics against missionary writings and activities of his time. The discussion is mainly meant to put Riḏā's works on Christianity (discussed below), which he published in separate treatises, in its appropriate historical context in relation to the previous two chapters.

The present chapter traces his responses to the missionary work in the Muslim world, and his confrontations with some of the missionaries in Egypt. It will be divided into eight sections: 1) his early general understanding of the role of missionary work in each religion, and the development of his thinking over the years in this early phase (1900); 2) his perception of missions as part of Western colonialism in the Muslim world, and the concrete examples through which he tried to find a link between both forces; 3) *al-Manār*'s confrontation with the British authorities in Egypt because of its attacks on missions and severe critique of Christianity; 4) Riḏā's evaluation of the missionary educational work and its (dis)advantages among Muslims; 5) the role of other Muslim writers and readers who reacted to missionary work in *al-Manār* from various regions in the Muslim world; 6) Riḏā's short-lived project of Dār al-Da'wā wā al-'Irshād; 7) his zealotry in propagating Islam as part of his anti-missionary strategies; and lastly 8) his criticism of the religious official scholars of Al-Azhar in Egypt and their mild responses to missions.

---

<sup>1</sup> An earlier version of the chapter has been read at the conference: 'Social dimensions of mission in the Middle East (19th and 20th century)', the Faculty of Protestant Theology at Marburg University and the Fliedner-Foundation Kaiserswerth, Düsseldorf-Kaiserswerth (13<sup>th</sup>-15<sup>th</sup> March 2006).

### 3.1. *Mission is the Life of Religion*

In 1900, Riḍā wrote two articles on the importance of propaganda for the spread of religions in reaction to the anger of Muslim public opinion because of the current news on missionary success in converting Muslims in Africa. Riḍā discussed their ideas chiefly in order to relieve sad feelings of Muslims about the conversion of Muslims to Christianity and to stimulate them to do more work in propagating Islam. He explained to those despairing Muslims the real reasons behind the spread of religions, asking them to develop a better understanding of missionary success. He rejected the common thought among Muslims that the spread of religions was only dependent on governments which use it as a policy tool. Governments can only facilitate the growth of a given religion, which has already been spreading on its own for many other fundamental reasons.<sup>2</sup>

In his analysis of these articles, Juan R. Cole notes that Riḍā's encounter with non-Islamic missionaries led him to develop a 'missiology' (*Ṭarīq al-Da'wa*) for Islam, which was characterised by both modern pragmatic and aspects of traditional Islam. This missiology, Cole argued, rested upon the explanation of the dynamics of the spread of religions in terms of organisation and efficiency rather than in terms of the intrinsic truth of the message or the intervention of a supernatural agency. This secular explanation helped him to account for the successes of Christian missionaries in Africa in converting Muslims.<sup>3</sup> Cole has actually based his observation only on these two particular articles with no consideration of Riḍā's later, and more paradoxical views. His remark is true when it comes to Riḍā's interpretation of the missionary enterprise in historical and social terms. Looking at Riḍā's whole understanding of the subject-matter, as we shall see, one would easily conclude that he totally renounced such views when it came to the struggle between Islamic expansion and the endeavours of Christian missions in the whole Muslim world. In

---

<sup>2</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Al-Da'wa Ḥayāt al-'Adyān (Mission, the Life of Religions),' vol. 3/20 (Jamādā al-'Ulā 1318/September 1900), pp. 457-463; 'Al-Da'wa wā Ṭarīqihā wā 'Ādābuhā (Mission, Its rules and Methodologies),' vol. 3/21 (Jumādā al-Thāniya 1318/September 1900), 481-490. The articles were written as a reaction to an article in the Egyptian paper *al-Mu'ayyad* of Sheikh 'Alī Yūsuf (September 1900) on the success of Christian missions in Sudan.

<sup>3</sup> See, Juan R.I. Cole, 'Rashīd Riḍā on the Baha'i Faith: A Utilitarian Theory of the Spread of Religion,' *Arab Studies Quarterly* 5/3, 1983, p. 284.

his conviction, the spread of Islam was caused by the power of the 'truth' of its divine message as compared to the 'absurdity' of the Christian creed.

As we shall see throughout the chapter, Riḍā's views of Christian missions were not always coherent. In the two articles we just mentioned, Riḍā argued that all religions (including Islam) would successfully spread by propaganda regardless of its falsity or truth. But the rationality lying in true religions could in many cases help them to dominate over false doctrines. In historical terms, however, Riḍā maintained that without propaganda religions would have died out or vanished, as it had been attested that false beliefs are easily disseminated by propaganda, while true ones had disappeared when their followers exerted no vigorous missionary effort. But he insisted that due to its power and rationality Islam had higher esteem and more authority than all other religions.<sup>4</sup>

Riḍā moreover asserted that the methodology of religious propaganda should contain two aspects to achieve success: philosophical proofs for the intellectual elite and the rituals and sermons for the lay people. A missionary therefore needed specialised skills and knowledge. These included knowledge of the language and customs of the local population, and a broad acquaintance with their religious sects and rites. He should be capable of delivering the message according to their mentality and in words that they would easily grasp. Riḍā also stressed that the propagandist should be convinced of the inner truth of his message and must act according to it, evincing great endurance and a never-failing hope of success. This emphasis on the internal strengthening of the community rather than on foreign mission was natural in a situation where many Muslim countries were under European colonial rule. Muslims saw the need for self-defence and self-strengthening as more important, in a situation of economic and political dependency, than the need for an aggressive expansionism.<sup>5</sup>

Riḍā was much impressed by the methods followed by Western missionaries in propagating their religion. He demanded Muslim religious men to follow their model of training and propaganda. He summarised the merits of the success of Christian missions over Muslim propagandists in various points. He admitted that

---

<sup>4</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 3/20, p. 463.

<sup>5</sup> Cole, *op. cit.*, pp. 284-285.

missionaries received better training in secular sciences and the knowledge of the modern world than Muslim religious leaders. Christian preachers also exerted effort to learn foreign languages and translate their publications in local languages, while Muslim scholars sometimes considered learning foreign languages as a 'deviance' from Islam. Other factors were their amiable treatment and deep awareness of the traditions, desires, religious sects, norms and mentalities of the local population. Christian missionaries also used to present their religion in a way that would attract followers of other religions. Riḍā mentioned an example of missionaries in China, who succeeded in attracting Buddhists by dressing themselves in the native clothes of indigenous people; and by carrying the statues of their gods. In his view, missionaries had more unyielding endurance in propagating their religion unlike many Muslims. In Asia they suffered humiliation, but remained steadfast and resolute. An example of that was a story he read in a missionary periodical about one of the early missionary groups in China who remained for nearly eight years preaching without achieving any case of conversion. Their request to return back home was rejected. They received a demand from their mother institution in the West to remain determined in preaching the Word of God. As a result of their sincere missionary conviction, the local Chinese people began gradually to accept their work and converted to Christianity.<sup>6</sup>

Cole did not refer to other attitudes shown by Riḍā, which implicitly contradicted his deep admiration for the religious aspiration of mission in many other places in his journal. One year after the publication of these articles, for instance, Riḍā stated that although there were many Christians preaching their religion out of belief in Christianity as the only truth, there were many individuals who committed themselves to missionary activity only because of the salaries they received from religious institutions. They used their job in most cases as a source of living without any conviction in spreading the truth.<sup>7</sup> In his view, the only 'true' mission of solid faith in Christian history was that of the disciples of Jesus; and any later missionary attempt was false. Riḍā constantly stressed that the Islamic Da'wa, on the contrary, had been gaining millions of converts over centuries despite the frail state of Muslims, their lack of knowledge, the fragility

<sup>6</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 3/21, pp. 488-89.

<sup>7</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/16 (Rajab 1319 /29 October 1901), pp. 624-26.



of Muslim leaders and the weakness of their civilisation and culture. Despite their scientific, social and political shortcomings, Riḍā argued, Muslims were still motivated to preach their religion because of their conviction of the truth of the Islamic message. Missionary groups, on the other hand, were given all protection by their governments. European supremacy in the East ‘made them speak loudly [...] Christians preach their religion motivated by politics, followed by money, and protected by weapons.’<sup>8</sup>

In the meantime, Riḍā, backing his statements, enthusiastically quoted a full Arabic translation of some speeches delivered by the English Canon Isaac Taylor (mentioned above in the introduction) on the successful expansion of Islam in Africa.<sup>9</sup> In 1887, Taylor announced to a British audience at a church conference in Wolverhampton that Christianity, because its message was ‘too spiritual’ and ‘too lofty,’ had failed to civilise the savage and barbarous Africans.<sup>10</sup> Islam, he continued, had been more successful than Christianity in ridding that continent of its evils—evils like cannibalism, devil worship, and human sacrifice. This Islam-Christianity debate evoked many discussions in British newspapers, especially the *London Times* for several months after Taylor’s speech. Taylor admitted that missionaries did some good, but suggested that they failed because their

---

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 626.

<sup>9</sup> See his articles, ‘al-Muslimūn fi ‘Ifrīqiya (Muslims in Africa),’ *al-Manār*, vol. 4/22 (Dhū al-Qi‘da 1319/February 1902), pp. 846-852; ‘al-Islam wā al-Muslimūn,’ *al-Manār*, vol. 4/24 (Dhū al-Hijja 1319/March 1902), pp. 924-932; ‘al-Qur‘ān wā al-Kutub al-Munazzala (Qur‘ān and Revealed Books),’ *al-Manār*, vol. 5/2 (Muḥarram 1320/April 1902), pp. 52-64.

<sup>10</sup> Among Taylor’s works is: *The origin of the Aryans: an account of the prehistoric ethnology and civilisation of Europe*, London: Scott, 1890. More about him and this debate, see, H. Alan C. Cairnes, *Prelude to Imperialism: British Reactions to Central African Society*, Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1965, pp. 211-214. His talk is also mentioned by Andrew Porter, ‘Late Nineteenth—Century Anglican Missionary Expansion: A Consideration of Some non-Anglican Sources of Inspiration,’ in Derek Baker, ed., *Studies in Church History* 15, Oxford: Blackwell, 1978, pp. 354-357; Thomas Prasch, ‘Which God for Africa: The Islamic-Christian Missionary Debate in Late-Victorian England,’ *Victorian Studies* 22, 1989, pp. 51-73. The next year Taylor visited Egypt. He compiled his memoirs under the title, *Leaves from an Egyptian Notebook*. Taylor’s speeches had strong influence on the ideas of the father of pan-Africanism Edward Wilmot Blyden. See, Edward Blyden, *Christianity, Islam and the Negro Race* Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1967. Hollis R. Lynch, *Edward Wilmot Blyden: Pan-Negro Patriot 1832-1812*, London: Oxford University Press, 1967, p. 76. Temple Gairdner was alarmed by both Taylor’s and Blyden’s praise of Islam; see T. Gairdner, *The Rebuke of Islam*, London, 1920, pp. 156-157.

efforts were misdirected.<sup>11</sup> Riḍā's enthusiasm about Taylor's critique of the modest results achieved by missions in Africa somehow contradicted his above-mentioned theory that the spread of any religion relied only on organised propaganda. In his thinking, 'although the vast sums of money and all the precious lives lavished upon Africa, Christian converts were reckoned by thousands, but Muslim converts [without missions] by millions.'<sup>12</sup>

### 3.2. *Mission and Colonialism*

Like many Muslims of his age, Riḍā perceived the Christian missions as an integral part of the colonial presence in the Muslim world. He was convinced that Europe made use of religion as a political instrument for mobilising European Christians by inflaming their 'fanatic' feelings against other nations. This was manifest in the spread of missions in Asia and Africa as 'tools for conquest.' An example of that was the occupation of the Chinese harbour Kiao-Chau (1898) after the murder of two German Catholic priests by a mob in November 1897. On the pretext of protecting German missionaries in China, Kaiser Wilhelm II dispatched his brother with ships to enforce new German territorial demands, and the practical cession of the harbour from the Chinese government.<sup>13</sup>

In his analysis of the association of missions with colonialism, Riḍā drew historical parallels, such as the collaboration of the Church in medieval Spain with the authorities in converting the Muslims and the Jews.<sup>14</sup> He gave the example of the British Prime Minister William Ewart Gladstone (1809-1898), who was deeply imbued by Christian theology, and had hatred towards Islam.<sup>15</sup> Another case was the English politician, Lord Salisbury, who, according to Riḍā, was re-

<sup>11</sup> Cairnes, *ibid*, p. 211.

<sup>12</sup> See his two articles, *al-Manār*, 'al-Ta'aṣṣub (Fanaticism),' vol. 1/26 (Rabi' al-Thānī 1316/September 1898), pp. 483-93; vol. 1/27 (Jumādā al-'Ūlā 1316/October 1898), pp. 504-16; and the reaction of one of his readers, vol. 1/28 (Jumādā al-'Ūlā 1316/October 1898), pp. 535-540.

<sup>13</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 1/26, p. 494. M.P. Shiel, ed., *China in Arms: The Final Revision of The Yellow Danger*, with an afterword by John D. Squires, Kettering, Ohio: The Vainglory Press, 1998.

<sup>14</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 1/26, p. 498.

<sup>15</sup> About his religious affinity, see, for example, David William Bebbington, *The Mind of Gladstone: Religion, Homer, and Politics*, Oxford University Press, 2004.

ported to say: 'we should retrieve what the Crescent had taken from the Cross.'<sup>16</sup>

One of Riḍā's readers in East Africa reported to him cases of compulsory conversion of Muslims by the German colonial authorities. Riḍā remarked that the Germans tried to spoil the relation between Arab and indigenous inhabitants. Due to their excessive 'egotism' taught by Bismarck, the Europeans, in Riḍā's view, were the only race throughout human history, who used compulsion in matters of religion. In comparison to the German behaviour in their colonies, Riḍā praised the British colonial policy of tolerance, asking the 'Orientals' to give them their preference over all other European governments.'<sup>17</sup>

In an article on 'the Muslim world and European Colonialism,' Riḍā accused the Dutch authorities in Indonesia of adopting new schemes for christianising the whole Archipelago.<sup>18</sup> He also criticised Indonesian students in the Middle East (especially in Mecca and Egypt) for their indolence in religious knowledge. He accused them of staying for long years in another country without committing any effort to read its newspapers or magazines or works of history, sociology and geography. Such a small country as the Netherlands was able to colonise and exploit millions of people. In Riḍā's view, the Dutch had followed a unique and successful way in evangelising Muslims, especially in Depok, a village between Batavia and Bogor. He was told that missionaries were dispersed among Muslims in remote villages, while 'enlightened' Arab Muslims were entirely forbidden to enter them. They also studied religious superstitions and 'false' beliefs that circulated among the locals, describing them as part of the people's faith in order to convince them of the 'fallacy' of Islam. They supported their arguments by focusing attention on the deteriorating state of Muslims as compared to the flourishing state of their Christian fellow citizens in knowledge, wealth and status. As a result, the inhabitants of these regions converted to Christianity, and started to 'hate'

<sup>16</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 1/26, p. 498.

<sup>17</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Al-Mānya fī Sharqay 'Ifriqiya wā Tanṣiruhā al-Muslimīn (Germany in East Africa and Christianising Muslims),' vol. 7/18 (Ramaḍān 1322/24 November 1904), p. 720. Riḍā also received another letter from one of his readers in Dar as-Salam about discriminating the Arabs and the destruction of one of the mosques there, when two Greek employees complained about the voice of the *adhān*, vol. 7/20 (Shawwāl 1322/23 December 1904), pp. 799-800.

<sup>18</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'al-'Ālam al-'Islāmī wā al-Istīmār al-'Urūbī (The Muslim world and Western Colonialism),' vol. 14/5, pp. 347-352.

Muslims. Riḍā explained cynically that ‘when a Muslim entered [these villages], he would not find shelter. None of the inhabitants would give him a cup of coffee or water; nor would they meet him or talk to him. Was Jesus sent to instil animosity and hatred among people to such a degree? Or was it the European policy which was far from the religion of Christ?’<sup>19</sup> Riḍā’s critique also focused on the situation of Muslims on Java as the most ignorant and lax in religious matters. For him, ‘if the Dutch continued in their policy, all Indonesian islands would easily change into another Spain.’<sup>20</sup> Riḍā’s attack on the Dutch policy in the East Indies in that regard might sound extreme. But according to Harry J. Benda, many Dutchmen in the Indies had great hopes of eliminating the influence of Islam by rapidly christianising the majority of Indonesians. These hopes were partly anchored in the fairly widespread, if facile, Western belief in the superiority of Christianity to Islam, and partly in the erroneous assumption that the syncretic nature of Indonesian Islam at the village level would render conversion to Christianity easier in Indonesia than in other Muslim lands.<sup>21</sup> In his consultations to the Dutch government, Snouck Hurgronje welcomed the educational work of Christian missions in Indonesia, but deplored their confessional bias, and discouraged missionary work in the areas of religious Muslim majorities.<sup>22</sup>

Also seeing it against the historical background, it should be emphasised that Riḍā wrote his article in 1911, when the Christian statesman A.W.F. Idenburg (1861-1935) was the governor-general (1909-1916) of the Indies. Idenburg was a fervent member of Abraham Kuyper’s Anti-Revolutionary Party. The newspaper *Soerabaiaasch Handelsblad* passed a judgment upon him: ‘we have a governor-general here whose thinking is too much influenced by Kuyper, who has too many apostolic aspirations.’<sup>23</sup> Idenburg’s christianisation policy

---

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., pp. 349-350.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 350. An unnamed Muslim notable in Singapore informed Riḍā, for example, that the number of converted Muslims to Christianity on Java exceeded 100,000 person every year. See, vol. 14/1 (Muḥarram 1329/January 1911), pp. 49-50.

<sup>21</sup> Harry J. Benda ‘Christiaan Snouck Hurgronje and the Foundations of Dutch Islamic Policy in Indonesia,’ *The Journal of Modern History* 30/4, 1958, pp. 339.

<sup>22</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/5, p. 345.

<sup>23</sup> About his policy, see, Pieter N. Holtrop, ‘The Governor a Missionary? Dutch Colonial Rule and Christianization during Idenburg’s Term of Office as Governor of Indonesia (1909-1916),’ in Pieter N. Holtrop and Hugh McLeod, eds., *Missions and Missionaries*, Boydell Press, 2000, pp. 142-156.

even included his wish to officially involve civil servants in public festivities on Sundays, and to discourage Sunday markets.<sup>24</sup>

The Javanese journal *al-Wifāq* (edited by the Meccan publicist Muḥammad Ibn Muḥammad Saʿīd al-Fattā)<sup>25</sup> reported to Riḍā that the Dutch authorities intensified their ‘prosecution’ of Muslims in Java by inspecting worshippers during the time of the prayer. The journal commented that Muslims should always obtain permission whenever they wanted to establish congregational prayers, whereas missionary workers were given all the space to hold their gatherings and spread their publications over the whole island.<sup>26</sup>

Riḍā believed that, unlike the Indonesians, Tatar Muslims in Russia were difficult to convert because of their strong faith and firm adherence to the native language and culture.<sup>27</sup> Tatar Muslims were actually suspicious about Russian education and clothing. In their eyes, the ignorance of Tatar language would directly imply Christianisation.<sup>28</sup> Christian missionary activity also strove to shape Muslim education, literature and publishing, as they recognised its powerful impact on Muslim locals.<sup>29</sup>

Riḍā made his point clearer by stating that the first step of European colonial conquest started with establishing missionary schools, hospitals and orphanages. Attendants of their institutions as a result would begin to doubt their doctrines and social constituents. The community would consequently be divided into two classes: those westernised who tried to replace their traditions with European habits,

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., pp. 147-48.

<sup>25</sup> About his journal, see, Natalie Mobini-Kesheh, ‘The Arabic Periodicals of the Netherlands East Indies,’ in *Bijdragen tot de Taal-, Land- en Volkenkunde* 152/2, 1996, p. 240-41, see also, Riḍā’s review of Fattā’s magazine, vol. 25/2 (Rajab 1342/February 1924), p. 159

<sup>26</sup> *Al-Manār*, ‘Al-’Islām fi Jawā (Islam in Java),’ vol. 26/6 (Rabi’ al-’Awwal 1344/October 1925), p. 480.

<sup>27</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/5, pp. 350-351. About Riḍā’s views of Muslim education in Russia, see, for example, ‘Al-’Infāq ‘alā al-Ta’līm al-’Islāmī min Māl al-Ḥukūmah al-Rūssiyyā’ (Spending of Russian National money on Islamic Education), *al-Manār*, vol. 9/3 (Rabi’ al-’Awwal 1324/April 1906), pp. 205-207.

<sup>28</sup> Allen J. Frank, *Muslim Religious Institutions in Imperial Russia: The Islamic World of Novouzensk District and the Kazakh Inner Horde, 1780-1910*, E. J. Brill, 2001, p. 250; cf. A. Rorlich, *The Volga Tatars: A Profile in National Resilience*, Stanford, California, 1986.

<sup>29</sup> See, Agnès Kefeli, ‘The Role of Tatar and Kriashen Women in the Transmission of Knowledge, 1800-1870,’ in Robert P. Geraci and Michael Khodarkovsky, eds., *Of Religion and Empire: Missions, Conversion and Tolerance in Tsarist Russia*, Ithaca and London: Cornell University Press, 2001, p. 250.

and those of conservative minds who cling firmly to the past.<sup>30</sup> The clash between the old and new would consequently engender aggression on the part of Muslims against missions or Eastern Christians: a good excuse for colonial states to use military intervention under the pretext of protecting the interests and religion of minority groups in the East.<sup>31</sup>

### 3.3. *Confrontation with the British*

As has already been mentioned, Riḍā praised the tolerance of the British in their colonies as compared to their German counterpart in East Africa. But due to Riḍā's political activism and the pro-Caliphate tone in his journal, British authorities in Egypt entertained the idea of sending him to exile in Malta during the First World War.<sup>32</sup> The British diplomat Sir Mark Sykes (1879-1919) described Riḍā after their meeting as 'a leader of Pan-Arab and Pan-Islamic thought. In conversation he talks as much as he writes. He is a hard uncompromising fanatical Moslem, the mainspring of whose ideas is the desire to eliminate Christian influence and to make Islam a political power in as wide a field as possible.'<sup>33</sup>

As early as January 1899, the British Commissioner of Egypt Lord Cromer delivered a speech in the Sudan, in which he promised the Sudanese people to establish justice and religious freedom under the British Protectorate.<sup>34</sup> Riḍā believed that such 'daring' promises could not be fulfilled without taking definitive measures to bring missionary work to an end. It would be a 'false' pledge in case missionary workers were given the opportunity to intensify their work there.<sup>35</sup>

As a matter of fact, the British were well aware of the Muslim religious sentiments. In order to maintain their political and economic interests in Egypt, they did not publicly encourage missionary work.<sup>36</sup>

<sup>30</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'al-Ālam al-Islāmī wā al-Ist'mār al-Urūbī (The Muslim world and European Colonialism),' second article, vol. 14/6 (Jumāda 1325/June 1911), pp. 432-440.

<sup>31</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 433-434. Cf. *al-Manār*, vol. 17/7 (Rajab 1332/June 1914), p. 510.

<sup>32</sup> Haddad, 'Nationalism,' p. 268.

<sup>33</sup> 'Select Reports and Telegrams from Sir Mark Sykes,' report no. 14; as cited in *ibid.*, p. 268.

<sup>34</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 1/42 (Sha'bān 1316/January 1899), p. 827.

<sup>35</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 1/44 (Ramaḍān 1316/February 1899), p. 859.

<sup>36</sup> Muṣṭafā Khālidi and 'Umar Farrūkh, *al-Tabshīr wā al-'Istī'mār fī al-Bilād al-'Arabiyya*, 2nd ed., Beirut, 1957, p. 148.

William Temple Gairdner criticised the British in Egypt by saying that 'the Mohammedans think that the government is simply running the country for them; that they are the only people; that the British officials are afraid of them, and have implicitly declared the superiority of Islam. Such policy can bring nothing but difficulty and disaster in the future. It is cowardly and unchristian; it is not even neutral. It ought to be wholly changed. The British official may one day see that this subservience to the Muslims and neglect of his own faith gain him, neither respect, gratitude, nor affection of the people, but the very reverse of all three.'<sup>37</sup>

During his stay in office, Lord Cromer had to interfere once or twice in cases of Muslims who were converted to Christianity by American missionaries.<sup>38</sup> One of these cases was a student at Al-Azhar from Jerusalem, whose name was Maḥmūd (later Boulus or Paul), who entered the class of catechumens in October 1905. He confessed the Christian faith in February 1906.<sup>39</sup> When the boy's father learnt about that, he came to Egypt to take his son back. When the father appealed to Lord Cromer, the latter invited the boy to his office, and told him that he was old enough to profess whatever religion he preferred. Cromer asked the boy to sign a document to that effect in his presence and that of other witnesses. The Prime Minister of Egypt and the Minister of Foreign Affairs were present during the interview and witnessed the boy's confession.<sup>40</sup>

It cannot be argued that Cromer had joined missionary activity. However, he was not constrained to provide 'the missionary, the philanthropists, the social reformer and others of the same sort, with a fair field. [...] their interests are excellent, although at times their judgements may be defective. They will, if under some control, probably do much good on a small scale. They may even effect reforms more important than of the administer and politician who will follow cautiously in their track and perhaps reap the result of their labour.'<sup>41</sup> He was also not reluctant to describe Islam as an 'inelastic faith that contained within itself the seeds of its own political decadence. As the power of the Crescent waned before that of the Cross, the Frank

---

<sup>37</sup> W.T. Gairdner, 'Islam under Christian Rule,' in E.M. Wherry, et al, eds., *Islam and Missions*, New York and others: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1911, p. 195.

<sup>38</sup> Bishrī, *op.cit.*, p. 566.

<sup>39</sup> Richter, *op. cit.*, p. 362.

<sup>40</sup> W.T. Gairdner, *Thornton*, pp. 203-204. See also: Farrūkh, *op. cit.*, p. 148.

<sup>41</sup> Cromer, *op. cit.*, p. 642.



was gradually transformed from being a humble receiver of privileges into an imperious possessor of rights.<sup>42</sup> He also took pride in the so-called superiority of the Christian nations over the Muslims, quoting the words of Sir William Muir when saying: 'Christian nations may advance in civilisation, freedom, and morality, in philosophy, science, and the arts, but Islam stands still. And thus stationary, so far as the lessons of history avail, it will remain.'<sup>43</sup>

In 1913, Lord Kitchener (1850-1916), a British commissioner following Cromer, made an attempt to ban the publication of *al-Manār* due to its anti-missionary writings. Kitchener was 'in full sympathy with the work that the [missionary] Press is trying to accomplish.'<sup>44</sup> He also had personal interviews with Samuel Zwemer (1867-1952), and Arthur T. Upson of the Nile Mission,<sup>45</sup> who were critical of *al-Manār*'s attacks on missionary activities. Zwemer saw it as one of the mouthpieces of hostility against Christianity and missions.<sup>46</sup>

Magnus, a biographer of Kitchener, described him as a British colonial officer with religious sentiments.<sup>47</sup> 'The British imperialism was in its heyday during Kitchener's lifetime, and there was confusion in regard to the meaning of the word. Some regarded it with horror as a cloak for barefaced exploitation; while others hailed it with exaltation as the religious mission of a great people elected by God. Kitchener believed in the reality of the white man's burden. He considered that the reluctance to shoulder the idea of imperialism would have constituted a cowardly betrayal of a missionary duty, which God, or providence, had imposed upon the British race.'<sup>48</sup> His 'correspondence with the Coptic Archbishop of Sinai and the Anglican Bishop in Jerusalem were of absorbing interest to him and received equally assiduous attention.'<sup>49</sup>

---

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 794.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., pp. 637-38.

<sup>44</sup> J. Christy Wilson, *Apostle to Islam: A biography of Samuel M. Zwemer*, Michigan: Baker Book House, Grand Rapids, 1952, p. 80.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid.

<sup>46</sup> S. Zwemer, *The Disintegration of Islam*, New York and others: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1916, pp. 210-216.

<sup>47</sup> About his life, George Arthur, *Life of Lord Kitchener*, 3 vols., London, 1920. Philip Magnus, *Kitchener: Portrait of an Imperialist*, London, 1958. Alfred Milner, *England in Egypt*, London, 1894.

<sup>48</sup> Magnus, *ibid.*, p. 24.

<sup>49</sup> Arthur, *op. cit.*, vol. II, pp. 345-346.



Riḍā stated that, after Lord Cromer's rule, the political and religious freedom guaranteed to the Egyptians was on the wane. He saw that Lord Kitchener had manifest sympathy towards missionary work. For instance, Lord Kitchener demanded the Egyptian Minister of *al-Awqāf* (Religious Endowments) to cancel his project of establishing a hospital in Old Cairo, which was planned to be situated nearby the British missionary hospital Herber. He feared that the Egyptian hospital would attract the attention of Muslims away from the missionary one.<sup>50</sup> Riḍā was disappointed by the fact that although the Egyptian government had provided missionary societies with many facilities to establish educational and medical centres for the goodwill of the country, they did not cease to maintain an anti-Muslim attitude in their tracts and publications.<sup>51</sup>

Driven by *al-Manār's* anti-missionary stance, a group of American and British missionaries approached Lord Kitchener to take measures against Riḍā's journal and his friend Tawfīq Ṣidqī. They moreover encouraged him to order a publication ban against *al-Manār*. Riḍā was convinced that missionaries aimed to silence his journal's critical voice towards them because it was the only Muslim mouthpiece countering their allegations against Islam.<sup>52</sup> It was Ṣidqī's article on the image of Jesus in both Christian and Muslim traditions that caused the conflict. In the article, he accused missionaries of sowing hatred and animosity among people. He also asserted that 'most Europeans (or even all of them) have made lying and breaking promises lawful in politics by using verses of the New Testament.' The same held true,

---

<sup>50</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'al-Tabshīr 'aw al-Tanṣīr fī Miṣr: Māḍihī wā Ḥāḍiruh wā Mūsā'adat al-Ḥukūma lahū (Missionary work: Its past and present and the Government's support for it),' vol. 33/3 (Muḥarram 1352/May 1933), p. 234. As it was difficult for them to pronounce, the Egyptians used to call Herber hospital as Hermel. M.M. Sulaymān, *al-Ajānīb fī Miṣr: 1922-1952*, 1st ed., Cairo: 'Ayn For Human and Social Studies, 1996, p. 294. Kitchener was the first British governor to establish a new ministry to take control of *al-Awqāf* in Egypt, which had been administered previously by the Khedive. This reform, however, provoked controversy. Unlike Cromer and Sir Eldon Gorst, who considered it to be impossible to interfere in such matters, Kitchener had no such inhibitions. He transferred the control of those endowments to a Minister, assisted by an under-secretary and a council of five, who were all Muslims. Magnus, *op. cit.*, pp. 271-72.

<sup>51</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Ḥuriyyat al-Muslimīn al-Dīniyya fī Miṣr (Religious Freedom given to Muslims in Egypt),' vol. 16/12 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1331/November 1913), pp. 958-959.

<sup>52</sup> *Ibid.*

Şidqî continued, for the lawfulness of wine-drinking, adultery, excessively violent wars for the minimum of reason, and animosity.<sup>53</sup>

In his diary (7-8 November, 1913), Riḍā recorded that ‘Abd al-Khālik Tharwat (1873-1928), the then Public Prosecutor and later Prime Minister, visited him in his school of Da‘wa in Cairo (see below in the present chapter) to discuss this issue. Tharwat informed Riḍā that Kitchener was personally involved in the matter and formally complained to Muḥammad Sa‘īd Pasha (1863-1928), the then Egyptian Prime Minister. Kitchener’s interference came as a result of a protest by the American ambassador whom missionaries managed to approach as well. After seeing Kitchener’s report, Riḍā insisted that his journal would not stop writing against missions so long as they continued to ‘defame’ Islam and preach Muslims to adopt Christianity. He developed his reply only as a refutation to their ‘misunderstandings’ of Islam, which he saw as binding on every capable and knowledgeable Muslim (see, Appendix IX).<sup>54</sup>

The following day, Riḍā accompanied Şidqî to the office of the Prime Minister, who explained to them the impact of colonial control over the country. He himself was concerned about missionary writings against Islam, and complained many times to British officials about the probable danger of their work in causing riots in Egypt. Şidqî’s article, according to him, had three disadvantages: 1) it would not result in diminishing their anti-Muslim campaigns, 2) it would result to a publication ban on *al-Manār*, and 3) as a civil servant Şidqî had no right to involve himself in such affairs, otherwise he might be dismissed from his position. The Prime Minister appreciated the religious role of *al-Manār* in society, but requested Riḍā to bring his anti-missionary campaign to a standstill in order to convince Kitchener to withdraw his decision.

Riḍā explained that his writings in this respect were divided into two different sections: 1) his commentary on the Qur’ānic passages related to Christianity and their logical and historical authenticity,

---

<sup>53</sup> M. Tawfiq Şidqî, ‘Nazra fî Kutub al-‘Ahd al-Jadīd wā Kutub al-Naşārā (A view on the New Testament and the scriptures of Christians),’ *al-Manār*, vol. 16/8 (Sha‘bān 1331/August 1913), pp. 598-599. He referred to the verses of Luke (22: 36-38) in which Jesus requested his followers to sell their garments and buy a new sword, while it is stated in Matthew 5: 44 that the believers must ‘love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you.’

<sup>54</sup> Riḍā’s diary, 7-8 November, 1913, private archive in Cairo.

and 2) his defence of Islam against missionary attacks. Having been asked by the Prime Minister about the allegation of missionaries that it was *al-Manār* that usually started the attack, Riḍā answered that his journal was always in a 'defensive arena.' He had become dissatisfied with the colonial 'tyranny and the great amount of the religious freedom given to missionaries, as measured up to the limitation imposed upon Muslims.' The Prime Minister had agreed with him on this point, but asked him to calm down the tone of his journal.<sup>55</sup>

Finally Riḍā pointed out that he did not see Ṣidqī's anti-European statements before publication, otherwise he would have corrected or deleted them. He moreover promised that Ṣidqī would discontinue his strongly-worded writings against missions, confining his writings to medical and scientific extracts and articles in the journal.<sup>56</sup> Riḍā in fact stopped publishing Ṣidqī's articles after this meeting.

In 1921 one of Riḍā's informants in the Sudan reported to him that the British authorities had banned *al-Manār* at the request of Christian missions there. According to him, copies were confiscated and burnt before reaching his subscribers. Riḍā complained to Sir Wingate, the British administrator (1899–1916) of the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan, but with no result.<sup>57</sup>

At another level, Riḍā accused colonial politicians in Egypt of excluding devout Muslims from high positions, especially in the field of education. They would rather employ their own 'fanatic' clergymen. He referred here to the British consultant in the Egyptian Ministry of Education, Douglas Dunlop, who first came to Egypt as a Scottish missionary teacher.<sup>58</sup> Dunlop was known among Egyptian nationalists as 'the assassin of education in Egypt.' He, for example, opposed the use of the Arabic language in Egyptian schools. Furthermore, he encouraged only the hiring of British teachers who knew no Arabic, and were then expected to teach subjects such as history, geography, and mathematics entirely in English.<sup>59</sup>

---

<sup>55</sup> Ibid.

<sup>56</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 16/12, p. 960.

<sup>57</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'al-Siyāsa wā Rijāl al-Dīn fi Miṣr (Politics and men of religion in Egypt),' vol. 22/7 (Dhū al-Qi'da 1339/August 1921), p. 523-535. The ban continued up to 1926, see, *al-Manār*, vol. 33/3, p. 235.

<sup>58</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 22/7 (Dhū al-Qi'da 1339/August 1921), pp. 523-525.

<sup>59</sup> Muna Russell, 'Competing, Overlapping, and Contradictory Agendas: Egyptian Education Under British Occupation, 1882-1922,' *Comparative Studies of South Asia, Africa and the Middle East* 21/1-2, 2001, p. 54.

3.4. *Missionary Schools*

Riḍā's *fatwās* for his readers in *al-Manār* (see, chapter 7) could construct a general idea of his views of the social dimension and influence of missionary schools on the Muslim local population. His answers to the questions sent to him from various regions concerning attending these schools were apparently undecided, and sometimes incoherent. We find examples of complete acceptance of their existence and useful role in promoting the social life in the Muslim world, while in other cases he harshly attacked their methods of attracting Muslim children to Christianity through their educational institutions.

The earliest queries Riḍā received concerning missionary schools did not directly deal with the question whether it was permissible to join these schools, or not. In 1903, a Muslim student at a Christian school in Cairo asked Riḍā for a religious excuse not to fast during the month of Ramadan. Having been enrolled in this school with its heavy schedule and work overload, it became much more difficult for him to fast. Riḍā found utterly no excuse for breaking his fasting just because of work. The student's work during the school day was no hard task, especially in the winter with short days and moderate weather. The only solution that Riḍā gave to this pupil was to pray that God would help the young man to endure fasting.<sup>60</sup>

In the following year, an anonymous petitioner from the above-mentioned city of Asyūṭ (a southern province in Egypt predominately inhabited by Christians) raised a question with regard to an invitation by an American missionary school to attend its yearly festivals. Was it permissible for Muslims to attend missionary activities, while they usually started with religious prayers and supplications upon Jesus as the Son of God? For Riḍā, there was no problem in attending their festivities. He stated that only the emulation of non-Muslims in their religious rites was to be considered apostasy. However, it was not forbidden to witness their rites and listen to their prayers, unless it caused Muslims to adopt Christian practices (such as in the case of children).<sup>61</sup>

In an earlier article (1903), Riḍā praised the American (Syrian) Protestant College in Beirut as the 'most ideal' educational institute

<sup>60</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/17 (Ramaḍān 1321/November 1903), p. 823.

<sup>61</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Ḥuḍūr 'Ibādat al-Naṣārā,' vol. 7/6 (Rabī' al-'Awwal 1322/June 1904), pp. 239-240.

for Muslims. He also described its then second President Howard S. Bliss, the son of its founder Daniel Bliss, as a ‘divine philosopher rather than a Christian priest.’<sup>62</sup> Although he was deeply religious, Howard Bliss was ‘very modern in his ideas [...] and accepted the implications of Higher Criticism and tried to make the students good members of their own sects, rather than Protestants.’<sup>63</sup> Riḍā’s eulogy of the College came at the request of his Christian friend Jabr effendi Ḍumiṭ (1859-1930), a teacher of Arabic at the College in Beirut (see, Appendix X).<sup>64</sup> Ḍumiṭ was grateful to Riḍā for his words, confirming that his request was not for personal concern, but for the public interest. In a letter to Riḍā, Ḍumiṭ wrote: ‘I will not say that God would sustain me to reward you, as you [Riḍā] are like the sun that expects no acknowledgement or fame.’<sup>65</sup>

Six years later Riḍā again issued a straightforward *fatwā* for the Muslim students at the College permitting them not to leave their school despite the compulsory rules laid down by its administration upon them to attend religious classes.<sup>66</sup> Until the end of the nineteenth century the Trustees of the College remained adamant in their refusal to relax the rules concerning attendance at prayers and at Sunday school or to follow separate catering facilities for non-Christians. In the same year, Muslim and Jewish students went on strike against compulsory church services, and the Trustee affirmed: ‘The College was not established merely for higher secular education, or the inculcation of morality. One of its chief objects is to teach the great truth of Scripture; to be a center of Christian light and influence; and to lead its students to understand and accept a pure Christianity; and go out to profess and comment it in every walk of life.’<sup>67</sup>

<sup>62</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/14 (Rajab 1321/October 1903), pp. 566-67.

<sup>63</sup> Elie Kedourie, ‘The American University of Beirut,’ *Middle Eastern Studies* 3/1, 1966, pp. 78-79 (Quoted below, ‘American’)

<sup>64</sup> Letter to Riḍā, Ḍumiṭ, 25 October 1903. His full name is Jabr Mikhā’il Ḍumiṭ was born in Tripoli, and died in Beirut. He received his education at American missionary schools in Lebanon. He traveled to Alexandria in 1884 and worked as an editor at *al-Mahrūsa* newspaper. Later he became an interpreter during Gordon’s campaign in the Sudan. From 1889-1923 he had been working as a staff member at the American Protestant College in Beirut. See, *Ziriklī, op. cit.*, vol. 2, pp. 108-109.

<sup>65</sup> Letter, Ḍumiṭ to Riḍā, Beirut, 25 October 1903, Riḍā’s private archive in Cairo.

<sup>66</sup> See, *al-Manār*, vol. 12/1 (Muḥarram 1327/21 February 1909), pp. 16-26, vol. 12/8, pp. 637-640.

<sup>67</sup> The Annual Report, as quoted in Kedourie, ‘American,’ pp. 83-84. For more about the history of the College, see, for instance, Bayard Dodge, *The American Uni-*

Riḍā's *fatwā* came as a result of the request of Muslim students to him during his visit to Beirut (1909). They complained to him about the College's compulsion for all students to attend religious classes. They complained that they were asked to attend the daily chapel for fifteen or twenty minutes in order to listen to readings from the Bible. In the College, there were societies for the Armenians, Greeks, Egyptians (both Christians and Muslims). There were the Young Men Christian Association and the Jewish Student Society. But their request for permission to establish their own Muslim society was totally disregarded. Neither were they allowed to celebrate the *mawlid* (the day of the Prophet's Birth); and some of the American teachers made negative and depraved comments about Islam and its prophet several times.

To calm down their sentiments, Riḍā delivered a speech asking them to keep their Islamic bond firmly, and to be faithfully dedicated to their religious practices and identity. In his sermon, he likewise asked them to be more tolerant with their non-Muslim classmates, while unifying themselves. He stressed the scientific significance and societal benefits of such Christian schools in spreading science and techniques in the Muslim lands, even though they were sometimes harmful for one's belief. Riḍā told them:

The founders of this school have sought to use education, which benefits all peoples, as a method to spread their languages and religious beliefs into the hearts and minds of whom they educate. That is a lesson for us. We should learn from it and improve ourselves so that we should be more qualified for this achievement than we are today. You must all cooperate, work together and seek the protection of group effort and consensus. You may face in this world malice and pressure to drive you away from the right path, away from your desire for cooperation and agreement. It behooves you, therefore, to try to be tolerant of all unacceptable treatment you might encounter from those around you [at the college], and to respond with courtesy in work and deed [...] Although your conduct should seek only to satisfy your own conscience, and to apply your beliefs to your deeds, you should hold yourselves above intentional disobedience and stubbornness towards your superiors or your teachers, and above snobbery and false pride in your achievements.<sup>68</sup>

---

*versity of Beirut*, Beirut, 1958; id., 'The American University of Beirut,' *Journal of World History* 4, 1967, pp. 780-800.

<sup>68</sup> As translated by M. Haddad, 'Syrian Muslim Attitudes Towards Foreign Missionaries in the Late Nineteenth and Twentieth Century,' in Tejjirian & Simon, *op. cit.*, p. 259 (Quoted below, 'Syrian').

Riḍā tended to believe that America had no political aspirations in the East. For this reason, most American missionary schools in the East in general and the American Protestant College in Beirut in particular were better, more independent, and less prejudiced than other Western religious educational institutions of countries having political ambitions in the East (such as England). The fair-minded Muslims would know perfectly well and could estimate the zeal of the founders of these religious institutions to spread their religion. They wished that there would emerge among Muslims similar 'generous' groups who were ready to spend their money in propagating Islam by means of spreading 'useful knowledge' through schools and 'good acts' through medical aid. As compared with their Muslim fellows, Christians were geared up to spend a lot of money for many years despite their less success in converting Muslims. Riḍā moreover argued that missionary institutions sometimes exaggerated the number of converts by annually sending illusive reports to their indigenous institutions in the country of origin in order to raise more funds.<sup>69</sup>

In his analysis, Riḍā maintained that the scientific advance offered by such schools might encourage some Muslim parents to choose them for their own children because they firmly believe that a Muslim would never turn into a Christian. Another group would abandon them because of their influence on the children's doctrines, following the *fiqhī* (legal) views of prohibiting Muslims, despite their firm belief, to be involved in venerating other places of worship. For Riḍā, this view could only be applicable to Catholic and Orthodox schools (especially of the Jesuits), which also compelled Muslim children to follow their religious practices, including the veneration of images and saints. He argued that when Muslim students of the American Protestant College in Beirut refused to attend religious sermons in the Church, the administration insisted that they should either join them or be dismissed. According to Riḍā, the Ministry of Interior interfered to solve the problem by asking the American Consul in Beirut to appeal to the school, either to abandon the idea and build a mosque inside the school where students could easily practice their religion, or to refuse to enrol Muslim students.<sup>70</sup>

---

<sup>69</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 12/1, p. 17.

<sup>70</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 21. In 1914 the Ottoman Government passed a law that forbade the College from giving religious instruction to any, except to Protestant students, see, Kedourie, 'American,' p. 84.



Riḍā maintained that a teacher at the American Protestant College (probably Ḍumiṭ) had once asked him about his religious views concerning the attendance of Muslim students in Christian classes. He argued that these classes contained ethical and religious admonitions which are also embodied in Islam. The College neither taught Muslim students Christian traditions, nor did it attack other beliefs. Riḍā encouraged these students to reject the call to boycott these classes on the basis of the view of the majority of Muslim jurists, who prohibited students from entering the places of worship of other religions. Although there is no legal Islamic basis of prohibition with regard to entering these places, Riḍā stressed that the choice of the students should be respected. Having respect for schools and houses is one of the pivotal corners of upbringing, but respecting one's belief and consciousness was higher than showing respect to the school regulations only.<sup>71</sup>

To conclude, Riḍā requested the College's administration to gain the respect of those students by dealing with them justly in a way comparable to their Jewish and Christian classmates, who were given permission to establish their own societies. They should also avoid all kinds of assaults against Islam in their lectures. If the objective of these lectures was to create harmony among the College's members, away from any political and religious doctrines, they should have attempted to gain the loyalty of the Muslim students by allowing them to have their own activities. He also stressed that the College had only two choices, either to be tolerant in accepting the demands of the Muslim students, or to send them away. In Riḍā's own terms:

If they made the first choice, Muslims and 'humanity' would appreciate their deed; and they would draw closer to the 'real core' of any religion by establishing harmony among people: something shared by Islam and Christianity. But if they decided upon the second alternative, they would teach Muslims another new lesson that might cause harm to them [as Christians] and [to Muslims] among whom they lived by causing discord and strengthening fanaticism. However, it would be stimulating for Muslims to be more self-sufficient and competitive in establishing their own religious societies, which would found similar schools.<sup>72</sup>

Although Western education, in Riḍā's view, contained plenty of social benefits, it still had its impact upon the feelings of the Muslim umma. Muslims should hasten to have good command of the sciences

---

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 20-22.

<sup>72</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 12/1, p. 25.



taught in these schools. He advised Muslim students at the American Protestant College to get more scientific ability in new educational methods and to translate all the knowledge they acquired into Arabic in order to achieve progress in the whole umma. They should also endure any kind of ill-treatment or inequality practised by the College, and to be flexible and wise enough by obeying the rules of their College.

Nonetheless, Riḍā gave preference to the view of allowing Muslim children to remain in such schools as long as they did not have similar Muslim ones. But they should avoid any disadvantages resulting from instructions which are incompatible with Islam. Besides, Riḍā advised Muslim students to strengthen their religious identity by: 1) studying Muslim books explaining the truth of Islam and the differences between Islam and Christianity; 2) reading Muslim works refuting the Bible and its doctrines; 3) observing all Islamic acts of worship at these schools, such as the five daily prayers, and to fast on the days they were required to attend the Christian religious classes; and 4) keeping their concern for competition with those people, trying to combine both religion and science, and to establish similar schools.<sup>73</sup> Although he presented such solutions for the students, Riḍā at the same time earnestly called upon the Muslims of Beirut to get their children out of the American Protestant College and the other missionary schools, and hasten in raising funds for establishing their own Islamic college to replace such institutions.<sup>74</sup>

A further change in Riḍā's attitude towards the American Protestant College took place after he had received a letter from a certain 'Abd al-Qādir al-Ghandūr from Beirut at the end of the academic year 1909. In his letter, al-Ghandūr informed Riḍā that the president invited Muslim and Jewish students in his office and asked them to sign an oath that they should carry out certain religious duties in the following year including attending the church service and studying the Bible. The student who would be absent from prayers a number of times was to be suspended.<sup>75</sup> In response, Riḍā no longer showed any courtesy or respect to the College, and totally prohibited Muslims from looking into or listening to books belonging to any other religion. Imitating the behaviour of such people in their religious acts is unquestionably forbidden in Islam. He moreover accused 'foreigners

<sup>73</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 12/8, pp. 639-40.

<sup>74</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 640.

<sup>75</sup> Haddad, 'Syrian,' pp. 262-263.

[...] of spreading their prejudice and partisanship in the East, [while] continuing to claim that the East was the birthplace of fanaticism.<sup>76</sup>

On the relation between missionary schools and colonialism, Riḍā stressed that powerful colonial nations always attempted to reshape the social, national and religious identity of their colonised people by promoting educational systems according to their political agenda.<sup>77</sup> The idea was further developed in his answers to the afore-mentioned Danish missionary Alfred Nielsen (see, chapter 7). Riḍā made it clear that the most obnoxious thing done by missionary schools, even the American ones (which he still considered to be the most honest), was that they would make the students doubt their own religion, without convincing them of the soundness of Christianity. Thus many of the students would become hypocrites and atheists. The same held true for Christian students and followers of other religions. Such institutions, however, brought benefits by disseminating pure and applied sciences in the Muslim countries, particularly agriculture, commerce and medicine. Although such advantages were appreciated, they were not attributed to the missions themselves in any way. The specialists in these fields at missionary schools were far remote from the instructions and rulings of the Bible.<sup>78</sup>

Apart from the services offered by these schools and hospitals, Riḍā went on, they were mainly established to help the 'colonial covetousness,' as was clearly expressed by Lord Salisbury who said: 'Missionary schools are the first step of colonialism.' Riḍā thus insisted that there was an epousal between colonialism and mission:

Missionary schools, first of all, cause division among the populations of the land where they are established. The people, as a result, fall into intellectual disagreement and dogmatic doubts. The 'foreigners,' in that way, would succeed in hitting the people of the country by one another. This will in the end give the colonial powers the opportunity to get them completely under control, humiliate and deprive them of their independence and wealth.<sup>79</sup>

---

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 263.

<sup>77</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'al-Taṭawwur al-Siyāsī wā al-Dīnī wā al-Ijtimā'ī fi Miṣr (Political, religious and social development in Egypt,' vol. 21/5 (Dhū al-Qi'da 1337/August 1919), pp. 274-277.

<sup>78</sup> Umar Ryad, 'Rashīd Riḍā and a Danish Missionary: Alfred Nielsen and Three Fatwas from *al-Manār*,' *Islamochristiana* 28, 2002, pp. 87-107 (Quoted below, 'Nielsen').

<sup>79</sup> Ibid.

Riḍā maintained that missionary activities had proved to be tragic and catastrophic for many countries by causing hostility and division among the peoples they were sent to. In Syria, for example, dissidence and religious strife were mostly caused by the activities of missionary schools in the country. Deplorable religious fanaticism was weaker in the area before the coming of those missions. But thanks to them religious knowledge among Christian groups had increased.

An anonymous Tunisian Muslim also asked Riḍā for a *fatwā* on enrolling Muslim students at secular (*lā diniyya*) and Christian schools, where emphasis was laid upon foreign languages, while Islamic and Arabic subjects were inappropriately lacking. A further advantage of attending these schools was that they would have the privilege of exemption from a three-year military service after their graduation.<sup>80</sup>

Riḍā not only opposed these secular schools, but also severely criticised missionary ones, labeling them as much more dangerous for Muslims than the secular ones. He further noted that teaching Arabic and Islamic doctrine and rules to children is the duty of every Muslim parent. Unless these schools enabled them to teach their small children Islamic values, there would be no excuse for them to put their children there. For Riḍā, it was no convincing justification to send their children to secular schools only for escaping military service. Muslim parents, however, are obliged to teach their children discipline as well. These schools, in his view, were less dangerous than the schools of ‘the preachers of Christianity.’ It has been attested, he argued, that such religious schools were solely established by missionary organisations to propagate their religion; and pupils attending their lessons were requested to practice Christian doctrines, worship and ethics. Missionaries also follow many ‘satanic’ methods to keep Muslims away from Islam, which vary according the state of knowledge or ignorance of the Muslim. Secular schools were established by secular organisations also ‘not only to propagate atheism, but also rejecting all Prophets and their message of guidance.’<sup>81</sup>

Atheism, Riḍā lamented, was in different degrees clearly widespread among those who studied at secular and missionary schools. The outcome of attending these schools could be seen in various ways. Among their graduates were the *al-Mu‘aṭṭila*, who do not believe in

<sup>80</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 32/3 (Dhū al-Qi‘da 1350/March 1932), pp. 178-181.

<sup>81</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 180.

God, His angels, Books, Prophets, and the Day of Resurrection. Some of them were only religiously committed to the political and social affairs of Islam, such as marriage, inheritance, feasts, funeral ceremonies, but did not perform prayer, pay *zakāt* (almsgiving), nor go on pilgrimage. Some of them acknowledged the sacredness of Ramadan, and sometimes fasted, but they did not abandon what Allah prohibits, such as wine-drinking, gambling, *zinā* (adultery and fornication) and usury. Finally, there were some of them who prayed and fasted regularly, but they did not know the minimum amount of what the real Muslim should know about the Islamic creed, values and rulings.<sup>82</sup>

Most of the children learning at such schools would be ignorant of *al-ma'lūm min al-dīn bi al-ḍarūra* (the necessary minimum amount of knowledge that every Muslim should know). They would also give precedence to foreign languages over Arabic, and ignore that Islam stipulates Arabic as the language of Islam in order to unify Muslims under one banner in terms of worship, morals and law. The education of Muslims at such missionary and secular schools caused Muslims many 'evils' in their religion, life and politics. The reason why Muslims let their children study in such schools was the lack of similar well-financed Muslim organisations, and the fact that there was no real Muslim government taking the responsibility for establishing such institutions. If Muslims established their own schools, there would be no need for the educational institutions of the 'enemies' of their religion, which they deemed very necessary for their life. For him, establishing similar schools was *Farḍ Kifāya*, a duty that must be fulfilled at least by a sufficient number of Muslims.<sup>83</sup>

Finally, he contended that Muslim parents, even those well acquainted with Islam and capable of raising their children in a real Islamic way, would be only rarely able to preserve the faith of their children who joined these missionary schools. As an example to support his ideas he recounted that his brother al-Sayyid Ṣāliḥ (d. 1922) once sent his own daughter to the American School for girls in Tripoli-Syria. Despite his deep knowledge of Islam and ability to debate with missionaries, he failed to convince her of the inaccuracy of hymns praising the divinity of Jesus and the salvation he offers to human beings, which she had memorised there. As a result, he took her out of this school even before she finished her studies.<sup>84</sup>

---

<sup>82</sup> Ryad, 'Nielsen.'

<sup>83</sup> Ibid.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid.

3.5. *Encounters with Missions in al-Manār*

By the end of the nineteenth century, the behaviour of some Christian missionaries in Cairo was strongly criticised in the Egyptian press. Reports on some Protestant missionary institutions that tried to entice Muslims by giving them money were spread over the city. Members of the English Missionary School (situated in Muḥammad ‘Alī Street, Cairo) rejected such rumours.<sup>85</sup> Riḍā quoted at length the views of the Christian paper *al-Falāḥ* (Success) and the writings of the Syrian journalist Salīm Pasha al-Ḥamawī as an example of ‘enthusiastic’ Christian writers, who dared to censure Western missions for their ‘transgression.’ The paper suggested that Muslims should constitute their own missionary associations in order to challenge Western missions. Riḍā, as a result, dwelled upon the idea of initiating a classroom in the Ottoman School of the Syrian nationalist Rafīq al-‘Aẓm (mentioned above, chapter 2) in Cairo, where students would receive religious lessons.<sup>86</sup>

In the same period, Riḍā took a prominent place in two Muslim associations: *Shams al-‘Islām* (Sun of Islam) and *Makārim al-‘Akhlāq* (Good Manners). The two organisations aimed at combating Christian missions, and the revitalisation of religious consciousness among Muslims. Riḍā became a member of the Sun of Islam on July 20, 1899.<sup>87</sup> He also toured Egypt in order to help found new branches for the association in various provinces. He consistently praised the benevolent activities supported by the association, especially religious propagation and the establishment of new educational institutions.<sup>88</sup>

In these early years, Riḍā, however, criticised the ‘overzealous and fanatic’ reaction of both Muslims and Christians. He attributed the origin of fanaticism and disharmony among the followers of the two religions to the behaviour of some religious and secular leaders, who worked only for their own interests. As for his own rejoinders against Protestant missionary writings, he stressed that they were purely defensive against their attacks on Islam. At the same time, he criticised some newspapers, which vehemently attacked missionaries with the

<sup>85</sup> ‘Al-Da‘wah ‘ilā al-Dīn (Preaching Religions),’ *al-Manār*, vol. 2/9 (Muḥarram 1317/May 1899), pp. 140-143.

<sup>86</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 143.

<sup>87</sup> Riḍā’s diary, 1899, private archive in Cairo.

<sup>88</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 2/37 (Rajab 1317/November 1899), pp. 589-590.

purpose of satisfying the desire of 'fanatic' Muslims. By doing so, they intended to inflame the tension between both groups and to cause harm for the society.<sup>89</sup>

Some of Riḍā's Muslim readers used to send him missionary publications on Islam so that he might refute them in his journal. In many cases, he would 'soothe their anger' by confirming that missionary writings were 'futile and that their attack on Islam had its advantage in renovating the spirit of research and reasoning and refurbishing the sense of religious zealotness and national consciousness among Muslims.'<sup>90</sup>

A prominent example of Riḍā's polemics against missionary writings was his answer to the publication of the Arabic translation of the missionary book *The Sources of Islam* by Rev. W. St. Clair-Tisdall (1859-1928) of the Church Missionary Society (CMS) in 1904. Riḍā's answer was part of an intense controversy in the Egyptian press over the book.<sup>91</sup> It was originally published as a Persian treatise in which Tisdall attempted to show that the Qur'ān was partly derived from ancient Arabian traditions, and that there was also Judeo-Christian influence on its narratives. In his foreword to the book, Sir William Muir concluded that 'if it be shown that much of this grand book [the Qur'ān] can be traced in human sources existing daily around the Prophet, then Islam falls to the ground. And this is what the author proves with marvelous power and erudition.'<sup>92</sup> Compare this praise with the recent judgment of Tisdall's work made by Western scholars, who described it as 'a shoddy piece of missionary propaganda,'<sup>93</sup> and 'not particularly scholarly essay or even a polemi-

<sup>89</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Ariḥiyat al-Tasāhul wā al-Wifāq (Munificence of Tolerance and Harmony),' vol. 7/22 (Dhū al-Qi'da 1322/22 January 1905), p. 879

<sup>90</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 5/11 (Jumādā al-'Ākhira 1320/September 1902), pp. 436-439.

<sup>91</sup> W. S. Tisdall, *Tanwīr al-'Afhām fī Maṣādir al-'Islām*, London: Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1904; id., *The Sources of Islam: A Persian Treatise*, translated and abridged by Sir William Muir, Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1901; id., *The Original Sources of Islam*, London: Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1905; See also, id., *The Religion of the Crescent or Islam: Its Strength, Its Weakness, Its Origin, Its Influence*, London: Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1895. About his life, see, Gerald H. Anderson, ed., *Biographical Dictionary of Christian Missions*, New York, 1997, p. 673.

<sup>92</sup> Tisdall, *Sources*, p. vi. Tisdall's work has been reprinted in *The Origins of the Kuran*, edited by the pseudonym and ex-Muslim Ibn Warraq, ed., *The Origins of the Kuran*, New York: Prometheus Books, 1998, pp. 227-292.

<sup>93</sup> François de Blois, 'Book Review [of Ibn Warraq's] *The Origins Of The Koran: Classic Essays On Islam's Holy Book*,' *The Journal Of The Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland* 10/11, 2000, p. 88.

cal one [...] It uses the salvation history of Christianity to refute that of Muslims.<sup>94</sup>

Riḍā ridiculed the book as ‘false camouflage’ that would only affect weakly-minded Muslims. The author applied similar methods used by European scholars to ‘demolish’ Judaism and Christianity by investigating the origin of their sources and proving them to be of an inaccurate and unholy nature. However, Muslims, in Riḍā’s eyes, continue to believe in the invulnerability of their Holy Book. Imbued by his missionary zeal, Tisdall was enormously puzzled by the methods of the Higher Biblical Criticism on his religion. Thus, he attempted to attack Islam with ‘the very weapon Christianity had been fought with.’<sup>95</sup> Riḍā was also very skeptical about Tisdall’s knowledge of Islam: his method was no less spurious than that of other missionary writings in their attack on Islam. In constructing the sources of Islam, Riḍā believed, the author depended on the *Isrā’iliyyāt* (Israelite Lore) and legendary narratives attributed to insignificant authors.<sup>96</sup> Riḍā’s general view of this Lore was in line with that of his teacher Muḥammad ‘Abduh, viz. that such stories had been fabricated by the Jews with the purpose of undermining Islam.<sup>97</sup>

In 1911, the French orientalist Alfred Le Chatelier (1855-1929) published his history of Protestant missions in the Muslim world under the title ‘La conquête du monde Musulman’ in *La Revue du Monde Musulman* of the Scientific Mission of Morocco. Riḍā immediately requested his fellow citizen Mūsā’id al-Yāfi (1886-1943) to make an Arabic translation of the whole French text. Soon his translation, prepared in cooperation with the Salafī writer Muḥḥib al-Dīn al-Khatīb (1886-1969), was published in many Egyptian newspapers,

<sup>94</sup> Herbert Berg, ‘Book Review [of Ibn Warraq’s] *The Origins of the Koran: Classic Essays On Islam’s Holy Book*,’ *Bulletin Of The School Of Oriental and African Studies* 62/3, 1999, p. 558.

<sup>95</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 7/3 (Ṣafar 1322/April 1904), p. 101.

<sup>96</sup> Such as Abū Ishāq al-Tha’alibī (d. 1035), *Qaṣaṣ al-Anbiyā’ al-Musammā bi ‘Arā’is al-Majālis*, Cairo, 1312/1894, see the English edition by William M. Brinner, Leiden: E. J. Brill, 2002. Another work is *Kharīdat al-‘Ajā’ib wā Farīdat al-Gharā’ib* (by Sirāj al-Dīn Ibn al-Wardī (d. 861); edited by Carolus Johannes Tornberg, *Fragmentum Libri Margarita Mirabilium, auctore Ibn-el-Vardi*, Upsalae, 1838; reprinted by Mahmud Fakhuri, ed., Beirut: Dār al-Sharq al-‘Arabī, 1999.

<sup>97</sup> Brinner, *op. cit.*, p. xxviii, See Aḥmad Muflīh al-Qudah, ‘Mawqif Tafsīr al-Manār min Riwayāt Asbāb al-Nuzūl wā al-Isrā’iliyyāt,’ ‘Symposium on Sheikh Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā: His Intellectual Role, Reformation and Methodology,’ International Institute for Islamic Thought, Jordan 1999, pp. 13-48.



such as *al-Mu'ayyad*, *al-Fath* and *al-'Ittiḥād al-'Uthmānī*.<sup>98</sup> During Riḍā's visit to India in that year, *al-Manār* also started publishing the entire translation in order to inform its readers about the 'future plans' of missionaries in the Muslim world.<sup>99</sup> Riḍā's above-mentioned brother al-Sayyid Sāliḥ criticised the French magazine for having taken another direction by writing on that subject in order to gain political and religious ends.<sup>100</sup>

In its comment on the purpose of the translation in Arab newspapers, *La Revue* criticised these Muslim journals:

Nous en venons par là à ce qui séparera probablement notre point de vue et celui de nos confrères arabes. Leurs vœux se bornent à affirmer, à acclamer l'indépendance de l'Islam, avec la certitude de ne pas la réaliser, mais d'achever au contraire de la perdre. Nous voudrions, nous, les voir assurer cette indépendance, par les voies de prospérité encore ouvertes à son avenir. [...] Ce n'est pas en se réislamisant que le Musulman d'Égypte échappera à la main-mise britannique : c'est en opposant le gentleman musulman au gentleman chrétien. Si le *Moayyad*, le *Manar* et l'*Ittiḥād al Othmani* veulent se mettre pratiquement en travers de l'« assaut donné au monde musulman » la méthode est simple. Qu'ils disent à leurs lecteurs : « Sortons de nos petits coins, pour aborder, de face, le réalités qui sont. »<sup>101</sup>

*Al-Manār* also followed the news circulated on missionary activities in Muslim journals worldwide. In 1910, for instance, it published a translation of an article published in the above-mentioned Russian journal *Shūrā* in Orenburg on missionary associations in Russia. The article described missions as 'uninvited guests'.<sup>102</sup> It belittled their success in converting or attracting local Muslims, although their numbers were on the increase and their finances were flourishing. Nevertheless, the revival of religious zealotry among the Tatar Muslims was due to missionary movements in Russian provinces. In that sense, missions had their positive impact by consolidating the feeling of broth-

<sup>98</sup> Later compiled in one small volume, A. Le Chatelier, *al-Ghārā 'alā al-'Ālam al-'Islāmī*, trans. by Mūsā'id al-Yāfi and Muḥḥib al-Dīn al-Khatīb, Cairo: al-Maṭba'a al-Salafiyya, 1350/1931-1932.

<sup>99</sup> See, vol. 15 the issues 3-9.

<sup>100</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 15/4, p. 259.

<sup>101</sup> See, 'Chronique,' *Revue du Monde Musulman* 6, 1912, Paris, p. 286 ; cf. *Al-Manār*, vol. 15/9 (Ramaḍān 1330/September 1912), pp. 697-702; vol. 15/10, pp. 799-800.

<sup>102</sup> 'Jam'iyyat al-Mubashshirīn fi Rūsiyā (Missionary Association in Russia),' *Al-Manār*, vol. 13/11, p. 853.



erhood and unity among Muslim Russians. Any case of conversion was also, according to the article, insignificant, since it was in the favour of Islam to 'root out those [converts as] corrupt members of the Muslim community.'<sup>103</sup>

It is also noteworthy that the Shī'ī Muslim scholar Hibat al-Dīn al-Shahrastānī al-Najafī (1884-1967), the founder and proprietor of *al-'Ilm* Magazine in Najaf, took part in countering Christian missions in Riḍā's journal. As a Shī'ī reformist, al-Shahrastānī was keen to have relations with Muslim contemporary reformists in Egypt and Syria.<sup>104</sup> In his journal he also published biographies of famous Sunnī and Shī'ī reformists.<sup>105</sup> The ideas of both al-Shahrastānī and Riḍā ran parallel. Al-Shahrastānī intended to connect *al-Manār* with his magazine, as they had common interests of reform.

In 1911 al-Shahrastānī wrote an article in *al-Manār* on Christian missions about one of his debates with Christian missionaries in Iraq. Riḍā published the article under the title: 'A Debate of a Muslim Scholar with Protestant Missionaries in Baghdad.'<sup>106</sup> In his preface to the article, Riḍā mentioned that although the debate was also published in *al-'Ilm*, al-Shahrastānī had asked him to republish it in *al-Manār* for the sake of circulation among Muslims everywhere. Riḍā's intention of publishing the debate was directed to the common method among Protestant missionaries of using imaginary characters and themes in their articles on Islam. In the Anglo-Arabic magazine *al-Sharq wā al-Gharb*, Gairdner used to illustrate imaginary debates with extracts from the Bible as a medium in presenting his Christian texts and his apologetic discussions on Islam.<sup>107</sup>

In February 1911 in Baghdad, while he was touring around Iraqi and Indian cities, al-Shahrastānī attended two meetings of Protestant missionaries, including the members of the Persia and Turkish Arabia

<sup>103</sup> Ibid.

<sup>104</sup> See, Muḥammad Bāqir Aḥmad al-Bahādilī, *al-Sayyid Hibat al-Dīn al-Shahrastānī: Athāruh al-Fikriyyā wā Mawāqifuhu al-Siyāsiyyā*, Beirut: Mu'assasat al-Fikr al-'Islāmī, 2000, p. 92.

<sup>105</sup> Ibid., p. 95.

<sup>106</sup> 'Munāzarat 'Ālim Muslim li Du'āt al-Protestant fi Baghdād: Baḥthunā ma'a al-Du'āt al-Brotestāniyyin: Ḥaflat Uns Ma'a Rufqat Fuḍālā', *al-Manār*, vol. 14/12 (Dhū Al-Ḥijja 1329/December 1911), pp. 914-922.

<sup>107</sup> See, Constance E. Padwick, *Temple Gairdner of Cairo*, London, 1929; Werff, *op. cit.*, p. 197.

Missions, Rev. P. Boyes, Dr. F. Johnson and Dr. G. W. Stanley.<sup>108</sup> He described them as people of ‘good manners and [claiming] to have knowledge of practical and spiritual ‘divine’ medicine.’<sup>109</sup> Both Johnson and Stanley were physicians of the medical missionary team at that time. Among the attendants in the debate were other indigenous Iraqi Muslims and Christians, such as Dawūd Fitto (1865-1921), an Iraqi Christian pharmacist.<sup>110</sup>

The discussion took the form of a *munāẓarah* (‘debate’) around ‘philosophical’ and ‘theological’ issues, such as 1) the sacred character of the Bible; 2) the sonship of Jesus; 3) medical subjects; 4) Jesus as saviour; 5) evil and human sin; 6) and the concept Mahdism and the return of the Messiah.<sup>111</sup> Despite their theological differences, al-Shahrastānī was impressed by the studiousness of missionary physicians, who fulfilled their job with no expectation of any financial return from their patients. Their concern for propagating their faith was immense to the extent that they wrote on the walls of their hospital: ‘Believe in Jesus Christ, He will save you and your family from all evil.’ In conclusion, al-Shahrastānī ended his article saying: ‘The Lord may make all difficulties easy for the seekers of the good, and to reward the people of beneficence with gratitude; He is the One Who guides to the right path.’<sup>112</sup>

In his comment, Riḍā appreciated the praise of al-Shahrastānī of their medical work (even though he knew perfectly well that their only mission was to convert Muslims to Christianity), and saw it as a clear-cut indication of Muslim tolerance with missions. But he blamed him for giving them this credit, while giving no attention to their anti-Islamic campaigns.<sup>113</sup> Two months later al-Shahrastānī

<sup>108</sup> About the history of the mission, see, *The Persia and Turkish Arabia Missions*, London: Church Missionary Society, 1909.

<sup>109</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/12, p. 915.

<sup>110</sup> Dawūd Fitto was born in al-Mawṣil. He is a Syriac Orthodox by origin, who converted with his mother and sister to Protestantism. He studied at Protestant schools, where he learnt Arabic, English, Kurdish, and Turkish. When the Turkish Arabia Mission was established, he was trained as a pharmacist. He wrote scientific articles in the Egyptian magazine *al-Muqtataf*, and became its agent in Iraq. He worked as a pharmacist at the Protestant Pharmacy in Baghdad. After World War I, and due to the departure of many missionaries from Iraq, Fitto established his own pharmacy. See, Hārith Yusuf Ghanima, *al-Brūtustant wā al-Injilyūn fī al-‘Irāq (Protestants and Evangelicals in Iraq)*, al-Nāshir al-Maktabī Press, 1998, pp. 171-173.

<sup>111</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/12, p. 916.

<sup>112</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 922.

<sup>113</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/12, p. 922.

explained to Riḍā that he neither intended to praise the missionary medical work, nor wished them any success. He only desired to 'awaken Muslims and motivate their thinking.'<sup>114</sup> His supplications at the end of his article were 'relative,' and were meant to be only a concluding statement. On the other hand, he totally agreed with what Riḍā repeatedly articulated in his writings about 'their [missionary] activities as harming for Muslims in their religion and politics.'<sup>115</sup>

One of the common ideas between Riḍā and al-Shahraṣṭānī was obvious in their fight against missions and the endeavour to promote the Da'wa in the face of the Christian propaganda against Islam. Among Riḍā's personal papers I have come across an unpublished manuscript of a treatise by al-Shahraṣṭānī submitted to *al-Manār* for publication (see, appendix XI). The aim of this work was to inform Riḍā and the readers of *al-Manār* about the author's efforts to strengthen the Islamic Da'wa against Christian missionary work during his stay in India in 1913. From there he tried to 'promote preaching, writing, and the advance of an Islamic social power through establishing Muslim schools and societies and distributing publications.'<sup>116</sup> The reason why Riḍā did not publish this work in his journal is not known. Al-Shahraṣṭānī related to Riḍā one of his anecdotes about what he labeled as 'a missionary trick,' which happened to him in India. He passed by a group of people surrounding a Christian priest preaching his religion in a park in Bombay. A man dressed as a European came, and started to recount that he traveled around the world in his search for the true religion, but did not find a better religion than Christianity. He took an oath before the priest and sat beside him. The same thing happened with another man, who was dressed as an Arab claiming to be a Ḥanafī Muslim from Mecca. He was followed by a man acting as a Shī'ī from Karbala, then by a heathen from India with the same story. Al-Shahraṣṭānī maintained that they were four Indians, who converted to Christianity a time ago. Their performance was only a 'trick' in order to deceive the

<sup>114</sup> Letter, al-Sharistānī to Riḍā, Iraq, 16 Rabī' al-Thānī 1330/ 4 April, 1912.

<sup>115</sup> Ibid.

<sup>116</sup> 'Fayṣal al-Dalā'il fi Ajwibat al-Masā'il (The Distinction of Proofs in Answering the Questions),' MS, Riḍā's private archive in Cairo. It contains al-Shahraṣṭānī's answers to a group of questions raised by the Sultan of Oman Fayṣal Ibn Turkī (1864-1913) in his courtyard about a variety of Islamic themes. The treatise is dated 1913.

common people. Had he known the Indian language and the Indian mentality, he would have debated with them all!<sup>117</sup>

When Riḍā published the above-mentioned Arabic translation of Chatelier's 'La conquête,' a Muslim 'traveler' sent *al-Manār* his observations about the influence of Protestant missionary organisations in the Gulf region during his visit as early as 1913.<sup>118</sup> The Arabian Mission had been one of the organisations founded by Samuel Zwemer. During his early stay in Arabia, Zwemer adopted the name 'Ḍayf Allāh' (the guest of Allah) in order to make a distinction for himself among the Bedouins. The Arabs, however, called him 'Ḍayf al-Shayṭān' (the guest of the Devil).<sup>119</sup> Another report asserts that local citizens named him: 'Fātiḥ al-Baḥrain' (the Conqueror of Bahrain).<sup>120</sup>

One of the servants of this Muslim traveler went to probe information about their work, and made some pictures of their centers in Bahrain, Muscat, Kuwait and Basra. In spite of the effect of their efforts on Islam and Muslims, he indicated to *al-Manār* that they exaggerated their success among Muslims in order to gain more funding from their native institutions. He counted the number of male and female workers as less than twenty persons, who neither had good command of Arabic, nor good acquaintance with the local population. He himself once visited their society in Bahrain and discussed many theological issues related to Biblical and Qur'ānic narratives of the Creation. He also noted that they established a small school consisting of two rooms, where they used to teach children downstairs, and to gather adults for religious services upstairs.<sup>121</sup>

As for the status of Zwemer in Bahrain, he added that the local inhabitants treated him very roughly in his early stay. On the market

<sup>117</sup> Letter, al-Sharistāni to Riḍā, Ramdan 24, 1331/August 27, 1913.

<sup>118</sup> 'Du'āt al-Naṣrāniyyā fi al-Baḥrain wā Bilād al-'Arab (Missionaries in Bahrain and Arabian lands),' *al-Manār*, vol. 16/5 (Jumāda al-'Ulā 1331/May 1913), pp. 379-383.

<sup>119</sup> Wilson, *op. cit.*, p. 55. The center of the Arabian Mission was first situated in Bahrain and started work in Basra, Muscat and Kuwait. For more details, see, Alfred DeWitt Mason and Frederick J. Barny, *History of the Arabian Mission*, with a foreword by W.I. Chamberlain, New York, 1926; Wilson, 'The Epic of Samuel Zwemer,' *The Moslem World* XLII/III, 1953, pp. 79-93; Id., *Flaming prophet: The Story of Samuel Zwemer*, New York: Friendship Press, 1970; Werff, *op. cit.*, pp. 224-267. Alan Neely, 'Zwemer, Samuel Marinus,' in Anderson, *op. cit.*, p. 763; about the Arabian Mission, see, for instance, Lewis R. Scudder, *The Arabian Mission's Story: In Search of Abraham's Other Son*, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing, 1998.

<sup>120</sup> Werff, *op. cit.*, p. 175.

<sup>121</sup> Ibid.

he established his own bookshop, where he first sold publications on various topics, but later he gradually put up only Christian books for sale. When he decided to purchase a piece of land, the local governor stipulated that he should not put any Christian symbol on the building. Zwemer appealed to the British Consul, who interfered in the matter and he purchased a spacious piece of land for about four thousand Rubies where they founded their school and their missionary hospital. He ascribed Zwemer's success in the last years to four reasons: 1) his high salary that exceeded 150 Rubies beside other donations from the United States; 2) the increase of the number of male and female missionaries in the region; 3) their exploitation of poor and needy Muslims in taking pictures for them as new converts in order to propagate their 'forged' success; and 4) their distribution of copies of Gospels for free among Muslims.<sup>122</sup>

The traveler also noted that young Arab natives ridiculed their religious work, and developed many criticisms of the Bible. Many times he prevented them from burning the distributed Gospel copies or throwing them in the sea. Common Muslims also used to sell their hard covers and use the paper leaves for making carton boxes for their daily use. He concluded that they handed out thousands of copies for free, which overloaded their societies with financial loss with no real result. Their circulation, on the contrary, would revive the Muslim awareness of the 'vulnerability' of their holy scriptures to criticism.<sup>123</sup>

In his comment, Riḍā maintained that the reason behind missionary publications was primarily to 'scorn' Islam, and to cast doubts on the Muslim faith as the first step towards 'Western peaceful conquest.' He demanded that Muslims should boycott their publications as a sign of defending their religion, and that all the books distributed by missionaries had to be destroyed. He encouraged them to replace these missionary writings with Muslim pamphlets and treatises in which a distinction was made between what he called the 'accurate' faith of Jesus and that 'doctrine of Paul.'<sup>124</sup>

When *al-Manār* published an anti-missionary article by al-Tannīr,<sup>125</sup> an unnamed Syrian friend of Riḍā criticised *al-Manār* for hurting the

---

<sup>122</sup> Ibid.

<sup>123</sup> Ibid.

<sup>124</sup> Ibid.

<sup>125</sup> Ṭāhir al-Tannīr, 'al-Radd al-Matīn 'alā Muftarāyāt al-Mubashshirīn,' *al-Manār*, vol. 17/2, pp. 138-147.

feelings of Christian compatriots by publishing such severe anti-Christian statements in its anti-missionary campaign.<sup>126</sup> It was al-Tannīr's phrase *al-Thālūth al-Zinā'ī al-Muqaddas* (the holy trinity of fornication), which disappointed Riḍā's friend. Riḍā maintained that he received the first draft of Tannīr's article under this title, which he immediately amended in order not to hurt the feelings of Christian fellow citizens. The same word was also repeated throughout the whole text. Riḍā maintained that he had deleted all of them because it was *imtihān* (an offense) for *iṣtilāḥāt muḥtaramah* (respected terms). Riḍā justified himself, saying that this phrase must have been forgotten by mistake during the printing process of this issue of *al-Manār*.<sup>127</sup> He also tried to validate his writings as it was his duty to stand against missionary attacks on Islam. He claimed that he never attempted to propagate his critiques of the Christian scriptures and beliefs in public. On the contrary, he was always preaching the significance of harmony among followers of religions in society.<sup>128</sup> Another critical point was that it was not Christian fellow citizens who attacked Islam, but American and British missionaries. Riḍā confirmed that missionary activity was 'more harmful in the Muslim world than brothels and gambling clubs.' Owners of such places would probably entice the Muslim to commit sins, but missionaries were trying to make him put down their religion entirely and to stir up animosity between Islam and Christianity.<sup>129</sup>

Elsewhere Riḍā firmly maintained that he would never stop defending his religion, so long as anti-Islamic writings on Islam continued. However, he did not mind if they preached their religion by demonstrating its merits, while not attacking other beliefs.<sup>130</sup> Riḍā argued that since most foreign missionaries had no good command of Arabic they hired Arab Christians for assisting them in publishing anti-Islamic literature in Arabic. He also added that 'Muslims should not stop defending their religion against attacks on the Qur'ān and the Prophet just for satisfying the feelings of Christian citizens.'<sup>131</sup>

In 1916, Riḍā published two articles as a refutation of an Arabic article written by Temple Gairdner in his periodical, *al-Sharq wā*

<sup>126</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 17/3, p. 188.

<sup>127</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 187.

<sup>128</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 189.

<sup>129</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 190.

<sup>130</sup> *Ibid.*; cf. his article, 'Al-'Islām wā al-Naṣrāniyya (Islam and Christianity),' vol. 23/4, pp. 267-272.

<sup>131</sup> *Ibid.*

*al-Gharb*. In this article, published in April 1916, the legal authority of Ḥadīth was broached.<sup>132</sup> This article was one of the routes through which the work of the Hungarian orientalist Ignaz Goldziher on Ḥadīth became known in Egypt.<sup>133</sup> Some months after his contribution to the Edinburgh World Missionary Conference (13-23 June, 1910) Gairdner decided to take a *Wanderjahr* in Europe.<sup>134</sup> The trip began in Germany in September, 1910, where he spent 'three months [...] for the purpose of learning enough German to give [him] access to the incomparable German literature on Islamic subjects.'<sup>135</sup> In his correspondence with Duncan Black Macdonald of the Hartford Theological Seminary, Gairdner stated that 'it would have been worth learning German only for the sake of [...] Goldziher's [...] perfect gold-mine.'<sup>136</sup> Gairdner voiced his skepticism of the authenticity of almost all Traditions ascribed to the Prophet. He maintained that the considerations he followed would give ample ground for suspecting the stability of the foundations of Islamic tradition, and consequently of the enormous superstructure which has been erected thereupon. In his view, if the unreliability of traditions is established, the Islamic system ought logically to be discarded.<sup>137</sup>

Many Muslims were disturbed by Gairdner's ideas, and urgently demanded Riḍā to publish his views on the issue. As usual Riḍā looked down on missionary methods of investigating Muslim sources. Missionaries, unlike philosophers, dealt with such questions not to reach the truth as such; but to cast doubts on other beliefs.<sup>138</sup> He added that if Gairdner's only reason was to convert Muslims, let him

---

<sup>132</sup> *Al-Sharq wā al-Gharb* firstly appeared in January 1905. About this magazine, see Padwick, *op. cit.*, p. 156ff; W.H.T. Gairdner, *D.M. Thornton: A Study in Missionary Ideals and Methods*, London, 1908, p. 207ff. For Riḍā's reply, 'al-Sunna wā Siḥḥatuhā wa al-Sharī'a wa Matānatuhā: Radd 'alā Du'āt Al-Naṣrāniyya bi Miṣr,' *al-Manār*, vol. 19 (Sha'bān & Ramaḍān, 1334/June & July, 1916), pp. 24-50 & pp. 97-109. Gairdner's article must have been a translation of the English article published by the same author in *The Moslem World* one year earlier. W.H.T. Gairdner, 'Mohammedan Tradition and Gospel Record: The Ḥadīth and the Injil,' *The Moslem World* 4/4, 1915, pp. 349-378 (Quoted below, 'Traditions').

<sup>133</sup> G.H.A. Juynboll, 'The 'Ulamā and Western Scholarship,' *Israel Oriental Studies* X, 1980, p. 178.

<sup>134</sup> Padwick, *op. cit.*, p. 198 ff.

<sup>135</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 201.

<sup>136</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 204. For more details about his contact with Macdonald, see for example, J. Jermain Bodine, 'Magic Carpet to Islam: Duncan Black Macdonald and the Arabian Nights,' *The Muslim World* LXVII, 1977, pp. 1-11.

<sup>137</sup> Gairdner, 'Tradition,' p. 363.

<sup>138</sup> Riḍā, 'Sunna,' p. 26.



rest assured that most of the Muslims who abandoned Islam would never become real Christians, but rather turn into 'atheists' or 'antagonists.' They mostly converted to Christianity due to their poverty and need for missionary financial support, unlike Western converts to Islam, who were in most cases the elite in Europe like the English Baron Lord Headley (to be discussed below).<sup>139</sup>

In 1921, an Arabic translation of one of Zwemer's articles in the Anglican magazine *Church Missionary Intelligencer* appeared in *al-Manār*. In that article, he maintained that Muslims had already started to 'welcome the Gospel.'<sup>140</sup> Zwemer argued that 'political troubles in the Near East were not due to economic factors or any political aspiration for autonomy, but rather to religious discontent among the people.'<sup>141</sup> Due to the change of their 'missiological' approaches, he was rather optimistic about the accessibility of Christianity in Egyptian villages and towns for missionary work. Although Islam did not recognise the Crucifixion of Jesus, there were reports about a responsive spirit among Muslims including teachers and students of Al-Azhar University. The missionary regional conference, held in Helwan at the outskirts of Cairo in the same year, agreed that there was 'a great and remarkable change [...] during the past few years in the attitude of Muslims.'<sup>142</sup> They also recommended 'establish[ing] contact with Al-Azhar students; one or more homes or settlements should be located in Al-Azhar neighbourhood with several resident workers, who would show hospitality, make friendships, and encourage free intercourse.'<sup>143</sup>

It is noteworthy to mention that Zwemer, later in 1926 and 1927, entered Al-Azhar and distributed missionary tracts among students, an incident that provoked the Egyptian public opinion.<sup>144</sup> Riḍā saw Zwemer's hope as a merely 'missionary wishful thinking.' The mis-

---

<sup>139</sup> Ibid.

<sup>140</sup> As quoted by Riḍā, *al-Manār*, 'Amānī al-Mubashshirīn aw Mukhada'tuhum lil-Mūsirīn (Missionaries' Wishful Thinking or their Deception of Rich [Christians],' vol. 22/4 (Rajab 1339/March 1921), pp. 313-314; cf. *al-Manār*, vol. 28/2, pp. 140-149.

<sup>141</sup> Ibid., p. 314.

<sup>142</sup> See, *The Conferences of Christian Workers among Moslems 1924*, New York: International Missionary Council, 1921, p. 79.

<sup>143</sup> Ibid., p. 80.

<sup>144</sup> For more, see, B. L. Carter, 'On Spreading the Gospel to Egyptians Sitting in Darkness: The Political Problem of Missionaries in Egypt in the 1930s,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 20/4, 1984, pp. 21-22; Bishrī, *op. cit.*, pp. 456-458; J. Christy Wilson 'The Epic of Samuel Zwemer,' *The Moslem World* XLII, 1953, pp. 89-90.



sonary writer by disseminating such reports intended to encourage zealous Christians in the West to raise more funds for their missionary plans.<sup>145</sup>

In 1923 a certain Muḥammad al-Rashīdī al-Ḥijāzī, a former member of the military in Berlin, published an article on the activity of the German Orient Mission (Deutsche-Orient Mission), which was founded by Pastor Johannes Lepsius (1858–1926), an eyewitness to the Armenian genocide.<sup>146</sup> While collecting information about Lepsius, Ḥijāzī came across the periodical of the mission, *Der christliche Orient* (1900), which he translated into Arabic for *al-Manār*'s readers under the title: 'Cunning Programmes of Mission among the Muḥammadans.'<sup>147</sup> He accused Lepsius of 'fanaticism' by having given a 'false testimony and fabrication' with regard to the genocide. Ḥijāzī laid emphasis on the contribution and biography of the Evangelical Armenian preacher Abraham Amirchanjanz, who was a born Muslim. Another convert named Johannes Awetarianian was also mentioned in the report of the issue.<sup>148</sup> Ḥijāzī summarised an item by Amirchanjanz in that issue on: 'Die Aufgabe der Mohammedaner-Mission.'<sup>149</sup> In his article, Amirchanjanz launched a severe attack on Islam:

'Islam is one of the most disastrous phenomena in human history. It is a mixture of truth and falsehood, and therefore more dangerous than the heathendom. This religion, taking over 200 million people, cannot be overcome easily. A carefully thought-out plan, like a military tactic, should be designed and performed well in attacking it.'<sup>150</sup>

<sup>145</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 22/4, p. 314.

<sup>146</sup> See, for example, *Deutschland und Armenien 1914-1918: Sammlung diplomatischer Aktenstücke*, Postdam (1919). His archives are to be found at the Martin Luther-University Halle-Wittenberg.

<sup>147</sup> *Der christliche Orient: Monatsschrift der deutschen Orient-Mission*, Berlin, 1900. Ḥijāzī, 'Ba'that Tanṣīr al-Maḥamaddiyyīn wā Barnāmaj Kaydihā lil-'Islām wā al-Muslimīn (Christian Missions [among] Mohammedans, and their cunning programmes for Islam and Muslims),' vol. 24/10 (Rabī' al-'Awwal 1342/November 1923), pp. 785-795. Among Riḍā's papers I have found a booklet of *Kunstblätter* from Berlin signed as a gift to Riḍā on 4 August 1923, a couple of months before the publication of his article in *al-Manār*. As is indicated in a letter sent to Riḍā (12 September 1923), Ḥijāzī was probably an Egyptian former military stationed in North Africa during the Great War. He tried to publish many articles in *al-Manār*, but his contributions were not suitable for the journal's interests. He also had contact with other Egyptian journals, and managed to publish a few contributions.

<sup>148</sup> See, Johannes Awetarianian, *Geschichte eines Mohammedaners der Christ wurde: Die Geschichte des Johannes Awetarianian. Von ihm selbst erzählt*. Potsdam: Nach seinem Tode ergänzt von Richard Schäfer, 1930.

<sup>149</sup> *Der christliche Orient*, op. cit., pp. 84-88.

<sup>150</sup> As quoted in, Ḥijāzī, op. cit., p. 788. Compare the German text: 'Der Islam ist eine der verhängnisvollsten Erscheinungen in der Menschengeschichte. Er ist ein

In his conclusion, Hījāzī expressed his frustration in the negligence of Muslim governments to such ‘conplots,’ which were espoused with colonial plans. He again asked Muslim scholars to learn European languages in order to refute the views of missionaries on Islam. By doing so, they would also have the chance to be the ‘delegates’ of Islam in the West.<sup>151</sup> Riḍā confirmed the author’s words by stating that he himself had been frustrated by the failure of Muslim political and religious leaders to support him in his struggle against missions for more than thirty years.<sup>152</sup>

### 3.6. *A Muslim Missionary Seminary*

As reaction to missionary work, Riḍā formed his short-lived project Jam‘iyyat (or Dār) al-Da‘wa wā al-’Irshād, which has been mentioned in many places above. It was founded in Cairo in 1912 as a well-structured private Muslim seminary. The idea of such a society first occurred to him when he was a student in Syria, where he used to frequent and read the literature provided by the American missionaries in that city, and he wished that Muslims could have similar societies and schools.<sup>153</sup>

Conversion of Muslims in Cyprus, for example, greatly saddened him as well. He attributed that to their being ill-informed about their religion due to the lack of Muslim propaganda. Christian missions were more successful in propagating their faith into the native languages, and in a way suiting the mentality of the indigenous inhabitants. As was his habit, Riḍā strongly stressed the obligation of Muslims to raise funds to start missionary centres in order to train young propagators of Islam.<sup>154</sup>

During his visit to Turkey in 1909, Riḍā managed to raise funds for his seminary from the Supreme Porte. The Egyptian Ministry of Religious Endowments was also prepared to participate in funding

---

Gemisch von Wahrheit und Lüge, und darum gefährlicher als das Heidentum. Diese 200-millionenköpfige Religion kann nicht so leicht überwunden werden. Ein wohlbedachtes [...] des Angriffs mit genauester militärischer Taktik muss entworfen und gut ausgeführt werden.’ *Ibid.*, p. 84.

<sup>151</sup> Hījāzī, *ibid.*, p. 789.

<sup>152</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>153</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/1, p. 42; cf. Adams, *op. cit.*, p. 196.

<sup>154</sup> *Al-Manār*, ‘Tanṣīr al-Muslimīn fī Qubruṣ (Christianization of Muslims in Cyprus),’ vol. 9/3, pp. 233-34.

the school with a contribution of four thousand Egyptian pounds a year.<sup>155</sup> The project was dependent too on gifts and donations from rich Muslims. During his visit in Egypt in 1911, Sheikh Qāsim Ibn 'Āl 'Ibrāhīm, a wealthy Arab merchant in Bombay and a senior honorary member of the board of the Da'wa school, made a contribution of two thousand pounds, and a yearly donation of a hundred pounds. In March 1911, Prince Muḥammad 'Alī Pashā, the brother of the Egyptian Khedive, was selected as its honorary president.<sup>156</sup> 'Abbās Hilmī, the Khedive of Egypt, also supported Riḍā's missionary plan by paying an official visit to the school, and meeting with the staff and students in May 1914.<sup>157</sup>

Riḍā's society took the shape of a boarding school, which was primarily an endeavour to train two groups of people: the *murshids* (guides), who would function within the Muslim community by combating religious deviation, and the *du'āh* (propagators) who would convey the Islamic mission to non-Muslims and defend Islam against missionary attacks. Riḍā included in the educational program modern subjects such as international law, psychology, sociology, biology, introductory mathematics, geography and economics. He also introduced the study of the Bible and the history of the Church. In the curriculum he proposed for the category of *murshids* to choose a well-circulated missionary treatise on Islam for study in order to enable them to defend Islam against missionary allegations, especially in the minds of common Muslims. Such allegations were to be collected, well studied, and debated among the future *murshids*.<sup>158</sup> We have already mentioned that Ṣidqī was appointed as a teacher at the school, where he taught the students scientific and medical subjects as well as his views on Christianity which he already crystallised in his polemics in *al-Manār*.

It was also intended to recruit qualified Muslim students from all over the world, especially from poor regions such as China or Indonesia. The school provided students with accommodation, books and costs of living. Students were supposed to live strictly according to Islamic values. Those who would 'commit sins' had to be sent

<sup>155</sup> Draft of letter from Riḍā to the Prime Minister Ḥusayn Rushdī, 13 January 1918, Riḍā's private archive in Cairo.

<sup>156</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/3, pp. 191-196; archival documents relevant to the organisation of the school; about other contributors, see, *al-Manār*, vol. 14/6, p. 480.

<sup>157</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 17/6, pp. 461-468.

<sup>158</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/11, pp. 811-812.

away.<sup>159</sup> Although the school had to close down after the First World War, it had counted amongst its graduates well-known leaders, such as Amīn al-Ḥusaynī, the prominent Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, Sheikh Yusūf Yāsīn, the prominent Saudi official and private secretary of the Saudi Royal Family, and other leaders of thought in India, Malaysia and Egypt.<sup>160</sup>

In order to update the students about the developments of missionary work, one of Riḍā's friends in the Sudan sent *al-Manār* a detailed report. In his account, he confirmed that schooling was the most significant way of disseminating Christian religious ideas. Missionary schools provided families of their students with needed materials, such as corn, clothes, jewellery, and medication. Social work was also one of their priorities. For example, students were trained in a variety of professions, such as manufacturing, commerce and agriculture. They also established beehives in the European style in order to benefit the local population.<sup>161</sup>

Riḍā's missionary effort was hotly contested. Members of the Egyptian Nationalist Party opposed his establishing of the Da'wa School. They considered it as a 'futile and far-fetched' missionary project with no prospect. English or Dutch colonial authorities in such lands as Indonesia and the Sudan would never give the graduates of his school the opportunity to propagate Islam there. However, Riḍā was confident that his missionary graduates would be given a good chance in these colonies. If not, they would be capable of propagating Islam in other countries, such as China and Japan.<sup>162</sup>

Sheikh 'Abd al-'Azīz Jāwīsh (1876-1929), the editor-in-chief of the National Party mouthpiece, accused Riḍā's school of being an underground organisation working on demolishing the Ottoman State and separating the Arabs from the Turks by appointing an Arab Caliph. Riḍā vigorously denied such charges.<sup>163</sup> He moreover sent the prospectus of his school to the editors of Gairdner's *al-Sharq wā al-Gharb*,

<sup>159</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/1, p. 52.

<sup>160</sup> Zaki Badawi, *The Reformers of Egypt*, London: Croom Helm, pp. 116-117.

<sup>161</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Mudhakkira 'an 'A'māl al-Mubashshirin fī al-Sudān (A report on missionary work in Sudan),' vol. 14/4 (Rabī' al-Akhar 1329/April 1911), pp. 311-313.

<sup>162</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Madrasat al-Tabshīr al-'Islāmī (Islamic Missionary School),' vol. 14/2, pp. 121-134. In his response to Jāwīsh's attack on his project, Riḍā cited many articles which praised his efforts from various newspapers in Turkey, Beirut, India and Egypt.

<sup>163</sup> *Ibid.*

which he considered then as 'the most decent among missionary papers.'<sup>164</sup> Riḍā considered their feedback more reasonable than that of these Muslim nationalists, such as Jāwīsh. In their comment, the missionary periodical was positive about the school because of its non-interference in politics.<sup>165</sup>

Riḍā, however, had no more funds from Turkey, and his project was consequently suspended. The reason was possibly Riḍā's sympathy and activism for Syrian Arab nationalism.<sup>166</sup> According to Riḍā, 'plots' of British authorities and Bahā'ī groups in Egypt were behind closing down his seminary.<sup>167</sup> He attempted to revive his project by appealing to the Egyptian Ministry of Religious Endowments to resume its funding to the school, but he failed.<sup>168</sup>

In 1931, Riḍā himself was requested by Al-Azhar to give advice about the establishment of its new department of *al-Wa'z wā al-'Irshād* (Preaching and Guidance). In the same year, he made a similar attempt during the General Islamic Congress in Jerusalem, when he was nominated as a chairman of its (sub)Committee of Guidance and Preaching. In that congress, a report on missionary work in the Muslim world was read before the attendants.<sup>169</sup> Through this committee he tried to revive his seminary project by presenting his suggestions to constitute a society under the same name in Jerusalem.<sup>170</sup> The society could have its own college as committed to train Muslim preachers. He also suggested that the congress should take speedy measures against Christian missionary activities by promoting Islamic education, encouraging the publication of works in different languages countering missionary doctrines, and circulating them for free in all Muslim countries. Among the works he suggested were of the

<sup>164</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 14/3, pp. 239-240.

<sup>165</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 240.

<sup>166</sup> Jacob M. Landau, *The Politics of Pan-Islam: Ideology and Organization*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1990, pp. 125-126.

<sup>167</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 24/7 (Dhū al-Qi'da 1341/July 1923), p. 559.

<sup>168</sup> Draft letter to Rushdī, *op. cit.*

<sup>169</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 32/3, pp. 200-202; for more about the congress, see, H. R. A. Gibb, 'The Islamic Congress at Jerusalem in December 1931,' in Arnold Toynbee, *Survey of international affairs 1934*, London, 1935, pp. 99-109; Uri M. Kupferschmidt, 'The General Muslim Congress of 1931 in Jerusalem,' *Asian and African Studies* 21/1, 1978, pp. 123-162; Martin Kramer, *Islam Assembled, the Advent of the Muslim Congresses*, New York: Colombia University Press, 1986, pp. 1931-1931; Weldon C. Matthews, 'Pan-Islam or Arab Nationalism? The meaning of the 1931 Jerusalem Islamic Congress reconsidered,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 35, 2003, pp. 1-22.

<sup>170</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 32/4 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1350/April 1932), p. 284.

late Şidqī on Christianity. The congress should also entrust a group of qualified scholars to write treatises refuting ‘atheism,’ and promoting Muslim brotherhood. These works should also contain responses to missionary ‘allegations’ on Islam.<sup>171</sup>

### 3.7. Conversion to Islam versus Evangelisation

Riḍā’s ambitions of establishing Islamic missionary institutions were also expressed in his support for the conversion of non-Muslims to Islam. After its victory in the war against Russia (1904), Japan, for instance, was held in the Muslim world as an example to be followed and was seen as a prospective place for Islamic propagation.<sup>172</sup> Even before its victory, the Egyptian nationalist Muşţafā Kāmil wrote a monograph in which he catalogued the history of Japan and predicted the defeat of Russia. His treatise proved to be popular, and attracted so much attention that it was translated into Malay by a group of Muslim reformers in Singapore who had strong educational connections with Cairo. Due to its political success,

<sup>171</sup> Ibid., pp. 203-209. When Riḍā read his proposals before the Congress (Sha‘bān 1350/December 1931), Sheikh Sa‘īd Darwish, an anti-Wahhābī participant from Aleppo, openly opposed Riḍā’s proposals, and described him as ‘tyrannical’ president who did not give others their chance to utter their views. Other participants tried to calm the intense situation down by delivering speeches on the significance of Muslim unity and brotherhood. Cf. Uri M. Kupferschmidt, *The Supreme Muslim Council: Islam under the British Mandate for Palestine*, Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1987, p. 213.

<sup>172</sup> The idea of preaching Islam in Japan started as early as 1889, when the Turkish naval frigate Ertugrul sailed for Japan on the orders of Sultan Abdülhamid II, see, *al-Manār*, ‘Da‘wat al-Yāpān ‘ilā al-‘Islām (Inviting Japan to Islam),’ vol. 8/18 (Ramaḍān 1323/13 November 1905), pp. 705. The Egyptian ‘Alī Aḥmad al-Jirjāwī, the founder of *al-‘Irshād* paper, was one of the early Muslims, who resolved to travel to Japan propagate Islam during the Second World Congress of Religions in Tokyo (1907). See his travelogue to Japan (1908), *al-Rihla al-Yābāniyya* (The Japanese Journey); Michael F. Laffan, ‘Making Meiji Muslims: The Travelogue of ‘Alī Aḥmad al-Jarjāwī,’ *East Asian History* 22, 2001, pp. 145-170.

For more details, see, Muşţafā Kāmil, *al-Shams al-Mushriqa*, Cairo: al-Liwā’, 1904; Michael Laffan, ‘Waṭan and negeri: Muşţafā Kāmil’s ‘Rising Sun’ in the Malay World,’ *Indonesia Circle* 69, 1996, pp. 156-75; id. ‘Muşţafā and the Mikado: a Francophile Egyptian’s turn to Meiji Japan,’ *Japanese Studies* 19/3, 1999, pp. 269-86. About Islam and Japan, see, Yuzo Itagaki, ‘Reception of different cultures: the Islamic civilisation and Japan,’ *The Islamic World and Japan: in pursuit of mutual understanding: International Symposium on Islamic Civilization and Japan*, Tokyo: The Japan Foundation, series 6, 1981, pp. 139-149; Bushra Anis, ‘The Emergence of Islam and the Status of Muslim Minority in Japan,’ *Journal of Muslim Minority Affairs* 18/2, 1998, pp. 329-346.

Tokyo was also seen be 'the *qibla* of Muslims in the Far East just as the Sublime Porte was to the Muslims in the Near East.'<sup>173</sup>

In face of the Christian expansion in the Orient, Riḍā hailed the need for sending Muslim missions to Japan as well.<sup>174</sup> He criticised Muslims for rushing to advocate the idea without taking into consideration the lack of financial resources and qualified candidates to carry out such a mission. Politics, in his view, were the reason behind the hope of Muslims for converting Japan to Islam. He believed that the Japanese people were only ready to accept a religion which is compatible with science and civilisation. The lack of capable Muslim scholars would be an obstacle in the face of propagating Islam in a developed country like Japan. A group of rich Muslims approached Riḍā to sponsor a missionary association for taking up this task. But the committee was very short-lived and unsuccessfully stopped all its work for no specific reason.<sup>175</sup> When the Japan Congress of Religions was announced (1907), Riḍā suggested to the Supreme Porte to delegate Muslim representatives, who had a vast knowledge of Islamic history and philosophy and a good knowledge of other world religions, such as Buddhism, Judaism and Christianity.<sup>176</sup>

Riḍā repeatedly used the conversion of European Christians to Islam as an argument for the expansion of Islam, despite the fact that Muslims, unlike Christians, had no organised missionary enterprise. In December 1913, he published at length the story of the conversion of the well-known Muslim fifth Baron Lord Headley (1855-1935), which drew the attention of the British public to Islam as a faith.<sup>177</sup>

<sup>173</sup> Laffan, *op. cit.*, p. 168.

<sup>174</sup> See his articles in *al-Manār*, 'Da'wat al-Yapān 'ilā al-'Islām,' vol. 8/18, pp. 705-712; vol. 9/1 (Muḥarram 1324/February 1906), pp. 75-78.

<sup>175</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Mu'tamar al-Adyān fī al-Yabān (Congress of Religions in Japan), vol. 9/4 (Rabī' al-Akhar 1324/24 May 1906), pp. 317-19.

<sup>176</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Al-Dawla wā Mu'tamar al-'Adyān fī al-Yabān' (The State and the Congress of Religions in Japan), vol. 9/6 (Jumadā al-Thāniya 1324/23 July 1906), p. 480. A photo in Riḍā's archive of showing the gathering of the Islamic Society with Japanese notables in the Council of the Qur'ān and Dissimination of the Religion Islam in Tokyo (dates to July 1934) would indicate his aspiration in the spread of Islam in Japan, even shortly before his death (see, appendix M).

<sup>177</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Islām al-Lord Headley wā mā qālahū wā katabahū fī Sababih (The conversion of Lord Headley: What he said and wrote about its reason),' vol. 17/1 (Muḥarram 1332/December 1913), pp. 34-40. See, Ali Köse, *Conversion to Islam: A Study of Native British Converts*. London and New York, 1996, pp. 14-18; cf. L. Tibawi, 'History of the London Central Mosque and the Islamic Cultural Centre 1910-1980,' *Die Welt des Islams* 1/4, 1981, pp. 193-208; James Thayer Addison, 'The Aḥmadiya



Riḍā hailed the conversion of Headley, even though he knew that he was a convert to Islam through the Lahore Aḥmadiyya sect.<sup>178</sup>

*Al-Manār* quoted some interviews which Headley gave to British weeklies after he embraced Islam in November 1913.<sup>179</sup> Headley later developed some his ideas of these interviews in his book, *A Western Awakening to Islam*.<sup>180</sup> In this book, he criticised ‘zealous Protestants who have thought it their duty to visit Roman Catholic homes in order to make ‘converts’ of the inmates. Such irritating and unneighbourly conduct is of course, very obnoxious, and has invariably led to much ill-feeling—stirring up strife and tending to bring religion into contempt. I am sorry to think that Christian missionaries have also tried these methods with their Muslim brethren, though why they should try to convert those who are already better Christians than they are themselves [...] Charity, tolerance and broadmindedness in the Muslim faith comes nearer to what Christ himself taught.’<sup>181</sup> Riḍā proudly confirmed Headley’s statements and added that political and sectarian conflicts and superstitions among Muslims on the one hand, and the ill-information presented in the West on Islam on the other, represent a big obstacle for Europeans to embrace Islam.<sup>182</sup>

Followed by Khwaja Kamal-ud-Din, the founder of the Woking Muslim Mission in London,<sup>183</sup> Headley went on Hajj in 1923. On their way, reception committees were formed in Port Said, Alexandria and Cairo, and Headley became the object of marked attention of the press in the country. Riḍā himself was not able to meet Headley personally during his stop in Egypt, but he again quoted his conversion

---

Movement and Its Western Propaganda,’ *Harvard Theological Review* 22/1, 1929, pp. 1-32.

<sup>178</sup> About some of Riḍā’s reactions to the Aḥmadiyya and the translation of Maulana Muḥammad ‘Ali of the Qur’ān, see, Nur Ichwan, M., ‘Response of the Reformist Muslims to Muḥammad ‘Ali’s Translation and Commentary of the Qur’ān in Egypt and Indonesia: A study of Muḥammad Rashid Riḍā’s Fatwa,’ Unpublished paper submitted to the Seminar ‘Islam and the West: Their Mutual Relation as Reflected in Fatwa Literature,’ Leiden, 1998.

<sup>179</sup> Riḍā quoted *The Daily Mail* (17 November 1913) and the weekly *The Observer* (23 November 1913).

<sup>180</sup> Lord Headley, *A Western Awakening to Islam*, London: J.S. Philips, 1915. A softcopy of the work is available at: [www.aaail.org](http://www.aaail.org), which Riḍā reviewed in 1925 in his journal as a challenge to atheists and missionaries, vol. 26/1 (Ramaḍān 1343/April 1925), pp. 60-64.

<sup>181</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 13.

<sup>182</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 17/1, pp. 39-40.

<sup>183</sup> About Riḍā’s views of Kamal-ud-Dīn, see, *al-Manār*, vol. 33/2 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1351/April 1933), pp. 138-141.



story in an interview with the Egyptian newspaper *al-Siyāsa* (Politics).<sup>184</sup> In his comment, Riḍā again expressed his wish that ‘if a group of knowledgeable Muslim missionaries would arise in England and the United States in order to uncover the swindle of politicians and [...] missionaries, who have caused enmity and animosity between Islam and Europe, the people of the two countries would embrace Islam in droves.’<sup>185</sup>

### 3.8. *Al-Azhar Criticised*

Riḍā always took pride in his journal as one of the few Muslim journals of his time that concerned themselves with defending Islam against missionary work.<sup>186</sup> His statements always carried the tone of criticism to religious official bodies, such as Al-Azhar scholars, for their leniency. In 1913, he made an observation on the intensification of missionary work even among the students of Al-Azhar.<sup>187</sup> He also criticised those students for their feeble knowledge of Islam, confirming that the curricula they were learning during their long schooling were not helpful enough to assist them to defend Islam. He expressed his worries that without establishing solid knowledge of Islam through renewing the teachings of Al-Azhar, some of those students would probably convert to Christianity and abandon their religion. Missionaries would therefore use that as a pretext to prove that the greatest religious institution had failed to refute the ‘allegations’ of Christianity. In order to enable them to achieve this task, Riḍā suggested two things: 1) the whole curriculum of *‘Ilm al-Kalām* (Sciences of Islamic Theology) should be changed, and 2) to appoint a leader to each group of students who would investigate their conditions. The board should prohibit them from attending missionary meetings, and any student who contacted them without permission should be dismissed. An exception could be made for

<sup>184</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 24/7, pp. 555-559.

<sup>185</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 559. In 1928, Riḍā published Headley’s critique of missionary writings on the Prophet of Islam, see, vol. 29/5 (Rabī‘ al-‘Awwal 1347/September 1928), p. 344-351.

<sup>186</sup> *Al-Manār*, ‘A‘dā’ al-‘Islām al-Muḥāribūn lahū fī Hādhā al-‘Ahd (The Combatting Enemies of Islam in this Age),’ vol. 29/2, pp. 115-117

<sup>187</sup> *Al-Manār*, ‘Al-Azhar wā Du‘āt al-Naṣrāniyya (Al-Azhar and Missionaries),’ vol. 16/11 (Dhū al-Qi‘da 1331/October 1913), p. 878.

brilliant students, who would visit their meetings with the purpose of informing their colleagues about their activities.<sup>188</sup>

After the appearance of the first issue of the mouthpiece of Al-Azhar, *Majallat Nūr al-'Islām* (The Light of Islam, 1930), Riḍā commended it in his journal, wishing that the magazine would take the place of his *Manār* in propagating the Islamic values and fighting against the increase of missionary attempts among Muslims.<sup>189</sup> But Riḍā soon expressed his disappointment with the lax position taken by Al-Azhar and the Corps of its High 'Ulamā in that regard. His critique coincided with the anti-missionary press campaign against the observable increase of missionary work in Egypt that culminated during the period 1931-1933 with the coming of the unpopular and undemocratic regime of Ṣidqī Pasha. The Egyptian government and official religious leaders (represented by Al-Azhar scholars) were heavily criticised for their weak reactions against missionary activities in the country.<sup>190</sup>

In his criticism, Riḍā claimed that although the Egyptian press was immensely preoccupied by the news of missionary events in the country, the Al-Azhar scholars, who were supposed to be the religious leaders of the community, had not taken a proper stance against missionary attacks on Islam. He strongly accused the institution and its then rector, the conservative Sheikh al-Aḥmadī al-Zawāhirī (1878-1944), of 'making a poor defense against unbelief and the attacks of the Christian West.'<sup>191</sup> Al-Zawāhirī had a conflict at that time with the reform-minded Azhari scholar Sheikh Muṣṭafā al-Marāghī (1881-1945),<sup>192</sup> who was a good friend of Riḍā and a disciple of Muḥammad 'Abduh as well. The newspaper *al-Siyāsa*, the voice of the Liberal Constitutionalist Party, accused Al-Azhar scholars of immersing

<sup>188</sup> Ibid., p. 878.

<sup>189</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 31/2 (Rabi' al-'Awwal 1349/24 August 1930), p. 155, cf. Riḍā's *Azhar*, p. 15; 'Abdullāh al-Najdī al-Qusaimī, *Shuyūkh Al-Azhar wā al-Ziyāda fī al-'Islām*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1351 AH, pp. 12-13.

<sup>190</sup> Carter, *op. cit.*, pp. 21-22.

<sup>191</sup> Creelius, *op. cit.*, p. 314.

<sup>192</sup> More about his life, see, Anwar al-Jundī, *al-Imām al-Marāghī* (Cairo, 1952). Muḥammad 'Izzat al-Tahtāwī, 'Muḥammad Muṣṭafā al-Marāghī,' *Al-Azhar Magazine* (1414/1993), pp. 715-722; Jakob Skovgaard-Petersen, *Defining Islam for the Egyptian State: Muftis and Fatwas of Dār al-Iftā*, Leiden : E. J. Brill, 1997, pp. 152-53 (Quoted below, *Defining*). When al-Marāghī took the office for the second time in 1935, the name of the mouthpiece of Al-Azhar Sheikhdōm was changed into *Majallat Al-Azhar*, which is still being published in Cairo under the same title.

themselves in ritual matters, and turning their back against the Christian proselytisation of Muslims.<sup>193</sup>

In 1931 the above-mentioned Sheikh Yūsuf al-Dijwī (see chapter 1),<sup>194</sup> became Riḍā's greatest opponent in his polemic with Al-Azhar. The debate between both Riḍā and Dijwī around many religious issues became very intense and serious, and later developed into hostility and serious friction between the two men. They exchanged insults, and Dijwī accused Riḍā of unbelief.<sup>195</sup> Al-Dijwī now recalled Riḍā's *fatwā* for the students of the American Protestant College in Beirut (mentioned above), which he interpreted as allegedly allowing Muslim students to attend Christian prayers.<sup>196</sup> According to him, Riḍā forgot that his permission 'would implant Christian rituals in the pure hearts [of Muslim students], and engrave what they would hear from missionaries and priests in their naïve minds.'<sup>197</sup>

By 1933 the anti-missionary press campaign reached its climax. Missionaries were charged with using methods, such as hypnotism, torture, bribery and jobs, enticing children by sweets, kidnapping, adoption of babies, abusing the prophet Muḥammad, burning the Qur'ān and using it as toilet paper.<sup>198</sup> As a result of the pressing need of public opinion, Al-Azhar High Corps of 'Ulamā convened two consequent meetings (26 June, and 17 July, 1933) to discuss the matter.<sup>199</sup> In one of their manifestos Al-Azhar 'Ulamā requested the

---

<sup>193</sup> See, Charles D. Smith, *Islam and the Search for Social Order in Modern Egypt: A Biography of Muḥammad Husayn Haykal*, New York: Sunny Press, 1984, pp. 112-113.

<sup>194</sup> About al-Dijwī, see, *Ziriklī, op. cit.*, vol. 8, pp. 216-217. Sheikh al-Dijwī is the author of *Rasā'il Al-Salām wā Rusul Al-'Islām* (Epistles of Peace and Apostle of Islam), Cairo: Al-Nahḍah Press, n. d.; the English text of the book is also included the supplement of *Nour El-Islam Review (Al-Azhar Magazine)*, vols. 2-3, 1350-51/1932-33. It contains arguments of defense of Islam, and was originally written as guidelines of the Islamic faith for American converts to Islam.

<sup>195</sup> Crecelius, *op. cit.*, pp. 314-15.

<sup>196</sup> Dijwī also gave a number of *fatwās* attacking the Wahhābi Kingdom in Saudi Arabia. Skovgaard-Petersen, *op. cit.*, pp. 152-53.

<sup>197</sup> Dijwī, 'Sāhib,' p. 337. Some other Azharīs had earlier pleaded that a committee from Al-Azhar should be established to study Riḍā's views and give the government its advice to close down *al-Manār*. See, *al-Manār*, vol. 20/1, pp. 6-7

<sup>198</sup> 'Current Events: The anti-missionary Campaign in Egypt,' *The Muslim World* 24, 1934, pp. 84-86; 'Contro l'attività dei Missionari protestanti in Egitto,' *Oriente Moderno* 13/7, 1933, pp. 373-375.

<sup>199</sup> See, Umar Ryad, 'Muslim Response to Missionary Activities in Egypt: With a Special Reference to the Al-Azhar High Corps of 'Ulamā (1925-1935),' in Heleen Murre-van Den Berg, ed., *New Faith in Ancient Lands: Western Missions in the Mid-*

government to prescribe strict laws in order to root missionaries out of Egypt. Riḍā believed that this demand was ‘peculiar and unreasonable.’ The government would never accept it. He also wondered how the committee could ‘entrust the Sheikh of Al-Azhar to carry out the suggestion, while he was following the government in its shade.’<sup>200</sup>

Riḍā, on the other hand, joined Jam‘iyyat al-Difā‘ ‘an al-’Islām (the Committee of the Defense of Islam), held in Jam‘iyyat al-Shubbān al-Muslimūn (Young Men’s Muslim Association) in Cairo and attended by more than 400 scholars. The Committee was headed by al-Zawāhirī’s opponent al-Marāghī, and gained a wider popularity than Al-Azhar. It included many influential figures, such as Muḥammad Ḥusayn Haykal, the editor of *al-Siyāsa* and Ḥasan al-Bannā. In one of its reports, the British Residency noted that al-Zawāhirī and many other scholars felt that their role as the ‘public defenders’ of Islam was being undermined by al-Marāghī. The British Residency also intimidated the King by stating that the British had the right to protect foreigners in Egypt and could well be pressed by other foreign governments to take action. As a result, the government forbade anti-missionary gatherings including the meetings of the Committee for the Defense of Islam. The High Corps of ‘Ulamā was the only organisation which could safely continue the work of collecting donations.<sup>201</sup>

In the propositions of the meetings, the members passed some recommendations to be carried out by Marāghī’s Committee: 1) to submit a petition to King Fu’ād about missionary activities, stressing the importance of diminishing the missionary attacks against Islam and the Muslim community; 2) to send another similar petition to the Egyptian government, asking them to take strict decisions towards the ‘illegal’ missionary work; 3) to send messages to the ministers plenipotentiary, to attract their attention to the danger and consequences of missionary activities and asking them to use their influence to stop the missionary arguments against Islam and Muslims; 4) to publish a public announcement to the whole Muslim community, warning people against the enrolment of their children in missionary

---

*dle East in the Nineteenth and Early Twentieth Centuries*, E. J. Brill, 2006, pp. 281-307 (Quoted below, “Ulamā”).

<sup>200</sup> ‘Muqāwamat al-Mubashshirīn wā Takhādhul al-Muslimīn (Resisting missionaries and the laxity of Muslims),’ *al-Manār*, vol. 33/4 (Rabī‘ al-’Awwal 1352/June 1933), p. 312.

<sup>201</sup> Carter, *op. cit.*, p. 28.

schools, as well as against entering their hospitals and orphanages; 5) to appeal for public subscription in order to establish Muslim institutions instead of that of missionary institutions; 6) to establish a committee, consisting of Muslim scholars and writers for Islamic propaganda and publications; 7) to write messages to the Christian Patriarchs, stating that the resistance is only directed against missionary attacks on Islam, and that the Committee is keen on maintaining a good relationship between Muslims and other religious groups living in the same country on the basis of the national mutual understanding.<sup>202</sup> Riḍā believed that the resolutions of the Committee came as a ‘thunderbolt on the heads of the [Western] governments which protected these missionary organisations.’<sup>203</sup>

### 3.9. Conclusion

We have studied *al-Manār*'s anti-missionary responses on different levels. *Al-Manār* placed particular emphasis upon the necessity of counteracting their activities through establishing similar schools that could provide instruction in the doctrines of Islam. Its anti-Christian polemics were also ‘an apologetic directed towards Muslim doubters.’<sup>204</sup>

Riḍā remained firm in his conviction of the espousal between Christian mission and colonialism. In the beginning, however, he was ready to criticise any ‘overzealous and fanatic’ reactions against missionaries, while considering his own writings as purely defensive. The political and religious changes of the Muslim world had a major impact on the change of this calm tone. He became frustrated by the protection given to missionaries under the Capitulatory System. He regularly contrasted their freedom with the restrictions imposed upon him not to write against them. He was also convinced that there was a missionary attempt to intervene in order to close down his journal by approaching Lord Kitchener. He felt that this ‘collaboration’ endangered his career and diminished his role as a Muslim scholar in defending Islam.

The diversity of missionary movements and their different religious and political backgrounds sometimes caused Riḍā's response to be undecided. However, he clearly differentiated between what he called

<sup>202</sup> Ryad, ‘Ulamā’, pp. 305-306.

<sup>203</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 33/4, p. 313.

<sup>204</sup> H. A. R. Gibb, *Modern Trends in Islam*, Chicago, 1947, p. 53.

‘paid preachers’ and ‘wise and virtuous Christians.’ The first category always depended on their salaries from missionary societies, seeking discord, attacking Islam and many times falsifying the facts about the number of converts among Muslims in order to gain more funds from their mother institutions in the West. The second group were those who had real zealotry for their faith, and were working for the good of all, such as the Danish missionary Alfred Nielsen (discussed below).

Regarding the influence of missionary schools, his views were not decisive either. He neither fully allowed Muslims to enter such schools, nor wanted them to abandon them entirely. In fact, he was inclined to recommend Muslims by way of selective borrowing from the West to make use of the scientific advances of such schools, while keeping the strength of Islamic traditions. Apparently, he was anxious as to the ramifications of their establishment in the Muslim society, and feared that they would produce an antagonistic generation among Muslims. When Riḍā tried to make a balance by permitting enthusiastic Muslims to enroll their children in such schools for a better future, while firmly observing their articles of faith, some of Al-Azhar scholars led by al-Dijwī exploited his views in enflaming their polemics against him.

## CHAPTER FOUR

### FALSE ALLEGATIONS OR PROOFS? RIḌĀ'S FORMATIVE POLEMICS ON CHRISTIANITY

In his annotated translation of Riḏā's above-mentioned monograph, *Shubuhāt*, Simon Wood argues that Riḏā's specific wording of the title of his earliest work on Christianity as *Shubuhāt al-Naṣārā wā Ḥujaj al-'Islām* (Allegations of Christians and Proofs of Islam) was carefully chosen. It was no accident, Wood says, that the book was not entitled *Shubuhāt al-Naṣārā wā Ḥujaj al-Muslimīn* (The Criticisms of the Christians and the arguments of Muslims) or *Shubuhāt al-Naṣrāniyya wā Ḥujaj al-'Islām* (the Obscurities of Christianity and the Clear Proof of Islam). Wood does not give any reason why he has given three different English translations for the two keywords, *Shubuhāt* and *Ḥujaj* as appearing in Riḏā's title. He further thinks that Riḏā's 'title reflected his understanding of an ideal or ultimate Christianity that was not opposed to Islam. Ideal Christianity, however, was not that represented by European missionaries or their local allies. In that sense, Riḏā felt that the majority of his contemporary Muslims had become an argument against their own religion.'<sup>1</sup>

Wood's argument is true when looking at how Riḏā understood the Christian Scriptures as a whole and their relation to Islam. But his analysis of Riḏā's wording of the title is far-fetched and not convincing. Wood has only depended on Riḏā's monograph bearing this title, but nowhere mentioned that it was a collection of sixteen articles that had appeared earlier as a special section in a number of issues that Riḏā had compiled a few years later in a small volume. As a matter of fact, and in contradiction to Wood's argument, Riḏā headed eleven of these articles in *al-Manār* with the phrase, *Shubuhāt al-Masīhiyyīn* (sometimes *al-Naṣārā*) *wā Ḥujaj al-Muslimīn* (The Allegations of the Christians and the Proofs of Muslims).<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 40.

<sup>2</sup> See, vol. 4/15, vol. 4/16, vol. 4/17, vol. 4/19, vol. 5/19, vol. 6/6, vol. 6/7, vol. 6/8, vol. 6/9, vol. 6/11, vol. 6/12.

As it was his initial work on the subject, Riḍā's *Shubuhāt* only represents, as I shall show in the coming chapters, a formative phase of its author's views on Christian belief. Drawing a final conclusion on the basis of Riḍā's whole understanding of Christianity and his polemics with his Christian counterparts as a result of studying only this book would be misleading. The work itself should be evaluated in the light of Riḍā's subsequent writings in the historical context mentioned above. Besides, Riḍā published these articles from time to time as a response to a variety of Christian Arab missionaries, roughly between 1901-1904. In that period Western missionary literature in Arabic was not very widespread among Muslims. As we shall see, this treatise was a rather unsystematic book, sometimes of an inconsistent and rhetorical style.

In the present chapter, we will discuss Riḍā's responses as he selected them in the monograph, but we supplement them with other background ideas that appeared in the journal. Discussing the details of all articles under this section would, however, fall outside the scope of the present chapter. Riḍā composed six of his articles in *al-Manār* (which were excluded in his monograph) under the same title as answers to the Egyptian Protestant Magazine. Some of these articles also did not directly deal with his views on Christianity, but were mostly devoted to refute Christian 'allegations' against the Qur'ān.<sup>3</sup> In a similar manner, Riḍā published four lengthy reactions to some other articles written in the above-mentioned Brazilian Arabic journal *al-Munāẓir* (see, chapter 2) by a Christian Syrian emigrant under the name of Rafūl Sa'ādeh. These articles were not included in the monograph either. They mainly contain refutations of Rafūl Sa'ādeh's arguments that Islam had no success, except because of the Christian principles it bore; and that Muslims were not as wise as other conquerors of Syria (such as the Seleucids and Romans), who had never attacked the habits and feelings of the Syrians.<sup>4</sup> But the reason why Riḍā did not include these articles in the monograph is not known.

It is also worth noting that the last two articles of Riḍā's monograph were written as a reply to Faraḥ Anṭūn's critique of Islam during his

<sup>3</sup> See, for instance, *al-Manār*, vol. 6/6 (Rabī' al-'Awwal 1321/June 1903), pp. 217-223; vol. 6/7, (Rabī' al-Thānī 1321/June 1903), pp. 252-255; vol. 6/8, pp. 294-298; vol. 6/9 (Jumāda al-'Ūlā 1321/July 1903), pp. 330-335; vol. 6/12 (Jumāda al-Thāniya 1321/September 1903), pp. 457-461.

<sup>4</sup> For more details, see *al-Manār*, vol. 7/1 (Muḥarram 1322/March 1904), pp. 17-27; vol. 7/2 (Šafar 1322/April 1904), pp. 94-100; vol. 7/6, pp. 225-231.



above-mentioned debate with 'Abduh (see, chapter 2). In these articles, Riḍā clearly put Anṭūn on an equal footing with missionaries by arguing that when the editor of *al-Jāmi'a* saw the failure of evangelists in converting Muslims through purely religious methods, he embarked upon planting doubts in their minds through what he claimed to be scientific methods. He therefore exerted his effort to convince them: 1) that their religion, like other religions, is the enemy of reason and knowledge, 2) that their scholastic theologians denied causes; and 3) that the combining of religious and civil political authority in the office of the Caliph harms Muslims, causing their social retardation.<sup>5</sup>

#### 4.1. A Muslim Doubting the Authenticity of the Qur'ān

It might be interesting to know that in 1903 a certain 'Abdullāh Naṣūhī, one of *al-Manār*'s readers from Alexandria, asked Riḍā to discontinue publishing the section of the *Shubuhāt*, which, in his view, had become a platform for the publicity of missionary allegations. According to Naṣūhī, no Muslim would have ever known about their publications, had *al-Manār* not published regular sections rebutting their ideas. The reader also believed that missionary treatises and magazines were only read by the Christians themselves.<sup>6</sup> Riḍā replied that the editors of these publications frequently sent their magazine to the Grand Sheikh of Al-Azhar and other Muslim scholars, who took no initiative to respond to their contentions. He found it incumbent upon Muslims to counter their writings, otherwise they would be held sinful.<sup>7</sup> Another Egyptian subscriber informed *al-Manār* that one of his friends converted to Christianity only as a result of reading these missionary critiques of Islam.<sup>8</sup> When Riḍā decided to cease publishing the section of the *Shubuhāt* in 1904, the judge of Bahrain encouraged him to resume his refutations, describing *al-Manār* as a 'shooting star burning the devils, and tearing down their allegations.'<sup>9</sup>

<sup>5</sup> As translated by Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 198.

<sup>6</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/11 (Jumādā al-Thānya 1321 /August 1903), pp. 425-427. The same reader had criticised *al-Manār* for giving a special tribute for Pope Leo XIII after his death; see, pp. 434-440.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 426.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 426-27.

<sup>9</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/23 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1321/18 February 1904), p. 919.

Riḍā embarked upon writing the section of the *Shubuhāt* after he had read an article in an Islamic newspaper by a Muslim journalist, who was affected by missionary writings and became doubtful about some Islamic teachings. Riḍā made it clear that he felt obliged to become directly involved in discussing these issues, although he was always keen on a peaceful attitude in his journal towards other religions, including Christianity. He stressed that *al-Manār*'s policy was neither to inflame the animosity between different religious groups, nor to invite people to defame each other's belief, but missionaries were constantly attacking Islam.<sup>10</sup>

Riḍā was surprised that the Muslim writer had read missionary works, but had not tried to study any Muslim works in response to them, such as *Izhār al-Ḥaqq* or *al-Sayf al-Ṣaqīl*.<sup>11</sup> The doubts, which had emerged in his mind, were: 1) the divergence of some Islamic texts from the Jewish and Christian Scriptures; 2) the silence of these Scriptures about many points which had been later mentioned in the Qur'ān; and 3) the fact that many things mentioned in the Ḥadīth and the Qur'ān contradict actual reality or the truths already established by modern sciences.

Riḍā argued that silence about something is not the same as its denial. It is not reasonable that one would believe in the divine message of Islam on the basis of what the authors of Jewish and Christian Scriptures (whom Riḍā named *mu'arrikhūn* 'historians') had mentioned or neglected. The Muslim writer used the frequent missionary argument, which attempted to prove the genuineness of the Old and New Testament on the basis of the Qur'ān. In this sense, he

<sup>10</sup> First article, 'Shubuhāt al-Masīhiyyīn 'alā al-'Islam,' *al-Manār*, vol. 4/5 (Muḥarram 1319 /May 1901), pp. 179-183.

<sup>11</sup> Umar Tamīmī al-Dārī and Muḥammad Zakī Sanad, *Kitāb al-Sayf al-Ṣaqīl fī al-Radd 'alā Risālat al-Burhān al-Jalīl* (The Polished Sword in Response to *al-Burhān al-Jalīl*), Cairo, 1895. It was a response to *al-Burhān al-Jalīl 'alā Siḥḥat al-Tawrah wa al-Injīl* (The Glorious Proof on the Reliability of the Old and New Testament), which was written by Rev. F. A. Klein, and was translated and published by The Church Missionary Society (CMS) in Jerusalem in 1893. The *Burhān* generated many Muslim works. See, my paper, 'Muslim Response to Missionary Literature in Egypt: Varieties of Muslim Apologetics during the Late Nineteenth and Early Twentieth Century,' presented at The International Congress: 'Religious Change in Pluralistic Contexts,' LISOR, Leiden, 28-30 August 2003. The Egyptian scholar Muṣṭafā al-Rifā'ī al-Labbān also wrote a response to a missionary treatise dealing with the same subject under the title: *Mawqif al-'Islām min Kutub al-Yahūd wā al-Naṣārā* (The Positions of Islam towards the Scriptures of the Jews and Christians), Cairo: al-Maṭba'a al-Salafiyya, 1353/ 1934-1935.

further argued that the Qur'ān made a declaration of truth of the revelation of the Bible; but if the revelation of the Bible were proved to be false in some points, would the testimony of the Qur'ān for false Scriptures bring the authenticity of the Qur'ān itself also into suspicion?!<sup>12</sup>

In his reply, Riḍā maintained that the Qur'ān has testified to the Torah as a book of laws and precepts, not as a book of history borrowed from Assyrian and Chaldean mythologies. These mythologies were proved to contradict the sciences of geology and archeology. For example, it had been proved that serpents do not eat earth in contradiction of God's command in the Torah for the serpent: 'and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life' (Genesis 3:14).<sup>13</sup> The Qur'ān therefore bore witness to the authenticity of the Torah, as a book of legislation (al-Mā'ida 5:44),<sup>14</sup> but did not give any testimony for other historical books, such as those of unknown authors and those that had been written centuries after Moses. In Riḍā's view, any historical analogy between the Qur'ān and other Biblical books, such as Isaiah, Ezekiel or Daniel was baseless, since the Qur'ān had never borne witness to them. He asked the writer not to be dazzled by the claims of the Christians that all the books mentioned in the Old Testament were parts of the original Torah.<sup>15</sup> As for the New Testament, Muslims should believe that it was a revelation which included religious exhortations, rulings and wisdom about Jesus. All other books of the New Testament were nothing but a part of history, and in the same way as the Torah, they had been written down many years after Jesus' death with no *asānīd* (chains of transmission). The Qur'ān had testified that the Christians did not preserve all parts of the revelation about Jesus (Al-Mā'ida 5:14).<sup>16</sup>

Riḍā added that the Qur'ān also rebuked the Christians and the Jews for having mixed the original Bible with other historical stories. Thus, Riḍā argued, Muslims have no definitive criteria to distinguish parts originally revealed from other parts. However, Muslims hold

<sup>12</sup> *A-Manār*, vol. 4/5, p. 80.

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 181

<sup>14</sup> 'It is we who revealed the Law (to Moses): therein was guidance and light. By its standard have been judged the Jews, by Prophets who bowed (as in Islam) to God's will, by the Rabbis and the Doctors of Law.'

<sup>15</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 95

<sup>16</sup> 'Lo! We are Christians, We made a covenant, but they forgot a part of that whereof they were admonished.'

the books of Exodus, Numbers, Deuteronomy and Leviticus as parts of the original Torah. Riḍā also favoured the Sermon of Jesus on the Mount, and other sermons according to the Gospel of Matthew (chapters 5, 6 and 7), as parts of the original Gospel.<sup>17</sup> Nevertheless, he made it clear that any report that might contradict the Qur'ān in these books must be totally rejected, since 'God speaks truthfully, whereas historians lie.'<sup>18</sup>

At the end, Riḍā requested the writer to visit him in his office, if his written answers were not sufficient. One month later, Riḍā stated that he decided to stop publishing on the subject, after the writer visited him in his office and was convinced by his answers.<sup>19</sup>

#### 4.2. *Researches of the Diligent*

Very soon Riḍā started to publish his replies against Christian writings once again. As we have mentioned (see introduction), his early replies were directed to the missionary treatise written by the Egyptian Niqūlā Ya'qūb Ghabriyāl. Riḍā held Christian writers responsible for attacking Islam. He felt compelled to react, even though he was still seeking harmony among different religious groups in society.<sup>20</sup> It was Ghabriyāl's 'unfavourable judgment' of Islam that made him return to polemics. The author tried to prove the authenticity of the Bible as based on Qur'ānic passages. It was also a direct message to Muslims to 'share with the Christians their salvation and the eternal life, which they have acquired through Jesus.'<sup>21</sup>

Riḍā evaluated the method of Ghabriyāl's *Researches* as 'decent,' as it did not contain any 'profanity' against Islam as compared to other missionary works. Ghabriyāl personally gave a copy of his book to Riḍā, and requested him to give feedback in *al-Manār*. The above-

<sup>17</sup> Leirvik wrongly stated that Riḍā criticised the Sermon on the Mount as naïve. Leirvik, *Images*, p. 141. The Sermon on the Mount was a common stock of Gospel materials widely known in Muslim literature, see, T. Khalidi, *The Muslim Jesus: Sayings and Stories in Islamic Literature*, Harvard University Press, 2001, p. 33.

<sup>18</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 96.

<sup>19</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/7 (Ṣafar 1319/June 1901), p. 280

<sup>20</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/10 (Rabī' al-Thānī 1319 /July 1901), pp. 379-380. In *al-Manār*, Riḍā titled the article as: 'Shubuhāt al-Tārikh 'alā al-Yahūdiyya wā al-Naṣrāniyya (Doubts of History about Judaism and Christianity).' In the collection of articles he subtitled it as: 'Muwāzana bayna al-'Anbiyā' al-Thalāthah (Comparison among the Three Prophets).'

<sup>21</sup> Ghabriyāl, *op. cit.*, p. 3.

mentioned Salīm Pasha al-Ḥamawī, a Syrian Greek Orthodox and a friend of Riḍā, reviewed the book in his newspaper *al-Falāḥ*, and asked Riḍā to respond to it as well. Other missionary friends of Ghabriyāl made the same request to Riḍā. In the beginning, Riḍā expressed his hesitation, stating that 'the *mujādāla* (debate or polemics) is the job of those who live by it: 'as the seller seeks a buyer, the debater seeks another debater.'<sup>22</sup> Riḍā was worried that he would not be able to respond to the issues mentioned by Ghabriyāl without exceeding his boundaries and attacking Christianity. As a result, the authors of such works would charge him with religious fanaticism. For him, the lucidity of Islam would need no defender.<sup>23</sup>

#### 4.2.1. *Three Prophets: Historical Doubts about Judaism and Christianity*

Riḍā argued with Ghabriyāl that anyone who studied the Scriptures of the three religions and the biographies of their narrators would definitely reach the conclusion that Islam was the most 'obvious' and 'soundest' one. Once he had a conversation with a Christian historian, whom he described as 'not fanatically disposed towards one religion over another.' They imposed upon themselves the hypothetical condition that they did not believe in any religion in order to define who the greatest man in history was. Riḍā nominated Muḥammad, while the historian's choice went to Moses and Jesus. They agreed that the three of them were the greatest and most influential in history, but did not agree on the criteria that made them greatest in terms of status and historical influence.<sup>24</sup>

---

<sup>22</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/10, p. 380. Other contemporary Muslim scholars also refuted Ghabriyāl's treatise. 'Abd al-Raḥmān ibn Sa'īd al-Baghdādī (d. 1911), the Iraqi head of the Commercial Court in Baghdad, systematically responded to its nine chapters. Abd al-Raḥmān ibn Sa'īd Baghdādī, (Bajah Ji Zadah), *al-Fāriq bayna al-Makhlūq wā al-Khālīq*, Cairo, 1904, pp. 31-83. The book was published in Cairo three years after the appearance of Riḍā's articles in *al-Manār*. Ghabriyāl's work was, in his view, nothing but a 'camouflage,' which would swindle the fair-minded Christians and convince them with the authenticity of their Scriptures. In order to discover the deception of its author, Baghdādī advised his readers, Christians or not, to purchase a copy of Ghabriyāl's work, and put it beside him while reading his refutation. On the margin of Baghdādī's work, the author included al-Qarāfi's *al-Ajwiba al-Fākhirā* and Ibn al-Qayyim's *Hidāyat al-Ḥayārā*.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid. Cf. Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 99

As for Moses, Riḍā maintained that he was brought up under the custody of the ‘greatest king’ of his time. In the court of the Pharaoh, Moses grew up in the ‘cradle’ of royalty and power, and therefore became imbued with love of rule and authority. He witnessed the civilised world of Egypt, the universal sciences, *Funūn al-Šinā‘a* (arts of industry) and magic. He grew up in the shadow of the Egyptian laws. The pride of the monarchy made him valiant. He turned against the Pharaoh, as he was conscious of the weakness and humiliation of the Children of Israel as a disgraced nation under the Pharaoh. He sought the partisan support (‘*Aṣabiyya*’) of his people, and attempted to establish a kingdom like the one under which he grew up. He rebelled against the Pharaoh by using this ‘*Aṣabiyya*’. Riḍā did not consider Moses’ miracle of the passing of the sea to have been a matter of magic or supernatural power. Some historians stated that the Children of Israel had crossed the sea at a shallow point at the end of the tide’s ebb. When the Pharaoh and his people tried to cross, they drowned due to the incoming tide. Riḍā did not mention any historian by name. Here he alluded to theories like those of the Hellenistic Jewish historian Artapanus who pointed to the ebb as a possible explanation.<sup>25</sup> Riḍā compared the story to what, according to him, happened to the French political leader Napoleon Bonaparte (d. 1821) and his soldiers on their way back to the Egyptian shore, when they tried to cross the Red Sea at the time of the tide’s ebb; and the water began to rise. This made their return very difficult. Bonaparte commanded his soldiers to get hold of each other till they were overpowered by the strength of the rising water.<sup>26</sup> All other miracles attributed to Moses were, in Riḍā’s view, dubious in regard to their transmission, and of doubtful understanding.<sup>27</sup>

As for Jesus, Riḍā described him as a Jewish man who was brought up under the Mosaic laws, who was judging according to the Roman

---

<sup>25</sup> Artapanus explained the crossing of the sea by Moses and the Israelites as a consequence of Moses’ familiarity with the natural phenomena of the area. See, for instance, Stanislav Segert, ‘Crossing the Waters: Moses and Hamilcar,’ *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 53/3, 1994, pp. 195-203.

<sup>26</sup> Riḍā did not give this rationalist interpretation in his commentary on the Qur’ānic passages related to this story. He rendered stretching the sea for Moses to be a miraculous act caused by the divine providence. He gave his interpretation in light of Biblical narratives. He only quoted the story as mentioned in Exodus 13 and 14, which he considered to be a proper exegesis for the Qur’ānic story. See, *Tafsīr Al-Manār*, Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-‘Ilmiyya, 1999, vol. 9, pp. 91-92.

<sup>27</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/10, p. 381.

code, and who had read Greek philosophy. Therefore, he was well acquainted with the three great civilisations and their sciences; and was not keen on establishing a new law or nation. Riḍā also suggested that Jesus, as an eloquent preacher, had some knowledge of Greek philosophy of life, such as asceticism, which had been clearly expressed in the renunciation of worldly pleasures and the humiliation of the body for the sake of the soul and the entering of the Kingdom of the Heavens.<sup>28</sup> Some of the zealous poor followed him, as they found in his mission consolation and comfort. Riḍā argued that these followers embarked on reporting miraculous stories, just as common Muslims attribute miraculous acts to Muslim Şūfīs. In his interpretation of the clash of his arguments with the Qur'ānic reports of the miraculous acts attributed to Jesus, such as his fatherless birth, Riḍā maintained that it was a claim that could never be proven, except after establishing the rational evidence of the authenticity of Islam.<sup>29</sup>

As compared to Moses, Riḍā saw that Jesus in many aspects did not accomplish noteworthy achievements regarding science, social reform or civilisation. His sermons and exhortations, however, led to the demolition of civilisations, the ruining of prosperity, and the decline of humankind from its highest degrees to the lowest depth of animal existence. The sermons of Jesus would lift up human souls in humiliation and humbleness, encouraging people to discard any flourishing or progressive development in the world. Riḍā mentioned in that regard examples, such as: 'It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God' (Matthew, 19:24). He added that the doctrine of Crucifixion also allowed 'permissiveness,' since it taught the believers that any sin was forgiven through it. Riḍā concluded that the teachings of Christianity were derived from paganism and that it 'relinquished any light [produced by reflection].' He attempted to refute the claim that Western civilisation was based on Christianity. A civilisation based on materialism, love of money and authority, arrogance and the enjoyment of worldly pleasures, does not match with the spirit of Christian asceticism. He strongly believed that the West reached its civilisation only after it had entirely abandoned Christian teachings.<sup>30</sup>

---

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p. 382.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., pp. 382-83.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 383.

After having mentioned all these points, Riḍā reached his conclusion of the preference of the Prophet of Islam in human history. The Prophet Muḥammad was born as an orphan, and was raised up in a nation of paganism, illiteracy and ignorance; one lacking laws, civilisation, national unity, knowledge or craft. The highest degree of development attained in his time was that a group of people, who, due to their dealings with other tribes, had learnt to read and write. Neither he nor any of his followers was included in this group. However, he was capable of founding a nation, religion, law, kingdom and civilisation in an unprecedented short period of time.<sup>31</sup>

Riḍā's counterpart in the discussion conceded that it was true that Muḥammad was the greatest man in history, but the sad status of Muslims nowadays was not compatible with the teachings of his religion. Riḍā answered that the Islamic civilisation declined when Muslims abandoned their religion. The so-called Western civilisation, on the other hand, began to exist after having come into contact with Muslims in Spain. The more the West puts Christianity aside, the more it advances. Riḍā's Christian counterpart considered this answer to be an exaggerated statement.<sup>32</sup>

At the end, Riḍā returned to the Qur'ānic narration of the miracles of prophets. For him, the Qur'ānic narrative should be given preponderance as divine revelation above all historical probabilities. He argued that the authenticity of any religion should be proven through supernatural acts, which are reported on the authority of its lawgiver. Riḍā favoured the Muslim reports as the most reliable for many reasons. First of all, knowledge and oral transmissions were known since the first century of Islam. It is not historically established that Muslims were conquered by an enemy, who burnt their books or demolished their entire religion and history. They were never persecuted nor obliged to conceal their belief and in the course of secrecy invent stories. Unlike other religions, Muslims initiated the science of *Tārīkh al-Rijāl* (Biography of Men) with which they examined the authenticity of narratives by means of studying their narrators.

---

<sup>31</sup> Ibid.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 384.



#### 4.2.2. *Islam & Christianity: Three Goals of Religion*

In a following article, Riḍā rebuked missionaries for their insistence on inviting Muslims to deny the divine message of one of the three prophets, notwithstanding that his mission was established on the strongest rational proofs. He proposed a comparison between Christianity and Islam in the light of three general objectives that every religion should have: 1) soundness of doctrines, leading to the perfection of the human mind; 2) cultivation of morality leading to the perfection of the soul; and 3) the goodness of acts facilitating welfare and interests of human beings, therefore leading to the perfection of the body. This composition would demonstrate which one of the two religions really realised these goals, and deserved to be followed.<sup>33</sup>

With regard to the first aspect, Riḍā argued that Muslims agreed that beliefs should be derived from clear-cut proofs. Any sensible person would definitely judge the doctrines of Islam as sound. He did not agree with the author of the *Researches* that 'no one would grasp the essence of the divine entity except God Himself, as Muslims and others agree.' Riḍā made a distinction between what the reason would prove on the basis of evidence without knowing its deepest entity, and what it would declare as impossible to know. Reason however did not attain knowledge of the true nature of any of the created things, but it comprehended external appearances and attributes. The Torah, in Riḍā's perspective, ascribed to God irrational attributes. Depending on early Islamic polemics, Riḍā maintained that telling about God in the Torah that God 'repented,' 'grieved,' or 'plotted to destroy man' (Genesis, 6:6-7) indicates that He was ignorant and incapable.<sup>34</sup>

As for the second objective, Riḍā maintained that the Islamic teachings were the most adequate and perfect, as they were standing upon the foundations of justice and moderation. He wrote that the Christian teachings, on other hand, were based on 'excess' and 'exaggeration.' He referred to verses such as, 'Love your enemies, bless them that

<sup>33</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/11 (Jumādā al-'Ūlā 1319 /August 1901), pp. 411-417; Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 109.

<sup>34</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/11, p. 412, Wood, *ibid.*, p. 112. See, for instance, Ibn al-Qayyim al-Jawziyya, *Hidāyat al-Ḥayārā fī Ajwibat al-Yahūd wā al-Naṣārā*, edited by Iṣām Farīd al-Harstānī, Beirut, 1994, pp. 219-221. Many Christian interpreters take these passages as metaphorical. See, for example, Paul S. Fiddes, *The Creative Suffering of God*, Oxford University Press, 1988.

curse you' (Mathew, 5:44); 'But those mine enemies, [...] that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me' (Luke, 19:27). These verses convinced him that its core message was a kind of excess in love, which human nature cannot stand.

In terms of the third objective, Riḍā argued that good deeds promote the human being spiritually and bodily, and in that sense all acts of worship in Islam are connected to a value. Prayer, for example, is obligated to prevent *Fahshā'* (lewdness) and *Munkar* (reprehensible acts). He contended that it is hard to find these meanings of worship in other scriptures. Worship in the Torah is substantiated only for the sake of 'worldly fortunes.' For instance, feasts in the Bible were only justified as a season of gathering, harvest, and agriculture (Exodus, 23: 14-16). The same holds true for his understanding of the Islamic precepts of transactions, which 'treat Muslims and non-Muslims equally.' Riḍā attempted to compare some of these Islamic precepts with their Biblical counterparts. He quoted that the Torah stipulates 'thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour' (Exodus, 20: 16), while the Qur'ānic concept of giving one's testimony demands believers to 'stand firmly for justice and not be biased even against oneself, parents, kin, rich or poor' (al-Mā'idā, 4:135). Riḍā further alleged that, unlike the Bible, the Qur'an combines both faith and good deeds. Riḍā selected many Biblical examples to prove his point. In his Epistle to the Romans, Paul, for example, made it clear: 'Now to one who works is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that works not, but believeth in him that justifies the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness' (4:4-5).<sup>35</sup>

#### 4.2.3. *Judaism & Christianity Derived from Paganism?*

In this part, Riḍā harshly criticised the Judeo-Christian Scriptures as being rehashed from pagan ideas.<sup>36</sup> In his view, the only means to avoid what he considered as the 'objections' of Western scholars and historians against the authenticity of the Scriptures was to adhere to Muslim belief by admitting the 'corruption' of many parts of them. Here he quoted the famous fictional work *Alam al-Dīn* (The Banner of Religion) by 'Alī Pasha Mubārak (1823-1893), an Egyptian former

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., p. 417. Other examples are: Galatians 3:10-13, Mathew 5:17, Acts 15: 28-29, and Ezekiel 20: 23.

<sup>36</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/12, pp. 448-453.

minister of education.<sup>37</sup> The four-volume book described a journey to France by an Azharite Sheikh (named 'Alam al-Dīn) and a British orientalist, who hired him for Arabic lessons. When the Sheikh traveled with his English student to France, his view of the East and West drastically changed. As it was written for educative reasons, the novel contained accounts of the discussions between both men on various fields, such as geography, physics, zoology, religion, and intellectual schools. Riḍā was impressed by such works.<sup>38</sup>

In the *Shubuhāt*, Riḍā quoted from Mubārak's work an imaginary conversation between Sheikh 'Alam al-Dīn and a French philosopher, who visited Egypt during Napoleon's campaign, on the relation between Islam and Christianity, and on other issues related to the Bible.<sup>39</sup> The orientalist was the interpreter, and introduced the French philosopher as one of the well-versed scholars in the field of theology. The philosopher was said to believe that 'the Old Testament is composed, and not one of the heavenly-divine books.' Mubārak mentioned that the philosopher relied on the statements of a person to whom he referred as 'Mary Augustus' and 'Origen.' He was probably referring to the church father St. Aurelius Augustine (AD 353-430) and to Origenes Adamantius (probably AD 185-254). Mubārak maintained that Augustine would argue that it was not possible that the first three chapters [of Genesis] would have remained in the same form.<sup>40</sup> In his work, Mubārak maintained:

Origen also believed that what is mentioned in the Torah pertaining to the creation of the world was legendary [...] the word Hebrew word *Barrāh*—*fathā* on the *b*, doubling of the *r* and *sukūn* on the *h*—would actually mean 'arrange' and 'order.' It was not possible for anyone to 'arrange' or 'order' something that did not really exist. Thus the application of this word to the creation of the world required that the material substance of the world was pre-existent and eternal; and the time

<sup>37</sup> 'Alī Mubārak, *'Alam al-Dīn*, Alexandria: al-Maḥrūsa Newspaper Press, 4 vols, 1299/1883. About his life and works see, Sa'īd Zā'īyid, *'Alī Mubarak wā 'A'māluh*, Cairo: Anglo Bookshop, 1958.

<sup>38</sup> In the same year (of writing the *Shubuhāt*) Riḍā wrote a similar fictional dialogue under the title: *Muḥawarāt al-Musliḥ wā al-Muqallid* (Debates between the Reformer and Traditionalist). See, Jakob Skovgaard-Petersen, 'Portrait of the Intellectual as a Young Man: Rashīd Riḍā's *Muḥawarāt al-Musliḥ wā al-Muqallid* (1906),' *Islam and Muslim-Christian Relations* 12/1, 2001, p. 99. Cf. Darrell Dykstra, 'Pyramids, Prophets, and Progress: Ancient Egypt in the Writings of 'Alī Mubārak,' *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 114/1, 1994, pp. 54-65.

<sup>39</sup> Mubārak, *op. cit.*, vol. 3, p. 1079.

<sup>40</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 1096.

and place are coeternal. Insofar as the substance was living, the soul was eternal as well, since it was the cause of life. As the substance is light, heat, power, motion, gravity and balance, both life and the substance were one thing, which is contradictory to the Torah<sup>41</sup>

There is no evidence that Mubārak had a good command of the Hebrew language. He did not mention any source on which he depended in the argument. Reading the general lines of the two ancient Christian writers on the creation narrative in the Book of Genesis, we find their theories more sophisticated than the way they are introduced by Mubārak. Augustine, born of a Christian mother and a pagan father, firstly attempted to expound the creation narrative in his commentary: *De Genesi contra Manichaeos libri duo* (388).<sup>42</sup> He tried to discover the literal meaning of every statement in the text of Genesis; but when he found that impossible, he resorted to an allegorical interpretation.<sup>43</sup> The first three chapters of Genesis contained a narrative of another sort as compared to those from the fourth chapter onwards which obviously contained a historical narrative. The first chapters were unfamiliar because they were unique. But that, according to Augustine, did not justify one in concluding that the events did not happen.<sup>44</sup> Origen's approach to cosmology was philosophical rather than theological. He believed that the Bible was divinely revealed, which was established both by the fulfilment of prophecy, and by the direct impression which the Scriptures made on him who read them.<sup>45</sup>

Returning to Riḍā's quotation from *'Alam al-Dīn*, the author compared some Biblical notions and events with similar ones in ancient traditions. For example, the Biblical story of creation in six days resembles that of the six ages of the Hindus, as well as the six

---

<sup>41</sup> Ibid.; compare Wood's translation.

<sup>42</sup> He wrote his work as a refutation to the Manichees who 'completely reject [the Old Testament] with impious scorn.' See, *St. Augustine: The Literal Meaning of Genesis*, trans. and annotated by John Hammond Taylor, S.J., 2 vols., New York N. Y./Ramsey, N.J.: Newman Press, 1982, p. 1. See also, William Mallard, *Language and Love: Introducing Augustine's Religious Thought Through the Confessions Story*, University Park PA: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1994.

<sup>43</sup> *The Literal Meaning of Genesis*, p. 1.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 10.

<sup>45</sup> See, *The Writings of Origen I: De Principiis*, trans. by Rev. F. Crombie, D.D., in the series *Ante-Nicene Christian Library: Translations of the Writings of the Fathers down to A.D. 325*, ed. by Rev. Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson, Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1871-1872, p. 127.

Gahambars (holy festivals) of Zarathustra. The philosopher, moreover, criticised the Old Testament as containing 'inappropriate' things attributed to the Prophets, such as fratricide, adultery, and theft. In the same manner, the author turned to draw analogies between Christian doctrines and ancient Pagan cultures. Examples of these were the incarnation of God into a human body and the virginal birth, which had occurred according to Indian, Chinese and Egyptian ancient cults. The ancient Egyptians, for instance, believed that Osiris was virgin-born. The Christian doctrine that Jesus died, was buried, resurrected and elevated to heaven resembled the statements of ancient Egyptians about Osiris and the Greeks about the cult figure Adonis. Also it was said that the Germanic God Odin had sacrificed himself, killing himself of his own choice by throwing himself in a terrible fire until he burnt for the salvation of his worshippers.<sup>46</sup>

Riḍā argued that because Western people (especially scholars and philosophers) became skeptical about Christianity, some governments (such as in France) started to declare that their states had no official religion.<sup>47</sup> Those philosophers and scholars, he went on, were still convinced that religion was necessary for humankind. Riḍā believed that the 'truth' of Islam, as the religion of the *Fiṭra* (the innate disposition), was concealed away from those scholars. Therefore some of them produced a poor translation of the Qur'an which did not enable people to understand the truth of Islam.<sup>48</sup> In Riḍā's view, the Russian and Spanish people persisted to be the strongest advocates of Christianity. However, the Spaniards recently suppressed their clergy. The Orthodox Church of Russia excommunicated its philosopher Tolstoy for his rejection of their doctrines. Riḍā was aware of the 'westernised' group of Muslims, who followed the path of these

---

<sup>46</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, pp. 121-122. About Odin, see, for example, Alby Stone, 'Bran, Odin, and the Fisher King: Norse Tradition and the Grail Legends,' *Folklore* 100/1, 1989, pp. 25-38.

<sup>47</sup> Riḍā referred here to the French Law of Associations (1901). See, Riḍā's conversation with the Sheikh Al-Azhar on the matter, *al-Manār*, vol. 4/4 (Muḥarram 1319/April 1901), pp. 157-160. About the law, for instance, Judith F. Stone, 'Anticlericals and *Bonnes Soeurs*: The Rhetoric of the 1901 Law of Associations,' *French Historical Studies* 23/1, 2000, pp. 103-128.

<sup>48</sup> Riḍā mentioned as an example an English translation of Surat al-'Aṣr: 'Verily, by three hours after noon a man becomes bad or despicable.' He did identify the translator by name, but Wood argued that Riḍā's paraphrasing looked like the translation of J.M. Rodwell (1862-1876), who translated it as: 'Verily, man's lot is cast amid destruction.' *Ibid.*, p. 123.

Europeans in their attitudes towards Islam. In a generalisation he stated that these individuals never studied Islam properly, either before their studying of European thought or after.<sup>49</sup>

#### 4.2.4. *Qur'ānic Proofs for the Genuineness of the Bible*

As we have already mentioned, it was typical of the missionary writings to prove the authenticity of the Bible on the basis of the Qur'ānic testimony to it as a divinely-revealed book. In his *Researches*, Ghabriyāl cited seven Qur'ānic verses discussing the character of the Bible. Riḍā ridiculed this method, and ironically named the whole book *Abḥāth al-Jadaliyyīn* 'the Researches of the Disputants' instead of the *Diligent*. He also accused the author of trying to 'twist the meanings [of the Qur'ān] in the same way as his ancestors did with the Old and New Testament.'<sup>50</sup> It was, in his view, Paul who rendered the laws of the Old and New Testament worthless, and made Christianity permissive attaching no good values to any good act by requesting people to believe in the salvation of Jesus only. By this Riḍā thought along a similar line with many Muslim polemicists who saw Paul as a 'cunning and roguish Jew [...] who emancipated himself from the religious practices of Jesus and accepted those of the Romans.'<sup>51</sup> Riḍā called down 'shame' and 'denigration' on Christian missionaries because they preached that 'this Jewish man [Paul]' could invalidate both the laws of Moses and Jesus, whereas they refused the message of Muḥammad, which came as confirmation of the divine message of both prophets.<sup>52</sup>

In Riḍā's understanding, the missionary argument of proving the authenticity of the Bible from the Qur'ān was a 'quotation out of context' in order to distort the Qur'ān's real meaning. The Old and New Testament were earlier 'guidance for humanity,' but after their followers deviated from its 'true' message and went astray, the texts had undergone alteration. Riḍā's premise did not go further than his pure conviction that Islam had later brought 'the greatest guidance' and 'glorious evidence.' If the People of the Book believed in it, they

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 125.

<sup>50</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/14 (Jumādā al-Ākhira 1319/September 1901), p. 538.

<sup>51</sup> See, S. M. Stern, 'Abd-al-Jabbār's account of how Christ's religion was falsified by the adoption of Roman customs,' *Journal of Theological Studies* 19, 1968, pp. 128-185.

<sup>52</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/14, p. 538.

would gain 'prosperity' and become 'masters' of others.<sup>53</sup> Again, Riḍā was cynical in reproaching missionaries to concern themselves with non-religious Christians, who did not live according to the precepts of the Bible: 'why would they have sympathy and give their sincere advice to Muslims to follow the Bible, whereas they themselves are in need of advice and sympathy.'<sup>54</sup>

The same held true for the verse quoted by Ghabriyāl: 'Let the People of the Gospel judge by what Allah hath revealed therein' (al-Mā'idā, 5:47), which he understood as a commandment to the Prophet of Islam to follow the Gospel. Riḍā maintained that the verse did not indicate any command that the Prophet Muḥammad should submit to the precepts of the Bible. The author, in Riḍā's words, sought to furnish any corroborating evidence by misconstruing the verse in a way that would support his desire, and would also corrupt the Qur'ān as they did with their own Scriptures. The verse pertained to the statement in the preceding verse: 'We sent him [Jesus] the Gospel; therein was guidance and light' (5:46). This means that God gave him the Gospel and ordered his people (the Israelites) to act accordingly. Riḍā understood the verse as a proof and objection against the Christians themselves that they did not act according to the Gospel. He concluded that 'if it is possible for the Christian evangelists today to argue against Muslims that the Qur'ān commands them to believe and act according to the Old and New Testament and not see that this argument mandates their faith in the Qur'ān, then how can they assert that Muḥammad's request to them to judge by the Gospel would mandate that he submitted to its ordinances?'<sup>55</sup>

Ghabriyāl argued that the Qur'ān confirmed that it would be an error for a Muslim not to believe in the Old and New Testament. He cited the verse admonishing the Muslims to believe in the preceding Scriptures (al-Nisā, 4: 136).<sup>56</sup> Riḍā immediately replied that the Muslim is required to believe in the previous Scriptures, but is never obligated to act according to their laws. According to Muslim exegetes, he argued, the verse was addressing the hypocrites (*munāfiqūn*),

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 539.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., pp. 538-39.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., p. 539. Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 131.

<sup>56</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Fī al-'Ayāt al-Wārīda bisha'n al-Tawrah wā al-Injil (In the related verses dealing with the Torah and the Gospel),' vol. 4/15, pp. 574-78. The verse is: 'O ye who believe! Believe in Allah and His Apostle, and the scripture which He hath sent to His Apostle and the scripture which He sent to those before (him).'



who outwardly manifested their faith only, with no real conviction. Riḍā paraphrased the verse: ‘O you who profess faith in God, His Book and his Messengers’—with their tongues and outwardly—‘it is incumbent upon you to believe in them with your hearts and bring your outward profession to congruity with what you hold inwardly.’<sup>57</sup>

In Ghabriyāl’s view, the people of Mecca knew the Old and New Testament in the same manner they knew the Qur’ān. He cited the verse ‘And those who disbelieve say: We believe not in this Qur’ān nor in that which was before it’ (Saba’, 34:31). He interpreted the Arabic phrase, *bayna yadayhi* (lit. between his hands), as ‘before it.’ This means that the verse directly refers to ‘the Old and New Testament.’ Riḍā rejected this interpretation by arguing that it pointed to the rejection by the people of Mecca of the Qur’ān and its prophet. Riḍā again paraphrased the verse that the premise of the people of Mecca was to say: ‘we do neither believe in you Muḥammad and the book you claim from God, nor in the Scriptures you claim to have been revealed before you.’ He argued that the verse neither indicated that the ‘illiterate’ inhabitants of Mecca during the time of the revelation knew the Old and New Testament, nor did it give any connotation that they specifically studied them. Only a few people among them were able to read and write well (Riḍā counted them as six individuals). However, Riḍā gave his preference to another exegetical interpretation: the phrase ‘*bayna yadayhi*’ referred to the Day of Judgment, not to the preceding Scriptures.<sup>58</sup>

Ghabriyāl’s following argument was that the Prophet himself verified the authenticity of the Scriptures and put them on an equal footing with the Qur’ān, as has been stated by the Qur’ān itself: ‘Say (to them Muḥammad): ‘then bring a Book, which gives a clearer guidance than these two, that I may follow.’<sup>59</sup> The pronoun in *minhumā* (than these two), according to Ghabriyāl, refers to the Qur’ān and the Gospel. For Riḍā, this quotation was mentioned by Ghabriyāl out of his ‘dishonesty’ and an ‘alteration’ of the real meaning of the verse by not giving any reference to its previous passages. In his exegetical view, Riḍā considered the mention of Moses in the preceding verses as an indication that the verse referred to the Qur’ān and the Torah,

<sup>57</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 133.

<sup>58</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/15, p. 577.

<sup>59</sup> Al-Qaṣaṣ (28: 49).



but not to the Gospel.<sup>60</sup> But this interpretation, in Riḍā's view, does not indicate any approval that the Qur'ān recognised the Torah as equal in all aspects, nor the revelation to Muḥammad as equivalent to that to Moses. The verse pointed to the inability of the people of Mecca to produce a book similar to the Scriptures brought by Moses and Muḥammad, but it did not necessarily imply that the former was equivalent to the latter. As an example, Riḍā compared the case of the Qur'ān and the Torah with two works on the science of logic: 'Were it said to an individual, ignorant of the science of logic [...], 'Write me a book that is better than the book *Isagoge* [of Porphyry], and *al-Baṣā'ir al-Nuṣayriyya*',<sup>61</sup> would we say that this statement demonstrates that the two books are equal in every aspect?'<sup>62</sup>

Lastly, Ghabriyāl cited the verse indicating that the Torah contained God's ordinance or command (*al-Mā'ida*, 5:43). The verse was therefore a clear substantiation that the Torah was not twisted and that there was no need to follow any other law. Riḍā pointed out that the reason for the revelation of that verse was that a group of Jews intended to escape the punishment of stoning by asking the Prophet to be an arbitrator in a case of adultery committed by a highborn person among them, hoping that he would decide to flog the adulterer. Riḍā argued that the verse elucidated astonishment about the lack of confidence of the Jews in their religion by rejecting its judgement and yielding to another legislator. It was also amazing that they rejected the Prophet's judgement, which was in agreement with their own law. Their lack of confidence was also extended to the message of Islam

---

<sup>60</sup> Riḍā supported his argument by referring to the preceding verses: 'If (we had) not (sent thee to the Quraysh)—in case a calamity should seize them for (the deeds) that their hands have sent forth, they might say: 'O Lord! Why didst Thou not send us a messenger? We should then have followed the signs and been amongst Those who believe'! But (now), when the Truth has come to them from Ourselves, they say, 'Why are not (signs) sent to him, like those which were sent to Moses? Do they not then reject (the signs) which were formerly sent to Moses? They say: 'Two kinds of sorcery, each assisting the other and they say: 'For us, we reject all (such things).' (*Al-Qaṣaṣ*, 28: 47-48).

<sup>61</sup> *Al-Baṣā'ir al-Nuṣayriyya fī 'Ilm al-Mantiq* was written by Zayn al-Dīn 'Umar b. Sahlān al-Šāwī and dedicated to Nuṣayr al-Dīn Maḥmūd b. 'Abī Tawbah (d. 503 AH). According to Brockelmann, al-Šāwī probably died in 540 AH. In November 1898, Al-Azhar Council chose *al-Baṣā'ir* to be a textbook on logic. 'Abduh wrote his commentaries on the text of the book. See, Rafīq al-'Ajam, ed., *al-Baṣā'ir al-Nuṣayriyya li 'Ilm al-Mantiq*, Beirut: Dār al-Fikr al-Lubnānī, 1993, pp. 1-22.

<sup>62</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 137.

and all other religions.<sup>63</sup> Riḍā's very assertion of the corruption and the human features of the Bible permitted him to allege that although they contained 'the Command of God,' the Scriptures were not purely divine in their entirety. He argued that the book of *al-Sīra al-Ḥalabiyya*,<sup>64</sup> for instance, might contain the 'Command of God,' but this did not mean that it was secure from corruption. It had also included the personal views of the author.<sup>65</sup>

#### 4.2.5. *Books of the Old and New Testament*

Ghabriyāl devoted the second chapter of his book to discuss what he believed to be a rational proof of the authenticity of the Bible.<sup>66</sup> For him, God was omnipotent and wise to stipulate a constitution and to prescribe a law for human beings in order that they should comply with specific duties towards their Maker. The law regulated relationship among them, otherwise life would be in chaos with no deterrent or restrain. The people would also annihilate each other, and the good would be on equal footing with the evil, something God would never accept.<sup>67</sup> Ghabriyāl challenged Muslims: 'if that constitution and law were not the Old and New Testament, would you tell me what are they? Is there any other ancient holy book that accomplishes the same objective, as do the two Testaments?'<sup>68</sup>

Riḍā had a low opinion of the logic behind the argument of his opponent. He wondered why God had left humanity without a law for thousands of years before the Torah, and why this wisdom of His had not appeared except recently in the case of the Israelites. These question marks were enough for Riḍā to refute Ghabriyāl's arguments. Muslims, on the other hand, believed that God sent down innumerable messengers and prophets to all nations.<sup>69</sup> He also contended that the people of China were not like 'cattle' trampling each other, or like 'fish,' the big eating the small with no restrain. They had a civilisation and values of their own; either before or after the existence of

<sup>63</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/15, p. 578.

<sup>64</sup> 'Alī b. Burhān al-Dīn al-Ḥalabī, *al-Sīra al-Ḥalabiyya: al-Kitāb al-Musammā Insān al-'Uyūn fī Strat al-'Amīn al-Ma'mūn*, 3 vols, Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmiyya, n.d.

<sup>65</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/15, p. 579.

<sup>66</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/17 (Sha'bān 1319 /November 1901) pp. 654-659

<sup>67</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 654.

<sup>68</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>69</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 654-55.

the Israelites. They were even more advanced than the Israelites in science, culture and order. Riḍā added that they were more advanced than the Christians themselves whose religion advanced them in nothing but animosity, hatred, disagreement, discord, war and murder during the so-called 'Dark Ages,' while the Chinese lived in peace and harmony. The same was true for the Hindus. He argued that there is no harm for Muslims to believe that the Chinese religion and Hinduism were of divine origin, just as Judaism, Christianity and Islam. It is not forbidden to believe that God had sent down messengers for those people in order to guide them to 'eternal happiness.' But they intermingled their religions with inherited pagan tendencies, the same as the Christians did with their originally divine and monotheistic religion.<sup>70</sup>

Riḍā believed that when the Europeans replaced the law of the Old Testament with positive laws, and the customs of the Old and New Testament with philosophy, they discarded 'asceticism' and 'shook the dust of humiliation off their heads.'<sup>71</sup> By this the Europeans achieved more progress than during the time when they firmly followed the Bible. Riḍā believed at this time that in their good manners the Europeans were the closest people to Islam. These morals included their attachment to 'pride, high motivation, seriousness in work, honesty, trustworthiness, and seeking knowledge according to the universal laws and abiding by rationality.'<sup>72</sup> Riḍā was persuaded that Ghabriyāl's statement about the effect of the cultivation of the divine laws on human beings was only evident in the case of Muslims, rather than that of the Jews and the Christians. Historically, when Muslims faithfully fulfilled their duties towards God and the people, they became refined, their morals became cultivated and their civilisation advanced.<sup>73</sup> Riḍā ironically wondered if the needs of people were really to be fulfilled solely by the revelation of the Torah, why God would send down the Gospel on Jesus? However, this problem was not pertinent to Muslims, as they believed in the genuineness of the origin of the Bible.<sup>74</sup>

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., p. 656.

<sup>71</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 153.

<sup>72</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/17, p. 656.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., pp. 656-657. Riḍā concluded his arguments with the stanzas of the *lāmiyyah* by al-Būṣīrī on the character of Old Testament and its people. See the translation of Wood, pp. 156-157.

Ghabriyāl argued that it was impossible that both the Old and the New Testament were distorted, as both Judaism and Christianity became widespread throughout the East and the West. In his words, ‘the Scriptures, especially the New Testament, was translated from the original Greek and Hebrew languages into the languages of the peoples among whom they were spread, including Arabic, Aramaic, Abyssinian, Coptic, and Latin.’<sup>75</sup> It was not logical, therefore, that these thousands of Christians had collaborated on altering the Scriptures. Ghabriyāl repudiated the Muslim view that the Scriptures were corrupted. Muslims, in his view, definitely failed to pinpoint the altered passages, or to mention the real reasons behind this alleged corruption.<sup>76</sup>

In Riḍā’s opinion, the Qur’ān, unlike the Bible, was proven to be in a clear way transmitted orally and in writing. Thus, preference should be given to it above the Bible, as many ‘Christian scholars’ had admitted.<sup>77</sup> Riḍā quoted a piece of work by the Coptic convert to Islam, Muḥammad Effendi Ḥabīb, a teacher of Hebrew and English in Cairo, which he wrote against the above-mentioned Gibāra (see, the introduction). Ḥabīb quoted J.W.H. Stobart, the principal of La Martiniere College in Lucknow.<sup>78</sup> In Stobart’s view, ‘we have ample proofs to believe that the existing Qur’ān is itself the original words of the Prophet Muḥammad, as learnt or dedicated[?] under his observation and instruction.’<sup>79</sup> Stobart’s view was a quotation from Muir’s work, *The Life of Mahomet*,<sup>80</sup> whom Ḥabīb described as the ‘forceful enemy of Islam.’<sup>81</sup>

As for the alteration of the Bible, Riḍā argued that Muslims do not acknowledge that all these Scriptures were accurately transmitted from the prophets. They believe that the Jews and Christians subse-

<sup>75</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/19 (Ramaḍān 1319/December 1901), pp. 743-749.

<sup>76</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 743-744.

<sup>77</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 744.

<sup>78</sup> Ḥabīb, *op. cit.* J.W.H. Stobart, *Islam and its Founder*, London: Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1876. The College was established by Major General Claude Martin in 1836. See, Rosie Llewellyn-Jones, *A very ingenious man: Claude Martin in early colonial India*, Delhi [etc.]: Oxford University Press (India), 1992.

<sup>79</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/18, p. 744. Compare the original text: ‘There are ample and sufficient grounds for believing that the existing Qur’ān consists of genuine words, and is the original composition of the Prophet as learnt or transcribed under his own instruction. Stobart, *op. cit.*, pp. 87-88.

<sup>80</sup> William Muir, *The Life of Mahomet*, 4 vols., London: Smith, Elder, & Co., 1861.

<sup>81</sup> *Ibid.*

quently altered them after dispersing throughout the East and the West, and each people embracing Judaism and Christianity had translated them into their own languages.<sup>82</sup> For him, investigating the origin, scribes and transmitters of these books before the great expansion would embarrass the People of the Book, as it might expose many shortcomings in their history. Riḍā repeated an often-cited example by Muslim polemicists that it was not possible to believe that it was Moses who had written the five books of the Torah because they speak about him in the third person, and mentioned his death and burial in one of the chapters.<sup>83</sup>

Riḍā cited a passage from the Book of Deuteronomy in that Moses was reported to say: 'Take this book of the law, and put it in the side of the ark of the covenant of the Lord' (31:26). For him, this phrase was enough evidence to argue that Moses wrote a particular book, which must have been lost. The next passages also conclude the alteration of the Torah. Moses said: 'For I know that after my death you will utterly corrupt yourselves, and turn aside from the way which I have commanded you' (31:29).' Riḍā defined the word 'Torah,' as *shari'ā* or law, whereas the existing five books are historical, even though they contain some rulings. He compared it with the example of the Qur'ānic verses of rulings, which Muslim historiographers included in the works of the *Sīra* (the Prophet's Biography), as containing sound and unsound narratives. Muslims do not consider the books of *Sīra* as Qur'an or as part of the revelation. The same holds true for the stories on Moses and other Israelite prophets. Riḍā pointed out that the authors of these books did not examine their narratives as Muslim scholars did in their investigation of biographical works on the prophet.<sup>84</sup>

Riḍā attempted to invalidate the claim of Ghabriyāl that the Scriptures were preserved among thousands of people in various languages. As vindication for his conviction, Riḍā quoted an anonymous Christian Arabic work which acknowledged that the original copy of Moses' book disappeared at some time when paganism prevailed among the Israelites till it was rediscovered in the Kingdom of Hosea the Pious. The Christian author maintained that it is impossible that the original version of Moses had survived until the present time. It

<sup>82</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 161.

<sup>83</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/18, p. 745. See, Jawziyyā, *op. cit.*, p. 101.

<sup>84</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 741.

was also plausible that it was lost along with the arc when Nebuchadnezzar the Great had destroyed the temple in Jerusalem. This was therefore the reason why it was reported among the Jews that the priestly scribe Ezra was the one who had found it again by collecting the fragmented copies of the holy books and correcting their mistakes.<sup>85</sup>

Riḍā severely reproved the ‘People of the Book’ for their belief that Ezra had corrected and edited the Torah, while discarding the belief that the Prophet Muḥammad had the ability to restore the whole divine message. He moreover did not accept the idea that Ezra rewrote the Scriptures as they originally had been. He even went further to argue that it was not true that Ezra wrote the Torah on the basis of divine revelation to him. Riḍā held a view in this regard similar to many of early Muslim exegetes (such as Ibn Kathīr, al-Qurtubī, al-Ṭabarī) and polemicists. In his *al-ʿAjwiba al-Fākhira* (The Unique Replies), the Egyptian jurist Shihāb al-Dīn al-Qarāfi (d. 684 AH/1285 AD), for instance, maintained that Nebuchadnezzar murdered the Jews and burnt the Torah. Ezra had collected it many years later. One could not be sure about its authenticity, since it might have contained lots of *najasāt* (impurities).<sup>86</sup> In that regard Riḍā cited chapter seven of the Book of Ezra in which it was stated that Ezra had ‘set his heart to study the law of the Lord’ as a result of a letter given to him (Ezra 7:10-12). Riḍā interpreted this Biblical passage as meaning that Ezra was merely one of the scribes of the revealed law, just as any scribe of the revelation during the early age of Islam: ‘If we [Muslims] assume that the Qurʾān was lost, and was never preserved by heart, and then say that Muʿāwiya was inspired to write it only because he was one of the scribes—would the People of the Book accept this argument from us?’<sup>87</sup>

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 747. The work is titled: *Khulāṣat al-ʿAdilla al-Saniyya ʿalā Ṣidq ʿUsūl al-Diyāna al-Masiḥiyya* (The Essence of the Superior Evidences on the authenticity of the Christian Religion). Wood incorrectly translated the word *khulāṣat* as *summary*, and concluded that the work was an abridgement of another work. Wood, *op. cit.*, footnote, p. 163.

<sup>86</sup> Al-Qarāfi, *al-Ajwiba al-Fākhira*, on the margin of al-Baghdādī’s *al-Fāriq*, p. 211. See also the attitudes of al-Juwayni in his *Shifāʾ al-Ghalīl*, edited by Aḥmad Hijāzī al-Saqqā, Cairo, n.d., p. 59. See also the treatise of al-Jāhīz, *al-Mukhtār fī al-Radd ʿalā al-Naṣārā*, edited by M.A. al-Sharqāwī, Beirut and Cairo, 1991, p. 86.

<sup>87</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/18, p. 749.

### 4.3. *The Glad Tidings of Peace*

#### 4.3.1. *Muḥammad's Superiority above all Prophets?*

When the Egyptian missionary magazine *Bashā'ir al-Salām* (The Glad Tidings of Peace) praised the Israelites as 'the blessed family tree,' Riḍā portrayed its editor as someone 'swimming in the sea of illusions.'<sup>88</sup> In its own words, the *Glad Tidings* said that: 'is it not amazing that the Creator of the heavens and the earth was alone with the Children of Israel in the wilderness, where He addressed them and they addressed him [...]. Moses amongst them was in deep conversation with Him, addressing various topics, just as two intimate companions or close friends.'<sup>89</sup> The writer addressed his Muslim readers saying that the Prophet of Islam did not deserve to talk to God directly, listen to His voice, nor witness His majesty the same as the general folk of the Israelites did, let alone the elite among them. Neither had Muḥammad had the privilege of speaking to Gabriel. He was rather overcome with the feeling of fainting and trance, and by sweat appearing on his forehead on a day of severe cold.<sup>90</sup>

Riḍā considered this argument as a severe sacrilege against the divine. For him, Muslims reported that their Prophet ascended to the Heaven and witnessed some of 'the greatest miracles of God' during his journey by night (al-Mi'rāj). He also saw God and talked to Him without intermediary. Riḍā rejected the writer's view concerning Moses. According to the Book of Exodus, Moses and those among the Children of Israel saw lightning and heard thundering, the noise of a trumpet, and the mountain smoking (Ex. 20:18). The Israelites 'said unto Moses, speak thou with us, and we will hear: but let not God speak with us, lest we would die' (20:19). These passages, in Riḍā's opinion, disproved the author's statement that the laymen of the Children of Israel were talking to God directly and heard His voice. In his comparison between the two cases of *ru'yah* (vision), Riḍā relied on the Qur'ānic narratives. In the case of Moses, he 'fell down senseless' (al-'A'rāf, 7:143), while Muḥammad 'saw one of the greatest signs of his Lord.' (al-Najm, 53: 18).<sup>91</sup> Riḍā stressed that the Israelites, who were honoured and dignified by God, became rebellious

<sup>88</sup> Ibid.

<sup>89</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/16, p. 619.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 621.



and ungrateful to Him later. They also deserved ‘aversion’ and ‘loathing,’ and were deprived of God’s favour and mercy. The Arabs were given a ‘blessing’ through the removal of paganism. Riḍā found it strange that the writer quoted Qur’ānic verses to prove God’s blessing on the Israelites, while ignoring the verses manifesting their rebellion and disbelief.<sup>92</sup>

On another level, Riḍā went on to discuss his theological attitude towards anthropomorphism as contrasted with Biblical concepts. For Muslims, he argued, their fundamental basis of belief was the absolute dissociation from any resemblance between God and the created beings. Any Qur’ānic passage that might indicate anthropomorphism should be subjected to metaphorical interpretation. In comparison to the ‘anthropomorphism’ and ‘paganism’ of other religions, Riḍā maintained that Muslims believed that God is far above having [a] voice, place or direction, and that all of His attributes in the Qur’ān are merely a form of divine proclamation. Riḍā reproached the writer of the *Glad Tidings* for saying that God was in deep conversation with Moses as an intimate friend: ‘It is no surprise that those who say that Jesus is a god would say that God met alone with Moses, addressing various topics in His conversation with him.’<sup>93</sup>

Like contemporary Muslim periodicals, missionary papers had a separate section in which they used to answer the questions of their readers. These queries dealt mostly with theological issues, and were sometimes raised by Muslim readers. A Muslim ‘friend’ and reader of his journal, for instance, once raised the question to the *Glad Tidings*: Can we consider Peter, Paul, John and other New Testament authors as messengers of God? Is there any prophecy on their message in the Old Testament, just as that on the coming of Jesus?<sup>94</sup> Riḍā was certain that the question was invented, and could not be asked by a faithful Muslim. Muslims believed that messengers were those who received the revelation of an independent religion, and were commanded to preach it. Muslims never used the word ‘prophecy’ to mean ‘glad tidings.’ Riḍā was thus convinced that such a question was fabricated by the magazine in order to give a false impression and to delude their readers, or it was sent in by a ‘cultural’ Muslim who had nothing to do with Islam, except his name [...], nationality

---

<sup>92</sup> Ibid.

<sup>93</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, pp. 144-145.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., pp. 623-624.



and lineage.<sup>95</sup> Another query was raised by another 'friend': Why is it only Christians who are constantly involved in sending out missionaries from the first appearance of Christianity until the present day? The editor of the *Glad Tidings* answered: 'because Christianity is verily the guidance, and so far as guidance is in one's heart, he cannot restrain himself and conceal it from his fellow human beings.'<sup>96</sup> In his reaction, Riḍā repeated his aforementioned point of view that no religion was established without mission (see, chapter 3). However, he added that 'the true Da'wa was that of the disciples of Jesus, which was based on their strong faith; nevertheless, few joined them whereas the Islamic Da'wa continued to gain millions: as soon as a Muslim trader entered an Asian or African city, it would convert to Islam immediately.' It was only the European supremacy, Riḍā went on, that made missionaries 'loudly speak and write.' The true answer, which the Christian writer should have given, was that 'the Christians preached their religion because politics motivated them, while they were [always] followed by money and protected by weapons.'<sup>97</sup>

#### 4.3.2. *Fear and Hope*

In another article, the *Glad Tidings* asserted that 'many Muslims die on the carpet of hope to enter Paradise and enjoy its pleasures as based on the magnificent promises in their Qur'ān [...] The only reason for that is nothing but their ignorance of the reality of themselves and the perfections of the Almighty.'<sup>98</sup> It further argued that Muslims of knowledge and mental faculties seek relief from the burden of their sins through extravagant asceticism, devotion, supplication, and prayers to God. The magazine reckoned among these the fearfulness expressed by the Companions of the Prophet, such as Abū Bakr and 'Alī. The *Glad Tidings* suggested that 'if these Companions had known and believed in the doctrine of Salvation, they would have lived safe from God's stratagem and punishment.'<sup>99</sup>

Riḍā harshly criticised the writer's knowledge of Islam. According to him, the missionary writer incorrectly included the Ḥadīth scholar Sufyān al-Thawrī as one of the Companions. He was infuriated by

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 624.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid., p. 626.

<sup>98</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 5/3, p. 98.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 100.

what he considered as ‘offenses’ against the Companions and rightly-guided Muslim Imams. He furthermore asserted that Muslims have a higher esteem of the prophets than the Jews and the Christians who portrayed them as cruel, unjust, drunk, and committing adultery or murder. Riḍā was convinced that if a Muslim were required to believe in the collection of the books of the Old Testament, and his religion permitted him to elevate anyone above prophets, he would give his preference to those rightly-guided Imams above the prophets as described by the Torah.<sup>100</sup>

Concerning the concepts of ‘fear’ and ‘hope,’ Riḍā believed that they represent the basis of the true religion. In his view, the author disparaged the Islamic perception with regard to these two concepts only in order to attract people to his religion. He indirectly tried to promote the doctrine that salvation and the eternal life in the Kingdom would be solely obtainable through the belief that God would save people through becoming incarnate in a human body.<sup>101</sup> Riḍā extended his above-mentioned argument by stipulating that the Christian message encourages people to be more libertine through murder, committing adultery, getting drunk, and be a source of ruin to creation while being convinced that they would be saved by means of this doctrine. He also criticised the writer for ignoring the fact that his own Scriptures were not devoid of passages referring to Biblical prophets and saints, who were also fearful to God and hopeful for His blessings.<sup>102</sup> Riḍā made it clear, however, that many ‘fair-minded’ Christians held the same view as Muslims in their belief that all prophets and upright believers adhered to absolute monotheism. Their fear of God was to keep them apart from sins and evil, while their hope was to stimulate them to do right.<sup>103</sup> In conclusion, Riḍā reminded his missionary opponent of the various examples of fear mentioned by al-Ghazālī, such as fear of revoking repentance, and the incapacity to fulfil obligation.<sup>104</sup>

---

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 99.

<sup>101</sup> Ibid., pp. 99-100.

<sup>102</sup> Ibid., p. 100.

<sup>103</sup> Ibid., pp. 100-101.

<sup>104</sup> Ibid., p. 101. For more, see, chapter 4 of *Ḥiyā ‘Ulūm al-Dīn*, vol. 4, ‘Kitāb al-Khawf wā al-Rajā’; various editions.

#### 4.3.3. *Faith and Acts of Muslims*

Under the title, *'Imān al-Muslimīn wā A'māluhum* (Faith and Acts of Muslims), the *Glad Tidings* wrote that 'it is possible according the school of *Ahl al-Sunna* that one could truly believe in Islam, while persisting in evil action.'<sup>105</sup> Citing various Biblical verses, the writer raised two points of objection to Islam: 1) Islam was a false and valueless faith, as it did not impress the sense of repentance and good endeavour upon the mind of the believer, while abandoning him when his sins outweigh his good acts. It also denigrated the majesty of the Creator and amplified the misery of the created. 2) The Muhammadan religion was also incapable of bringing complete salvation for humankind.<sup>106</sup>

In his reply, Riḍā maintained that his 'disputant' did not perceive that his own argument could turn against him. He reiterated that the New Testament is the only way of redemption and that inheriting the Kingdom could be only achieved by the belief in Jesus, even when the believer was an evildoer or libertine. He also pointed out that faith was closely associated with good deeds in 75 Qur'ānic verses.<sup>107</sup> Riḍā argued that Islam stipulated that faith should produce sound deeds, while acts had no value in Christianity. But it was the missionary 'net' with which the magazine attempted to 'catch' ignorant Muslims into accepting Christianity through his allegations against Islam. At the same time, however, he completely forgot that preaching that salvation was confined to the doctrines of Trinity and Crucifixion only would never motivate its followers to do good and avoid evil. The 'ignorant' would therefore be deluded by the missionary argument, and be more inclined to choose the faith which does not burden him with additional religious duties.<sup>108</sup>

Riḍā agreed with the statement of the *Glad Tidings* that any faith that does not aim at perfection and piety is false. Its writer, however, criticised the concept of punishment according to some Muslim traditions that sinful Muslims will be 'imprisoned in the Hellfire for a period not less than seven hundred years and not more than seven thousand years.'<sup>109</sup> Riḍā rejected his opponent's assertion that such

<sup>105</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 5/11, p. 436.

<sup>106</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>107</sup> Riḍā cited Qur'ānic verses such as, 4:123-124, 8: 2-4, and 103:1-3.

<sup>108</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 437.

<sup>109</sup> As quoted in *ibid.*

reports are neither mentioned in the Qur'ān nor in sound Ḥadīths. They were only related in some unsound and unacceptable Ḥadīths of no binding proofs. Riḍā followed 'Abduh's view that the affairs related to the Day of Judgement should be taken directly from the Qur'ān and the *mutawātir* Ḥadīths. To make the point clear, the *Glad Tidings* quoted the Qur'ānic verse: 'There is not one of you but shall approach [hell] (Maryam, 19:71).' Riḍā interpreted the verse as not addressing Muslims. According to one exegetical view, the verse, in connection with the whole context of previous passages, was meant to address the unbelievers. Another view indicated that it generally referred to all people (believers and unbelievers). But believers will quickly pass alongside the Hellfire in order to appreciate God's blessing when they finally enter the Paradise.<sup>110</sup>

#### 4.3.4. Absurd Treatment

The *Glad Tidings* also attacked Islamic doctrines and practices as inferior to the *Jāhiliyya* Arab pagan society. It saw that Islam added six new elements of paganism to its pagan characteristics, which Riḍā considered as an absurd treatment.<sup>111</sup>

First of all, Muslims hold Muḥammad in the second place after God in the formula of *shahāda*, which they claim to be written on the Throne of God even before the Creation. Riḍā explained the general Muslim point of view that the Muslim must believe in the prophethood of Moses and Jesus, just as his belief in the prophethood of Muḥammad. As for the connection of the two names of Allah and Muḥammad in the *shahāda*, it had been narrated in some Traditions to the Muslim requesting utter the word '*abduhu* (his servant) in the formula. The *shahāda*'s being written on the Throne, in Riḍā's mind, was not one of the essential doctrines of Islam. 'And if the formula was really written down there, this would imply no form of paganism, since 'the servant remains servant, and the lord remains lord.'<sup>112</sup>

The *Glad Tidings* alleged that Muslims raise the status of the Ḥadīth to the Qur'ān, and for this reason the Sunnis became angered by the Shi'ī rejection of Ḥadīth. Riḍā considered both claims as false. The

<sup>110</sup> Ibid., p. 438.

<sup>111</sup> 'Sakhāfat Bashā'ir al-Salām fī al-Jāhiliyya wā al-Islam (The absurdity of *Bashā'ir al-Salām* concerning the Jāhiliyya and Islam),' *al-Manār*, vol. 5/13, p. 517.

<sup>112</sup> Ibid., p. 517.

Qur'ān was the fundamental basis of religion, while the Sunna was giving additional clarity. The Muslim is fully requested to believe in the Qur'ān and recite it in his worship. But disbelief in any one of the Ḥadīths will not harm his faith as a Muslim. Riḍā further explained that the Muslim is not obliged to follow the Ḥadīths related to worldly affairs (*dunya*), such as the one on cultivating the palm-tree. Muslims, he went on, can distinguish between the Qur'ān, as a direct revelation, and the indirect revelation, which the Prophet was reported to have uttered in his own words.

The missionary magazine, on the other hand, pointed out that the name of Muḥammad was connected with the name of Allah in many places in the Qur'ān as an associate in matters such as command and prohibition, and the obligation of obedience and love. It also maintained that Muslims take him as their master and intercessor. Taking a created being as an intercessor was identical to pre-Islamic Arab polytheism. The writer defended himself as a non-polytheist. Christians believe in Jesus as the eternal word of God, and as the creator, not the created. Muslims, on the other hand, are polytheists, since they know perfectly well the status of their prophet as a human being, while insisting on having him as an intercessor.<sup>113</sup> In the Qur'ān it is also stated that God and the angels perform *ṣalāh* (prayer) over the Prophet (33:56). But Muslims exaggerate in their perception of his pre-existence to the degree that they state that he was eternal light and pre-existing to humanity. Riḍā replied that the Prophet of Islam was nowhere in the Qur'ān or in the Sunna described as master. Riḍā criticised the writer for his misunderstanding of the verse. Muslim scholars interpreted the *ṣalāh* as 'mercy and compassion.' For Riḍā, the magazine's assumption was not logical: 'were every individual from whom we ask mercy and anybody or whom we call 'master' would be like a god of ours? Then we and the writer would have uncountable deities.'<sup>114</sup> Riḍā expressed a puritan view by stating that the exaggeration in honouring the Prophet in that way ensued from the books and narratives of *mawālid*, and the faith of the common folk. In his reply, Riḍā added that the concept of intercession (*shafā'a*) in Islam merely meant 'supplication.' In that sense, every Muslim was an intercessor, and similarly every believer summoning upon God for himself and others. The comparison between Jesus and Muḥammad

<sup>113</sup> Ibid., p. 520.

<sup>114</sup> Ibid., p. 519.

in this manner was, in Riḍā's view, absurd. He said cynically : 'it means that polytheism is the Muslim belief in their prophet as God's servant and his intercession as supplication to God, while the pure monotheism is the Christian belief that their prophet, who was born 1902 years ago, is God, the Pre-existent, the Eternal, the Creator of all things before and after him.'<sup>115</sup>

#### 4.3.5. *Exceeding the Borders of Politeness*

We have mentioned that Riḍā did not include all articles under the section of *Shubuhāt* in *al-Manār* in his later compiled treatise, which Wood has translated. In this part, two of these articles were written as replies to the *Glad Tidings*, which clearly display his increasing frustration with what he called 'exceeding the borders of politeness' within these missionary circles. Riḍā was shocked by what he saw as anti-Islamic views uttered by its newly-appointed editor-in-chief, Niqūlā effendi Rafā'il (or Raphael), whom he formerly knew as a 'decent' person.<sup>116</sup>

In the *Glad Tidings*, Rafā'il published one of his debates with a Muslim at the Protestant library in the city of Suez. The Muslim objected to the doctrine of the Crucifixion of Jesus using Qur'anic verses. But Rafā'il asked his Muslim adversary whether he would believe in the Crucifixion if he were a contemporary to Jesus, and personally witnessed it. The Muslim replied in the affirmative that he would have definitely believed in it just as other observers did. Then Rafā'il argued that it was more reasonable to believe in an incident as an eye-witness than to have faith in the story as had been told by an illiterate man in Mecca nearly seven hundred years later. The Muslim's reply was challenging, saying that he would definitely believe in the illiterate man, who was proven to be a messenger of God, while rejecting his eyesight and that of other people as well. Rafā'il re-contended that Muḥammad's words might have been the teachings of the Satan, but not of God. The great miracles achieved by

<sup>115</sup> Ibid., p. 520; Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 195.

<sup>116</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Da'wā Ṣalib al-Masiḥ (the Claim of Jesus' Crucifixion),' vol. 6/2 (Ṣafar 1321/May 1903), pp. 62-67. Niqūlā Rafā'il was the founder of another Christian bi-monthly magazine under the title: *al-Iṣlāḥ al-Maskūnī* or *al-'Aṣr al-Dhahabī* (1 June, 1906). See the index of Dār al-Kutub, *op. cit.*, p. 562. He was also the author of *al-Da'wa al-Waṭaniyya 'ilā Tabshīr al-'Umma al-'Islamiyya* (The National Call for Doing mission among the Muslim Community), Alexandria, 1900. See, Nuṣayr, *op. cit.*, p. 129.

Muḥammad were again enough evidence for the Muslim to believe in the divine origin of his prophet's message. Rafā'il, however, contested that while the Qur'ān rejected the reality of Crucifixion, the Holy Scriptures and their historical narratives, the majority of the people still believed in it. According to Rafā'il, the Muslim, unable to reply, was defeated by this argument and left the place. Rafā'il added that the Qur'ānic view on the Crucifixion was quoted from the belief of *al-Dustiyūn* (Docetics) that the physical body of Jesus was an illusion, as was his Crucifixion. Jesus was in reality incorporeal, and he only seemed to have a physical body and could not physically die. Rafā'il argued that Muḥammad had copied their belief in the Qur'ān (4:156) that the Jews: 'did not kill him, and they did not crucify him, but a similitude was made for them.'<sup>117</sup>

Riḍā had not expected that Rafā'il would attack Islam in this manner. In Riḍā's evaluation, Rafā'il's Muslim counterpart was definitely a common person who lacked deep religious knowledge; and the missionary must also have exaggerated his story by adding or deliberately perverting the words of his partner in the dialogue. Riḍā even doubted the Muslim's replies as real. He did not imagine that the faithful Muslim, who was confused by this argument, would leave such a debate without giving any convincing explanation of the Qur'ānic report concerning Crucifixion. Riḍā was convinced that the story of Crucifixion had become a controversial issue among the Christian themselves. For the first time, Riḍā's mentioned the Gospel of Barnabas, which he described as one of the Gospels in which there was no mention of the story, even though the Christians tried to destroy it.<sup>118</sup>

Regarding the miracles achieved by the Prophet Muḥammad, Riḍā held the classical point of view that the Qur'ān was his most significant miracle. He drew an analogy between the prophet and the author of many valuable medical books, who also proved to be a clever physician after many successful and useful treatments. The performance of miracles was never his evidence to be a good doctor. Muslims similarly believed that the prophet was enabled to perform many miraculous acts, but because they were less important than his mission he never made them the cornerstone of his mission. The prophet,

<sup>117</sup> Ibid., pp. 63-64. It was the argument of many Western scholars that the Docetic views of Jesus looked like the Qur'ānic concept of non-Crucifixion. See, for instance, H. Gregoire, *Mahomet et le monophysisme*, in *Mélanges Charles Diehl*, Paris 1930, pp. 107-119.

<sup>118</sup> Ibid., p. 65.

on the other hand, 'came to address minds, to support science, to explain reasoning, and to abolish witchcraft [...] and swindling by encouraging man to promote himself through knowledge and work.'<sup>119</sup>

Rafā'il's assertion that Islam was copied from Docetism was, in Riḍā's opinion, baseless. He argued that when missionaries objected to a Qur'ānic story related to a prophet or a nation known to them, they would immediately claim that Muḥammad plagiarised it from such-and-such false or heretical sects. But if their Scriptures gave no mention to a story mentioned in the Qur'ān, they would draw the conclusion that it had not been revealed. In plain words, Riḍā confirmed that the Prophet of Islam never learnt thoughts of other nations, and had no knowledge of languages other than Arabic.<sup>120</sup>

In conclusion, Riḍā asked his Christian compatriots to understand that he never intended to start attacking Christianity. But it was his duty as a scholar to defend his religion against any attacks and offenses. Missionaries, according to him, were not seeking the truth. He also demanded fair-minded Christians not to blame him. They should help him to bring the missionary attacks to an end.<sup>121</sup>

According to *al-Manār*, the editor(s) of the *Glad Tidings* soon dismissed Rafā'il. He also failed to find any other job as a journalist. Therefore he started to publish his own missionary publications, and toured Egyptian towns and villages to preach Christianity among Muslims. He sent Riḍā a letter with copies of his publications. In his letter, he wrote: 'Because I noticed that your magnificent journal is zealous in defending Islam, I am sending this letter to you in order that you would reply to it according to your knowledge, and publish the reply in your journal. And if you were not able to give reply due to its solid evidences, I would earnestly request you to pay it some of your attention.' Riḍā refused to give any answer, as it was logical for him that he only aimed at using *al-Manār* as a channel for making publicity for his writings. Riḍā furthermore disqualified Rafā'il's 'evidences' as 'childish fantasies.'<sup>122</sup>

<sup>119</sup> Ibid., p. 66.

<sup>120</sup> Ibid., pp. 66-67.

<sup>121</sup> Ibid. A few weeks later, Riḍā received a letter from one of his readers in Suez in which he reacted to Rafā'il's concept of Crucifixion. He cited a few passages from the Gospel, which he saw as an indication that the disciples of Jesus were also confused in recognising him even before his Crucifixion: (Mathew, 26:34, cf. Marcus 14:30, Luke 22:34 and 13:38). See, vol. 6/3, pp. 116-117.

<sup>122</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'al-Fidā' wā al-Qadāsah (Salvation and Holiness), vol. 7/12 (Jumādā al-Ākhira 1322/August 1904), pp. 453-457.



#### 4.4. *The Standard of Zion*

##### 4.4.1. *Sinlessness of Prophets and Salvation*

Riḍā received the missionary periodical *Rāyat Şuhyūn* (The Standard of Zion) with the editor's request: 'I request a reading of the article on the sinning of prophets and a reply to it.'<sup>123</sup> The article maintained that 'Muslims say that God sent many prophets to the world. The greatest among them were six: Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses, Jesus and Muḥammad. Many [Muslims] say that all of these prophets were sinless, and therefore were competent to grant salvation to their followers. If they had been sinners, it would have never been easy for them to do that, since the sinner can not grant his salvation from the sin to others.'<sup>124</sup> On the basis of stories from the Old Testament, the *Standard* argued that all these prophets, except Jesus, were sinners. Examples of these were Adam's disobedience to God and Noah's getting drunk. As for Abraham, it was reported that he 'lied twice because of his fear of the people.' Moses was commanded by God to go to the Pharaoh, but he showed great fear and increasing timidity, which would make God angry with him. When the Children of Israel were in the wilderness after their exodus from Egypt, Moses uttered incoherent words. God, due to this sin, forbade him to return to the land Canaan, and ordained him to die in the desert.<sup>125</sup> In the Qur'an, the *Standard* went on, it was also stated that all of them asked God's forgiveness, except Jesus.<sup>126</sup> This was exactly the same line of argument in the missionary writings of the late nineteenth century. The American missionary E.M. Wherry (1843-1927), for example, addressed the moral excellence of the Old Testament major prophets and Muḥammad. He further concluded that 'we nowhere find a single sentence or word, or even a shadow of a hint that Jesus was a sinner.'<sup>127</sup>

In his answer, Riḍā firstly explained that the author was incorrect in counting Adam among the five prophets of resolve (*'ulū al-ʿAzm*)

<sup>123</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/21 (Shawwāl 1319/26 January 1902), p. 816.

<sup>124</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 817.

<sup>125</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 169.

<sup>126</sup> As cited in *al-Manār*, vol. 4/21, p. 818.

<sup>127</sup> As quoted in, Alan M. Guenther, 'The Image of the Prophet as Found in Missionary Writings of the Late Nineteenth Century,' *The Muslim World* 90/1, 2000, p. 58.

from an Islamic point of view.<sup>128</sup> Muslims do not believe that due to their infallibility prophets would be their saviors; they were only sent as preachers. It is only one's faith and good deeds that can save a person. Riḍā ridiculed the writer by stating that he did not understand the notion of infallibility (*iṣma*) attributed to prophets according to Islam. Their infallibility merely means that they never committed any *kabīra* (grave sin), and does not signify that they were different from all human beings, or that they never experienced pain and fear. As for the author's statement that wine-drinking was the only sin Noah committed, Riḍā stressed that in the New Testament it is related that Jesus drank wine as well. As Jesus committed the same 'sin,' he would not have had the ability to save the people either. Riḍā interpreted the tale of Abraham's sinning by lying in an allegorical way. He intended to protect his wife by saying: 'she is my sister,' which meant 'in religion.' He hid the truth only out of necessity in order to get rid of evil and injustice by protecting his wife against slavery or capture.<sup>129</sup> Neither did Riḍā accept the idea that the fear expressed by Moses should be a sin or violation of the law. It was his human feeling of fearfulness and of the sublimity of his divine mission. It was also not appropriate, according to Riḍā, to consider the prophets seeking forgiveness as a mark of rebellion or violation of God's religion. It was only their perception of glorifying Him.<sup>130</sup>

#### 4.5. Conclusion

In the above-mentioned articles, we have shown that Riḍā discussed both Judeo-Christian and Muslim Scriptures on the basis of classical and modern interpretations. Riḍā's usage of Western sources in this

---

<sup>128</sup> The messengers of 'ulū-al-'Azm in Islam were five: Noah, Abraham, Moses, Jesus and Muḥammad. The prophet Muḥammad was asked to 'bear up [hardships] as did the apostles endowed with resolve bear up with patience' (Al-Aḥqāf: 35). They were called as such because they were resolve and arduous in facing the immense trial of their people.

<sup>129</sup> In his polemics with Samuel Ibn Nagrela, Ibn Hazm made it clear that the text of Genesis 20:12 on the tale specifically defined 'sister' in words attributed to Abraham himself, as 'daughter of my father.' The only way in which Abraham's marriage to his sister could be defended, Ibn Hazm said, would be by appeal to the Islamic principle of abrogation. See, Theodore Pulcini, *Exegesis as Polemical Discourse: Ibn Hazm on Jewish and Christian Scriptures*, Atlanta: Scholars Press 1998, p. 60.

<sup>130</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 4/21, pp. 819-820.

specific period was not entirely absent. It is interesting to see that he quoted the Western critical study of the Bible from a work of fiction, such as *ʿAlam al-Dīn*, and quoted the statements of a Christian convert to Islam.

Riḍā found the Egyptian magazine, *Glad Tidings of Peace*, the most outspoken among the Christian missionary publications in its enmity towards Islam. All of these missionary publications reflected the general thesis that Islam was at many levels inherently inferior and irrational as compared to Christianity. Specific criticisms included the following: the Qurʾān was inconsistent and inharmonious; and Muḥammad was inferior to Moses and Jesus and therefore not a real prophet. Therefore, Muslims did not properly adhere to their Scriptures, which strongly commanded them to believe in the Bible.<sup>131</sup> In his answer, Riḍā's supposedly abstract comparison of Moses, Jesus and Muḥammad was not entirely based on Islamic sources. He went beyond these sources by restricting his arguments to some descriptive analysis of the characters of the two prophets in comparison to Muḥammad. In the case of Moses, it was his upbringing under the custody of the Pharaoh, which made him a diligent and proud person. Jesus was portrayed as a Jewish man, who was much influenced by the Roman and the Greek way of life.

In his answer, Riḍā was in the 'defensive arena,' and his main objective was to refute the 'allegations' of the missionaries as much as he could. He was anxious that they would definitely affect the common Muslims who had no solid knowledge. Besides his critique of the textual authenticity of the Bible, Riḍā cynically attacked its content and the current interpretation of its message. The teachings of the canonical gospels were, for example, excessive in love and power in contrast to the Qurʾānic concept of moderation. He frequently attacked his Christian counterparts for their implicit propagation of 'evildoing' and of libertine behaviour among their followers through their confirmation that the only way of redemption was to believe in Jesus, whatever sins they might commit in their life. In comparison to that, he further argued, Islam required of the believers that faith should produce sound deeds.

---

<sup>131</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, pp. 44-45.



## CHAPTER FIVE

### IN PURSUIT OF A 'TRUE' GOSPEL: RIḌĀ'S ARABIC EDITION OF THE GOSPEL OF BARNABAS

Riḍā's Arabic edition of the Gospel of Barnabas should be seen as a continuation of a long-enduring Islamic search for a Biblical witness congruent with Islamic tenets of belief. Throughout history it has been a common phenomenon that Muslims maintained that the apostleship of Muḥammad had been foretold in Bible. On the basis of *al-Sīra al-Nabawiyya* of Ibn Ishāq and his citation from the Gospels (*Anājīl*), Alfred Guillaume tried to make a first reconstruction of the text of the Gospels, which was known in Medina in the early 8th century.<sup>1</sup> In a pioneering work, Tarif Khalidi collected the Arabic Islamic lore on the figure of Jesus.<sup>2</sup>

Muslim polemicists sometimes used apocryphal books, which fitted well with their arguments on the main trends of the Islamic tradition regarding Christianity. O. Krarup and L. Cheikho published fragments of Islamicised Davidic Psalters.<sup>3</sup> In order to prove that not Jesus, but another man was crucified, the *Mu'tazilī* theologian and chief Judge 'Abd al-Jabbār (935-1025), for example, quoted a few passages from an unknown apocryphal Gospel containing the story of the passion, alongside the canonical Gospels. Another unidentified apocryphal Gospel is quoted in the *Refutation of the Christians* by 'Alī b. Rabbān al-Ṭabarī, a medieval Nestorian physician who converted to Islam.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> A. Guillaume, 'The version of the Gospels used in Medina circa A.D. 700,' *Al-Andalus* 15, 1950, pp. 289-296.

<sup>2</sup> Khalidi, *op. cit.*

<sup>3</sup> Ove Chr. Krarup, *Auswahl Pseudo-Davidischer Psalmen*, Copenhagen: G.E.C. Gad, 1909; L. Cheiko, 'Quelques legendes islamiques apocryphes,' *Melanges de la Faculté Orientale* 4, 1910, pp. 40-43. See, also, 'Some Moslem Apocryphal Legends,' *The Moslem World* 2/1, 1912, pp. 47-59; S. Zwemer, 'A Moslem Apocryphal Psalter,' *The Moslem World* 5/4, 1915, pp. 399-403; Suleiman A. Mourad 'A twelfth-century Muslim biography of Jesus,' *Islam and Christian-Muslim Relations* 7/1, 1996, pp. 39-45. Cf. I. Goldziher, 'Polemik,' pp. 351-377.

<sup>4</sup> S.M. Stern, 'Quotations from Apocryphal Gospels in 'Abd al-Jabbār,' *Journal of Theological Studies* 18, 1967, pp. 34-57. Cf. D.S. Margoliouth, 'The use of the Apocrypha by Moslem writers,' *Moslem World* 5/4, 1915, pp. 404-408; Camilla Adang, *Mus-*

Much has been written about the controversial apocryphal Gospel attributed to Barnabas, whose Italian manuscript was discovered in the eighteenth century in Amsterdam. A number of these studies have argued that this anonymous Gospel was the work of Moriscos in Spain.<sup>5</sup> G.A. Wiegiers has recently made a link between the Gospel and the so-called *Lead Books* by arguing that it was an Islamically inspired work and a pseudo-epigraphic piece of anti-Christian polemics in the form of a gospel. He argued that the authorship of the Gospel would fit in the profile of a Morisco scholar and physician under the name of Alonso de Luna, who knew Latin, Arabic, Spanish and Italian, the languages used in the oldest manuscripts of the gospel.<sup>6</sup>

The Gospel of Barnabas reached the Muslim world for the first time through al-Qairanāwī's polemical work *Izhār al-Ḥaqq*.<sup>7</sup> He had derived his information from George Sale's Introduction to the Qur'ān (1734), who had known of a version of the Gospel in Spanish. But the Gospel gained much more diffusion among Muslims after Riḍā's publication of the Arabic text. As soon as he had received a complimentary copy of the Raggs' bilingual Italian-English edition from the Clarendon Press in Oxford, Riḍā spoke with Khalīl Sa'ādeh, who immediately approached the editors for permission to translate their work into Arabic.<sup>8</sup>

---

*lim Writers on Judaism and the Hebrew Bible: From Ibn Rabban to Ibn Hazm*, E. J. Brill, 1996. More about al-Ṭabari's polemics, see, David Thomas, 'The Miracles of Jesus in Early Islamic Polemic,' *Journal of Semitic Studies* 39/2, 1994, pp. 221-243.

<sup>5</sup> Luis F. Bernabé Pons, 'Zur Wahrheit und Echtheit des Barnabasevangeliums,' in R. Kirste, ed., *Wertewandel und Religiöse Umbrüche. Religionen im Gespräch*, Nachrodt, vol. 4, 1996, pp. 133-188; Mikel de Epalza, 'Le milieu hispano-moresque de l'évangile islamisant de Barnabé (XVI<sup>e</sup>-XVII<sup>e</sup> siècle),' *Islamochristiana* 8, 1982, pp. 159-183; G.A. Wiegiers, 'Muḥammad as the Messiah: comparison of the polemical works of Juan Alonso with the Gospel of Barnabas in Spanish,' *Bibliotheca Orientalis* 52/3-4, 1995, pp. 245-292. Cf. Longsdale Ragg, 'The Mohammedan Gospel of Barnabas,' *Journal of Theological Studies* 6, 1905, pp. 425-433; Luigi Cirillo & M. Fremaux, *Évangile de Barnabé, recherches sur la composition et l'origine: texte et tr.*, Paris: Beauchesne, 1977; J.N.J. Kritzing, *The Gospel of Barnabas: Carefully Examined*, Pretoria, South Africa, 1975; P.S. van Koningsveld, 'The Islamic Image of Paul and the Origin of the Gospel of Barnabas,' *Jerusalem Studies in Arabic and Islam* 20, 1997, pp. 200-228.

<sup>6</sup> G.A. Wiegiers, 'The Persistence of Mudejar Islam? Alonso de Luna (Muḥammad Abū l-'Asī), the *Lead Books*, and the *Gospel of Barnabas*,' *Medieval Encounters* 12/3, 2006, pp. 498-518.

<sup>7</sup> R. al-Qairanāwī, *Izhār al-Ḥaqq*, Constantinople, 1867, vol. 2, pp. 146-206.

<sup>8</sup> Rashīd Riḍā, ed., *Injīl Barnāba*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1325/1907. It actually appeared in 1908. The two included introductions, however, were dated on March/April 1908.

In her study of this Gospel, Christine Schirrmacher is not precise when she remarked: 'Auf dem Deckblatt der arabischen Edition hat der Herausgeber zwei Seiten des italienischen Manuskripts in Faksimile reproduziert und die arabische Edition mit dem Titel 'al-ingil as-sahih' versehen, woraus Rashīd Riḍā's Anspruch, hiermit das 'wahre Evangelium' vorzulegen, bereits deutlich wird.'<sup>9</sup> Although Riḍā's main interest in the Gospel emanated from the fact that it echoed the Qur'ānic image of Jesus and his servanthood to God, he did not mention the word '*ṣahīḥ*' on the cover of his Arabic edition. He presented it merely as a literal Arabic translation of the English (and original Italian) text as appearing on the cover: 'True Gospel of Jesus, called Christ, a new prophet sent by God to the world: according to the description of Barnabas his apostle.'<sup>10</sup>

The present chapter does not argue that Riḍā was convinced that the Gospel of Barnabas was a forgery. Neither does it claim that Riḍā was not in search for any newly discovered materials that would support his conviction of the corruption of the Scriptures, especially in his anti-missionary writings. It only tries to study what kind of change might have occurred in Riḍā's thoughts by looking at his introduction and the later use by *al-Manār* of the Gospel. Firstly an attempt is made to study Riḍā's earlier initiative of using the Gospel of the Russian philosopher Tolstoy. Secondly, I will discuss Sa'ādeh's participation in freemasonry, linking that to his translation of the Gospel. Then we shall move to study his perception of the Gospel as a historical piece of work through a critical reconsideration of his introduction. Finally and most relevant to the whole study we shall reconsider what motivated Riḍā to publish the Gospel on the basis of his introduction, and his later use of the Gospel in his journal and *Tafsīr* work.

### 5.1. *Championing Tolstoy's Gospel*

According to *al-Manār* itself, Riḍā was apparently in search of a 'true gospel of Christ' that would confirm the message of Islam. As has been noted earlier, before knowing of the Raggs' edition, Riḍā referred to the Gospel for the first time in 1903 in his reply to the *Glad Tidings* in the work of the *Shubuhāt*. There he wrote: 'The Christians

<sup>9</sup> Schirrmacher, *Waffen*, p. 300.

<sup>10</sup> Raggs, *op. cit.*, p. 2.

themselves do not deny that a dispute took place about the Crucifixion; and that there were some Gospels excluded by the synods centuries after Jesus, which denied the Crucifixion, *such as the Gospel of Barnabas, which still exists despite the attempts of Christians to 'obliterate' it, just as other Gospels which they had already obliterated.*<sup>11</sup> It is clear from this quoted passage that Riḍā at that moment knew about the existence of the Gospel of Barnabas (probably from al-Qairanāwī's *Izhār al-Ḥaqq*). A few pages later in the same issue of *al-Manār*, Riḍā, in one of his *fatwās*, referred to a certain Gospel 'in the *Ḥimyarī* script' which was said to be in the Papal Library in the Vatican (discussed below).<sup>12</sup>

In the same year, Riḍā published parts of an Arabic text of the Gospels according to the Russian writer and philosopher Leo Tolstoy (1828-1910), which had been published in 1879.<sup>13</sup> We have already said that Riḍā was aware of the excommunication of Tolstoy from the Russian Orthodox Church because of his religious ideas (see, chapter 4). One of Tolstoy's contributions was his composition of what he saw as a 'corrected' version of the four Gospels. In his collection, he unified them into one account, excluding the reports on Christ's birth and genealogy, his miracles (such as his walking on the lake, and the healing of the sick), his mother's flight with him to Egypt, and the references to prophecies fulfilled by his life. He also left out most of the material about the birth of John the Baptist, his imprisonment and death. For Tolstoy, 'to believe in Christ as God is to reject God.'<sup>14</sup> It is interesting to know that many of Tolstoy's works were available in Arabic for readers in Egypt. 'Abduh was fascinated by his ideas, believing that he 'cast a glance on religion which has

<sup>11</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/2, p. 64

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 67

<sup>13</sup> For more details, see, David Patterson, ed. and trans., *The Gospel according to Tolstoy*, The University of Alabama: Tuscaloosa & London, 1992, p. xvii.; Comte Léon Tolstoï, *Les Évangiles*, translated from the Russian text by T. de Wyzewa and G. Art, Paris: Librairie Académique Didier, 1896. Richard F. Gustafon, *Leo Tolstoy: Resident and Stranger—A Study in Fiction and Theology*, Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1986; David Redston, 'Tolstoy and the Greek Gospel,' *Journal of Russian Studies* 54, 1988, pp. 21-33. Cf. other works of Tolstoy on religions, *A Criticism of Dogmatic Theology* (1880-83), *What I Believe* (1883-84), and *The Kingdom of God is Within You* (1893).

<sup>14</sup> As quoted in Patterson, *op. cit.*, p. xvii.



dispelled the illusions of distorted traditions, and by this glance he has arrived at the fundamental truth of divine Unity.<sup>15</sup>

Following 'Abduh's steps, Riḍā championed Tolstoy, and frequently praised his thoughts and writings in *al-Manār*.<sup>16</sup> In three successive articles, he published Tolstoy's own introduction to his Gospels in Arabic under the caption "The True Gospel: Introduction of the Russian philosopher Tolstoy known as "the Gospels,""<sup>17</sup> which was prepared for *al-Manār* in a translation from French. Riḍā praised this 'true Gospel' as the result of freedom in religious research, which the Protestant thinking revived in Europe. Riḍā reckoned Tolstoy as one of the Western scholars, who sifted out the teachings of the Bible, and liberated his thoughts from the dogmas prescribed by the Church. Typical of Riḍā's views was that the conclusions reached by those free-minded scholars in that regard came closer to the Qur'ānic perceptions regarding the corruption of the Gospels. Riḍā moreover deemed their views to be a substantial proof of the truth of Islam.<sup>18</sup>

Riḍā agreed with Tolstoy in his distrust of the four canonical Gospels. He further argued that these Gospels clearly indicated that Jesus' followers in his age were 'Awāmm Jāhilūn (ignorant laymen). After his death they became dispersed and persecuted by the Jews and Romans until Constantine had adopted Christianity. When the Christian religion had acquired its authority, there emerged synods to collect all written religious material. A multitude of Gospels was collected from which these four were authorised, and which only contained some of Christ's historical records and transmitted sermons.<sup>19</sup> But Riḍā did not take all of Tolstoy's arguments for granted as they contained many things contrary to the Islamic narratives on the life of Jesus, especially his denial of Jesus' miracles. However, he

<sup>15</sup> Letter 'Abduh to Tolstoy, 8 April 1904; as quoted in the English translation in the diaries of Abduh's friend Blunt, *op. cit.*, pp. 455-456.

<sup>16</sup> His works were translated by Salim effendi Qab'in. These translations were also available for sale at Riḍā's bookshop. See, for example, *al-Manār's* reviews of some of these works, vol. 5/24 (March 1903), p. 952; vol. 6/11 (August 1903), p. 427; vol. 7/23 (February 1905), p. 915; vol. 9/12 (January 1907), p. 946; vol. 10/4 (June 1907), p. 292; vol. 13/2 (March 1910), p. 131, vol. 16/1 (January 1913), p. 66.

<sup>17</sup> *Al-Manār*, 'Al-Injil al-Ṣahih: Muqaddimat Kitāb al-Faylasūf al-Rūsī Tolstoy al-Ladhī Sammāhu al-Anājil,' vol. 6/4 (16 Ṣafar 1321/14 May 1903), pp. 131-137. See also other following parts in, vol. 6/6, pp. 226-232; vol. 6/7, pp. 259-265.

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 131.

<sup>19</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 131.

saw the work of Tolstoy as a very useful tool in contesting the missionary allegation that the Qurʾān bore testimony to the canonical Gospels as the real word of God, a point that he had also challenged in his *Shubuhāt* earlier.<sup>20</sup>

### 5.2. *Announcing another ‘True’ Gospel?*

In July 1907, *al-Manār* started to announce its publication of the Gospel of Barnabas by printing some Arabic samples of Saʿādeh’s translation.<sup>21</sup> Riḍā also reminded his readers of his earlier publication of Tolstoy’s Gospel, and once again quoted a lengthy passage from Tolstoy’s introduction: ‘The reader should remember that these Gospels in their present form do not entirely contain the testimonies of the disciples of Jesus directly [...], and the oldest copy that has come down to us from the fourth century was written in continuous script without punctuation, so that even after the fourth and fifth centuries they have been subject to very diverse interpretations, and there are not less than fifty thousand such variations of the Gospels.’<sup>22</sup> In line with the Tolstoy Gospel, Riḍā announced the publication of the whole Arabic edition of the Gospel of Barnabas by his publishing house in 1908. On the cover of the *al-Manār* issue in which he announced this, Riḍā wrote clearly: ‘This Gospel is the narrative of Barnabas [...] which he [himself] called the ‘true Gospel,’ and whose privilege over other circulated Gospels is that it confirms monotheism, denies Crucifixion, and gives elaborate prediction of our Prophet Muḥammad.’<sup>23</sup> Riḍā’s insistence on publishing the Gospel in Arabic was due to its conformity with the form and structure of famous canonical Gospels on the one hand, and its agreement with many Islamic concepts on the other. A second objective was his intention to make this work available to Arab readers, just as the Westerners did in some of their languages.<sup>24</sup> To promote the publication he quoted the passages from the Gospel, which agree with Islamic con-

<sup>20</sup> Ibid.

<sup>21</sup> ‘Al-Injil al-Ṣaḥīḥ aw Injil Barnabā,’ *al-Manār*, vol. 10/5, pp. 385-387, vol. 10/7, 8, 9 (September-November 1907), pp. 495-501 & pp. 621-625 & pp. 651-658.

<sup>22</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 10/5, p. 385.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 386

cepts, among others that it was not Jesus who died on the Cross, but Judas instead.<sup>25</sup>

### 5.3. A Freemason

Sa'adeh's relation with Riḍā and his journal has been described above (see chapter 2). Based on Sa'adeh's testimony in his preface to the Arabic translation of the Gospel, it is obvious that he did not want to commit himself to the religious meaning of the text: 'I feel obliged to stress that I have been committed in my introduction to follow my research from a historical and scientific point of view only. [...] My translation is just to serve history. Therefore, I have avoided any religious discussions, which I leave for those who are more competent than I.'<sup>26</sup>

Sa'adeh was born a Christian, but held secularist beliefs. Previous studies on Sa'adeh's role in the Arabic edition of the Gospel of Barnabas did not pay attention to his participation in Masonic activities, which can be considered as a justifiable interpretation for his cooperation with Riḍā in the translation work. His affiliation with the freemasons dates back to 1885, when he was a member of the lodge of Sulymān al-Mulūki during his four-year service as a medical advisor, and director of the English Hospital in Jerusalem. In this period, he became the secretary of the lodge, and later its president. According to Sa'adeh, the meetings of the freemasons took place at this time in a cave, which was discovered by the American consul in Jerusalem.<sup>27</sup>

Later in 1915, Sa'adeh described the discovery of the consul of this cave, and what he named their 'historic meeting' in it. While he was hunting rabbits, the consul discovered a small hole covered with trees. The cave (which they thought to be the Temple of Solomon) was very wide, and had big pillars and huge rocks. Sa'adeh wrote:

In this dark cave our impressive meeting was held. It was attended by many British and American MP's. Police agents, who were freemasons

---

<sup>25</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 10/12, pp. 947-948. On the cover of the Arabic edition it is mentioned that the Gospel was available at al-Manār Bookshop for the price of 15-20 piasters exclusive posting costs (2 piasters); and the introduction was to be sold for 10 piasters.

<sup>26</sup> Khalil Sa'adeh's introduction to the Arabic translation, 'Muqaddimat al-Mutarjim (the Translator's introduction),' p. 16.

<sup>27</sup> Hamie, *al-'Allāma*, p. 54.

as well, guarded the entrance. The number of attendants was not less than 200 people, most of whom were of high status. [...] In that dark cave, where nothing would spoil the spreading calmness, except the sound of water moving in the canal nearby, we had heard fascinating speeches. Some of them were the most beautiful I had ever heard in my life. The attendants sent a telegram of loyalty to King Edward VII, Prince de Galles and the Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of England; and in whose name we shouted three times. [...] We then went out, and took a picture in the front of the entrance of the cave beside our freemasonry logo. In this particular meeting, I was thinking of building a freemason lodge in Jerusalem, which I wished to be the Grand Lodge of the whole freemason world.<sup>28</sup>

Unlike Afghāni and ‘Abduh, there is no proof so far that Riḍā took part in freemason activities in Egypt or elsewhere.<sup>29</sup> During his stay in Egypt, Sa‘ādeh must have been a member of its Grand Lodge. In 1905 he dedicated one of his translated novels to Idrīs Rāghib, the grand master of the lodge in Egypt.<sup>30</sup> After his migration to Brazil, he remained active, and became the president of the freemason lodge *Najmat Sūriyya* (the Star of Syria) in Sao Paulo.<sup>31</sup> Sa‘ādeh quitted in May 1926, when he became convinced that masonic teachings relating to liberty and the elimination of tyranny and despotism had no tangible results, and that the teachings of its rites were futile.<sup>32</sup>

One might consider Sa‘ādeh’s commitment to freemasonry as a clarification for his embarking on translating the Gospel, as part of his attitude towards the Holy Scriptures and religion in general. It would also suggest that he might have embraced the belief of the majority of freemasons that every scripture of faith or every religion is to be respected equally. The Baptist minister and Masonic author

<sup>28</sup> As quoted in *ibid.*, p. 55.

<sup>29</sup> See, for instance, A. Albert Kudsi-Zadeh, ‘Afghāni and Freemasonry in Egypt,’ *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 92/1, Jan.—Mar., 1972, pp. 25-35; cf. Karim Wissa, ‘Freemasonry in Egypt 1798-1921: A Study in Cultural and Political Encounters,’ *Bulletin of the British Society for Middle Eastern Studies* 16/2, 1989, pp. 143-161; Jacob M. Landau, ‘Muslim Opposition to Freemasonry,’ *Die Welt des Islams* 36/2, July 1996, pp. 186-203.

<sup>30</sup> It was his *Asrār al-Thawra al-Rūsiyya: Riwāya Tārikhiyya ‘Asriyya*. See, Hamie, ‘L’homme,’ p. 110 & p. 255

<sup>31</sup> Schumann, *op. cit.*, p. 606. The official language of al-Mulūkī lodge was English. See also, Mishāl Sab‘, ‘al-Masūniya fi Sūrya,’ available at: <http://www.syria-wide.com/Abass.htm>, accessed on 23 July 2007.

<sup>32</sup> Hamie, ‘L’homme,’ p. 261. His son Anṭūn became the secretary of the lodge. Three months later Anṭūn also resigned, see, Anṭūn Sa‘ādeh, *al-‘Athār al-Kāmila: Marḥalat mā Qabla al-Ta’sīs 1921-1932*, vol. 1, Beirut, 1975, pp. 198-202.

Joseph Fort Newton (1880-1950) put it clearly: 'Whether it be the Gospel of the Christian, the Book of Law of the Hebrew, the Koran of the Mussulman, or the Vedas of the Hindu, it everywhere masonically symbolises the Will of God revealed to man.'<sup>33</sup> In the same vein, one would venture to argue that Sa'ādeh had no strong commitment to one religious scripture above another; and this would accordingly make sense that somebody like him would accept the task of making the translation of that Gospel.

### 5.3.1. *Critical Analysis of Sa'ādeh's Preface*

Sa'ādeh was aware that scholars fundamentally differed around the historicity of the Gospel of Barnabas without reaching any satisfactory answer about its origin. Following the Raggs, he gave a detailed description of the Italian manuscript of the Gospel, which was first discovered in Amsterdam by J. F. Cramer, a Counselor of the King of Prussia. He also referred to the Spanish manuscript referred to by Sale that had been in the possession of Dr. Thomas Monkhouse of Oxford (d. 1793).<sup>34</sup>

Sa'ādeh was convinced that the Italian manuscript had been stolen from the Papal Library by the monk Fra Marino, who had by accident come across the Gospel of Barnabas in the library of Pope Sixtus V (1585-1590) among other scriptures, when the latter was asleep. The monk, who had managed to gain the Pope's confidence, discovered the manuscript and hid it in his sleeves.<sup>35</sup> Sa'ādeh accepted the possibility that the existing Italian manuscript was the very manuscript found by Marino in the Pope's library, arguing that by examining its water-mark researchers discovered that it was dated to the second half of the 16th century during Sixtus' Papal office. He also added that its water-mark proved that it had been written on paper of clear Italian character on which there appears a picture of an 'anchor in a circle.'<sup>36</sup> In this regard, Sa'ādeh was selective, and did not elaborate on the point carefully. He actually accepted the description of M. Briquet, who had argued that its paper was 'distinctively Italian,'

<sup>33</sup> Joseph Fort Newton, *Religion of Masonry: An Interpretation*, Kessinger Publishing, 2003, p. 94. Cf. William Green Huie, *Bible Application of Freemasonry*, Kessinger Publishing, 1996, p. 72.

<sup>34</sup> Sa'ādeh, *op. cit.*, pp. 2-3; cf. Schirmacher, *Waffen*, pp. 260-261 & 301.

<sup>35</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 3. Cf. Jomier, *Commentaire*, p. 138; as referred in Slomp (1978), *op. cit.*, pp. 73-74.

<sup>36</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 4.

which was also mentioned by the Raggs. But he left out other arguments which other scholars referred to, such as J. Toland, who described the paper as Turkish.<sup>37</sup> It should be added that L. Cirillo dated the water-mark of its paper to the second half of the sixteenth century. The binding of the manuscript was made of Turkish leather, decorated in the Ottoman style with a double gilt-edged frame and a central floral medallion on both covers. Although the main text was Italian, its lay-out showed that this manuscript was executed according to the Ottoman tradition.<sup>38</sup>

Sa'ādeh criticised the eighteenth-century European scholars who examined the Italian manuscript for their speculations in answering the question about the originality of the text, and whether it was the copy found by Marino or a later one. These scholars, in his view, had not paid attention to the Arabic sentences and phrases on the margin of the text, which could be the clue to answer the question. He also blamed the orientalist David Samuel Margoliouth (1858–1940) for not having dealt with the question in more details. Margoliouth maintained that 'the Arabic glosses [...] cannot have been composed by anyone whose native language was a form of Arabic.'<sup>39</sup> He also pointed out that this fact had escaped the notice of Toland, as also of La Monnoye who had described the 'citations arabes' as 'fort bien écrites.' Denis, on the other hand, had not failed to observe its mistakes and archaic style.<sup>40</sup> In Sa'ādeh's mind, although some of the Arabic expressions on the margin had been composed correctly and were well-structured, they apparently had been modified by the scribe of the manuscript. Some other phrases were difficult to understand, while others were very archaic. This would mean that the scribe tried to translate them literally and in the 'narrowest' and 'silliest' sense. For example, he incorrectly structured the genitive case by putting the *mudāf* 'ilayh (the second noun) in the place of the *mudāf* (construct state) by saying: 'there is no such an Arab [writer] who would make such a mistake under the sun.'<sup>41</sup>

Sa'ādeh paraded some of these mistakes and reached the conclusion that these Arabic glosses had been written by more than one scribe. He concluded that the language of the original composer had been

<sup>37</sup> Raggs, *op. cit.*, p. xiv.

<sup>38</sup> Cirillo, *op. cit.*; as quoted by Van Koningsveld, *op. cit.*, pp. 217-218.

<sup>39</sup> Raggs, *op. cit.*, p. xlix.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid. Cf. Sa'ādeh, *op. cit.*, p. 5.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

correct, but then a following copyist had tampered with it. His lack of command of Arabic had resulted in many changes, and he corrupted much of what the first scribe had already written down. The scribe added to them many 'silly expressions, archaic styles and foreign elements producing no meaning [...] Therefore, the Italian copy found in [...] Vienna is not the original one and is undoubtedly taken from another copy.'<sup>42</sup>

Regarding to the author of the Gospel, Sa'ādeh literally quoted the Raggs' views that the copying process had taken place in 1575 possibly by Fra Marino. He translated their words as follows: 'Anyhow, we can surely say that the Italian book of Barnabas is original. It was done by somebody, whether a priest, secular, monk or layman, who had an amazing knowledge of the Latin Bible [...] And like Dante, he was particularly familiar with the Psalter. It was the work of somebody whose knowledge of the Christian Scriptures was exceeding his familiarity with the Islamic religious Scriptures. It was more probable; therefore, that he was a convert from Christianity.'<sup>43</sup>

There were congruent features between the Gospel and the famous 'Divina Comedia' by Dante in his description of hell, purgatory and paradise. These coincidences and quasi-coincidences in both accounts regarding the infernal torment were a good reason for some historians to relate the Gospel to the fourteenth century and to believe that its author was probably a contemporary with Dante. Sa'ādeh, however, maintained that the descriptions of hell in the Gospel of Barnabas were reminiscent of those of Dante only in its numbering of its seven circles. He argued that it was more plausible to believe that both authors did not live in the same age. It was just a matter of *Tawārud al-Khawāṭir* (telepathy). It was also possible that both of them, in different ages, had quoted from an earlier work depending on Greek mythology.<sup>44</sup>

Sa'ādeh's hypothesis did not depend on any further historical elaboration or linguistic analysis of both works. The Raggs were more

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 7. Compare the Raggs: 'Thus much we may say with confidence. The Italian *Barnabas* is, to all intents and purposes, an original work. It is the work of one who, whether priest or layman, monk or secular, has remarkable knowledge of the Latin Bible—as remarkable, perhaps, as Dante's—and like Dante, a special familiarity with the Psalter. It is the work of one whose knowledge of the Christian Scriptures is considerably in advance of his familiarity with the Scriptures of Islam: presumably, therefore, of a renegade from Christianity.' Raggs, *op. cit.*, pp. xliii-xliv.

<sup>44</sup> Sa'ādeh, *op. cit.*, pp. 7-8.



systematic in their comparison between the Gospel of Barnabas and Dante. Although they pursued many examples of reminiscences and studied the 'common atmosphere' of both, they considered it a 'superficially attractive theory.'<sup>45</sup> All those who studied the similitude between the Gospel and Dante at this time did not pay attention to another probability that Dante himself might have depended on Islamic sources. It was not until 1919 that the Spanish orientalist and Catholic priest Miguel Asín Palacios (1871-1944) compared the Muslim religious literature on the Prophet Muḥammad's *Mi'raj* (ascension to Heaven) with Dante's story describing a spiritual journey among the various inhabitants of the afterlife.<sup>46</sup>

According to the Raggs, Western scholars in the eighteenth century were of the view that there 'lurked an Arabic original.'<sup>47</sup> They also argued that this suggestion was made by Dr. White in 1784, who wrote that 'the Arabic original still existed in the East.' His statement was based on Sale's statement that 'the Muhammedans have also a Gospel in Arabic, attributed to St. Barnabas, wherein the history of Jesus Christ is related in a manner very different from what we find in the true Gospels, and correspondent to those traditions which Mohammed has followed in the Qur'ān.'<sup>48</sup> Sale had not seen the Gospel, but had based his statement on the information of La Monnoye, who had never seen an Arabic original either.<sup>49</sup>

Sa'ādeh's view in this respect is paradoxical. Having discussed the Arabic glosses, he at first concluded that it would be quite unfeasible that the original text was Arabic for many reasons. First of all, it was not possible that a translator with the ability to translate the Gospel from Arabic would have committed linguistic mistakes. Most of the

---

<sup>45</sup> Raggs, *op. cit.*, pp. xl-xli. See also, Lonsdale Ragg, 'Dante and the Gospel of Barnabas,' *The Modern Language Review* 3/2, January, 1908, pp. 157-165.

<sup>46</sup> See, for instance, Miguel Asín Palacios, *La Escatología musulmana en la 'Divina Comedia'*, Madrid: Real Academia Española 1919. Western scholars started to elaborate on the point after Palacios had published his theory. See, for instance, Louis Massignon, 'Les recherches d'Asin Palacios sur Dante,' *Revue du Monde Musulman* 36, 1919; Alfred Guillaume, 'Mohammedan Eschatology in the Divine Comedy,' *Theology* 6, 1921; Paul A. Cantor, 'The Uncanonical Dante: The Divine Comedy and Islamic Philosophy,' *Philosophy and Literature* 20/1, 1996, pp. 138-153; Theodore Silvesterstein, 'Dante and the Legend of the Miraj: The Problem of Islamic Influence on the Christian Literature of the Otherworld,' *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 11/2, 1952, pp. 89-110.

<sup>47</sup> Raggs, *op. cit.*, p. xv.

<sup>48</sup> As quoted in *ibid.*, pp. xv-xvi.

<sup>49</sup> *Ibid.*



expressions used in the text would suggest that the original was Latin or Italian. It is more probable therefore that the scribe was from Venice and that he had copied the manuscript from another Tuscan text or from a Venetian text mingled with Tuscan expressions.<sup>50</sup> After having discussed the above-mentioned Western views on an Arabic original, Sa'ādeh reached another conclusion:

Nevertheless [...] it should be declared that I am more inclined to believe in an Arabic original rather than any other [language]. [The fact] that it has never been found should not be taken as an argument that it has never existed. If not, it should be believed that the Italian was the original version because no other copy has been found except the aforementioned Spanish one, which was said to have been translated from an Italian version. The oriental reader would at first glance recognise that the writer of the Gospel of Barnabas had a wide knowledge of the Qur'ān to the degree that most of his phrases were almost literally or figuratively translated from Qur'ānic verses. I am saying this while being aware that I am opposing the majority of Western writers who immersed themselves in the matter.<sup>51</sup>

Sa'ādeh did not agree with the Raggs that the writer of the Gospel had little knowledge of Islam. For him, many stories mentioned in the Gospel corresponded with the Qur'ānic narratives.<sup>52</sup> The Gospel of Barnabas also contained many statements, which could be traced in the Ḥadīth-literature and 'scientific mythologies' which were only known to the Arabs. Sa'ādeh digressed from his main subject with the sweeping statement that 'although there are a large number of orientalist preoccupied by Arabic and the history of Islam, we do not find nowadays among Westerners those who are considered to be real scholars of Ḥadīth.'<sup>53</sup>

Another proof for Sa'ādeh's assumption of an Arabic original was the style of binding of the Italian manuscript, which was, in his opinion, undoubtedly Arab. He furthermore disagreed with the view that it was the work of the Parisian binders brought by Prince Eugene of Savoy, as merely a presupposition.<sup>54</sup> It was again the conclusion of the Raggs, who closely studied the manuscript: 'the binding is, to all

<sup>50</sup> Sa'ādeh, *op. cit.*, pp. 6-7.

<sup>51</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 9.

<sup>52</sup> He mentioned examples, such as the story of Abraham and his father (The Gospel of Barnabas, pp. 55-63) that resembles the Qur'ānic narratives (al-Anbiyā 21: 48-73 & al-Şaffāt 37: 83-101). *Ibid.*, p. 9.

<sup>53</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>54</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 9-10.

appearance, oriental. If it be the work of the Prince's Parisian binders (as no doubt the outer case is), then it is an astonishingly faithful copy of an oriental model.<sup>55</sup> They compared the style of binding of the manuscript of the Gospel to another document, of 1575, in the Archive of Venice; and also based their argument on that of Lady Mary Wortley-Montague's (1689-1762) remarks of 1717, that 'the books were profusely bound in Turkey leather, and two of the most famous bookbinders of Paris were expressly sent to do this work.'<sup>56</sup>

In Sa'adeh's mind, it was indifferent whether the writer of the Gospel was of Jewish or Christian origin. He was convinced in either case that he was a convert to Islam. Sa'adeh bemoaned the loss of the Spanish manuscript and the fact that the scholars who had witnessed it had not studied it meticulously.<sup>57</sup> He also stated that to speak of an Arabic original does not mean that the writer was of Arab origin. The most plausible argument, in his view, was that the writer of the Gospel was an Andalusian Jew who had converted to Islam, after he had been forced to adopt Christianity and had become very familiar with the Christian Scriptures. The writer's remarkable knowledge of the Bible was hardly to be found among the Christians of this time, except among a small group of specialists. Sa'adeh corroborated his premise with the fact that many Jews in Andalusia had an excellent command of Arabic to the extent that some had belonged to the class of poets and literati. The passage of the Gospel of Barnabas concerning the obligation of circumcision and the 'hurting' report that Jesus had said 'a dog is better than an uncircumcised man' (Chapter 22, p. 45) was, in Sa'adeh's eyes, another evidence that it had not been written by somebody of Christian origin. He again digressed from his subject by arguing that the Arabs had never tried to persecute people of other religious denominations in the beginning of their conquest of Andalusia. The fact that the Jews of Andalusia had converted to Islam in droves, and had sustained Muslims in conquering Spain and their

<sup>55</sup> Raggs, *op. cit.*, p. xiii.

<sup>56</sup> *Ibid.*, p. xiii (footnote).

<sup>57</sup> Sa'adeh, *op. cit.*, p. 11. An eighteenth-century copy of the Spanish manuscript was discovered in the 1970s in the Fisher Library of the University of Sydney among the books of Sir Charles Nicholson, which was marked in English as 'Transcribed from ms. in possession of the Rev. Mr. Edm. Callamy who bought it at the decease of Mr. George Sale and now gave me at the decease of Mr. John Nickolls, 1745.' See, J.E. Fletcher, 'The Spanish Gospel of Barnabas,' *Novum Testamentum* 18/4, 1976, pp. 314-320. The manuscript has been published in L.F. Bernabe Pons, *El Evangelio de San Bernabe; Un evangelio islamico espanol*, Universidad de Alicante, 1995.

long-term establishment could also indicate, according to Sa'ādeh, that the author of the Gospel was one of these converts.<sup>58</sup>

On another level, he wrote: 'This was one of the incentives, which spurred the people of Andalusia to yield to the Muslim authority [...], except in one thing, namely circumcision. At a certain point in time, however, they [Muslims] compelled the people to do it and issued a decree obligating the Christians to follow the tradition of circumcision, like Muslims and Jews. This was therefore one of reasons which made the Christians 'pounce' on them.'<sup>59</sup>

Sa'ādeh changed to confirm that the writer of the Gospel was an Arab. Another reason for this was his treatment of the philosophy of Aristotle, which was widespread in Europe in the early Middle Ages. As this philosophy had reached Europe through the Arabs in Spain, it would confirm that its writer was an Arab, but not a Westerner.<sup>60</sup>

Sa'ādeh did not accept the view that the milieu of the Gospel of Barnabas was Italian. This was the historical conclusion made by the Raggs maintaining that the style of the book and the atmosphere it breathed were occidental, more specifically medieval Italian. They mentioned many suggestive parallels between passages in the Gospel and the manners and customs of people in Italy. For example, its picturesque eulogy of the 'bellezza' of the summer season of fruits voiced an experience that was almost worldwide; and had familiar parallels in the Old Testament.<sup>61</sup> The Raggs were of the view that *vendemmia* (Vintage in Tuscany) in the Gospel would give a 'realistic description' of the historical background in which the Gospel had been written. Its reference to the expert stone-quarriers<sup>62</sup> and the solid stone buildings<sup>63</sup> were also 'more suggestive of a nation of born *mura-*

<sup>58</sup> Ibid.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 10.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 15.

<sup>61</sup> Raggs, *op. cit.*, chapter 185, pp. 391-400. 'Behold, then, how beautiful is the world in summer-time, when all things bear fruit! The very peasant, intoxicated with gladness by reason of the harvest that is come, makes the valleys and mountains resound with his singing, for that he loves his labours supremely. Now lift up even so your heart to paradise, where all things are fruitful with fruits proportionate to him who has cultivated it.'

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., chapter 116, p. 251. 'But tell me, have you seen them that work quarried stones, how by their constant practice they have so learned to strike that they speak with others and all the time are striking the iron tool that works the stone without looking at the iron, and yet they do not strike their hands? Now do you likewise.'

<sup>63</sup> Chapter 153, p. 327. 'Have you seen them that build [and] how they lay every stone with the foundation in view, measuring if it is straight [so] that the wall will not

*turi* than of tent-loving Arabs.<sup>64</sup> Sa'ādeh saw these examples as merely an indication of an oriental rather than an occidental environment. These manners and customs during the harvest time and stone-quarrying had been known in the remote past among the peoples of Palestine and Syria as well.<sup>65</sup>

The Raggs corroborated their above-mentioned theory on the relation between Dante and the Gospel of Barnabas by the incidental reference to the Jubilee as giving a definite date for the origin of the Gospel. The Jubilee year was a Jewish celebration occurring every fifty years (Leviticus 25:10-11). The first recorded Jubilee was that of Pope Boniface VIII in 1300. The Pope issued a decree that the Jubilee should be observed once every hundred years.<sup>66</sup> After his death, however, Pope Clemens VI decreed in 1343 that the jubilee year should be held once every fifty years as the Jews had observed it. Pope Urban VI later proposed the celebration of a Jubilee every thirty-three years as representing the period of the sojourn of Christ upon earth, while Pope Paul II had decreed that the Jubilee should be celebrated every twenty-five years. In the Gospel it was mentioned: 'the year of jubilee, which now cometh every hundred years, shall by the Messiah be reduced to every year in every place.' (chap. 82, p. 193). This was a convincing reason for some historians to conclude that the author of the Gospel knew of the decree of Boniface. It would be reasonable therefore to suggest that it had not been written earlier than the second half of the fourteenth century.<sup>67</sup> Sa'ādeh argued that it was difficult to understand how somebody, who had such a wide knowledge of the Bible, would make such a naïve error which he excused as a spelling mistake by the copyist. He gave the far-fetched argument that the writing of the word 'fifty' in Italian is almost identical to the word 'one hundred.'<sup>68</sup>

In one sub-section, the Raggs dealt with the Gospel of Barnabas as part of the question of the lost Gnostic Gospels, and whether the Italian Barnabas enshrined within its covers the lost Gnostic Gospel

---

fall down? O wretched man! for the building of his life will fall with great ruin because he does not look to the foundation of death!

<sup>64</sup> *Ibid.*, p. xxxviii.

<sup>65</sup> Sa'ādeh, *op. cit.*, p. 11.

<sup>66</sup> Raggs, *op. cit.*, pp. xli-xlii.

<sup>67</sup> Sa'ādeh, *op. cit.*, pp 12-13.

<sup>68</sup> The word 50 in Italian is 'cinquanta,' while 100 is 'cento.' The two words are not almost identical as Sa'ādeh argued.

which bore that name. The so-called 'Gelasian Decree' mentioned an *Evangelium Barnabe* as a heretical book. The decree was an apocryphal text, which was generally to be dated in the century after Pope Gelasius; and this was a reason for some people to suggest that such an apocryphal Gospel survived during the time of the Prophet Muḥammad. The Raggs further argued:

It is quite conceivable, then, that some of the apocryphal stories of the Qur'ān may be indirectly borrowed from this Gospel. If this be so, then a Christian student of the Qur'ān would at once be attracted by the Gnostic Gospel of Barnabas if it chanced to fall into his hands. Assuming, then, for the sake of argument, that an original Gnostic Barnabas, or a Latin version of the same, fell into the hands of a Christian renegade of the fourteenth or fifteenth century—just as the Spanish translation(?) fell into Fra Marino's hands in the last quarter of the sixteenth century—it would give him at once a title for his great missionary pamphlet, and a vast amount of material to work upon.<sup>69</sup>

On the basis of these arguments, Sa'ādeh concluded that to say that the Gospel of Barnabas was entirely invented by a medieval writer was still debatable. The half or third of it would correspond with sources other than the Bible and the Qur'ān. If the Gelasian Decree were true, Sa'ādeh added, it would be possible that the Gospel of Barnabas was existent long before the Prophet of Islam, albeit this would mean that it was different from its present form. The Gelasian Decree would also imply that it was well-known among the elite of scholars in this age. 'Therefore,' Sa'ādeh wrote, 'it was probable that any information about it must have reached the prophet of Islam (even by hearing), including the repeated and lucid statements and explicit chapters in which his name was clearly mentioned.'<sup>70</sup>

Sa'ādeh did not understand the Raggs' standpoint entirely. He mistakenly interpreted their sub-section on the Gospel of Barnabas as one of the Gnostic Gospels by thinking that a gospel had existed under the name of the '*Gnostic Gospel*,' which was completely lost. He totally misapprehended the argument of the Raggs, who only intended to put the Gospel of Barnabas in the context of other apocryphal Gospels and its deviance from the canonical ones, especially in its account of the 'valedictory denunciation of St. Paul' and the 'painless birth of Jesus.'<sup>71</sup> Sa'ādeh was erroneous in his argument that

<sup>69</sup> Raggs, *op. cit.*, pp. xlv-xivi.

<sup>70</sup> Sa'ādeh, *op. cit.*, p. 12.

<sup>71</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 13; See Raggs, *op. cit.*, p. xlvi.

‘this *Gnostic Gospel* was probably a father of the Gospel of Barnabas.’<sup>72</sup> In the end, he left aside the earlier-mentioned argument about an Arabic original copy of the Gospel. He reformulated the Raggs’ views that a Jewish or Christian convert to Islam might have found a Latin or Greek version of this Gospel in the fourteenth or fifteenth century and made it up in its form, and therefore its origin had disappeared.<sup>73</sup>

#### 5.4. Riḍā’s Introduction

Following Sa’ādeh’s introduction Riḍā wrote a few pages in which he described his personal attitude towards the Gospel and its significance as an apocryphal book. At the start, he reiterated Tolstoy’s statement that Christian historians were unanimous that there had been a great number of Gospels in the early centuries after the coming of Jesus, but clergymen had selected four only. But he did not attribute the statement to Tolstoy this time. In his conviction, the Christian *muqallidūn* (imitators) followed the selection of their clergymen without any further investigation, while those who valued science and avoided *taqlīd* (imitation) were eager to study the origin and history of Christianity even by means of such rejected Gospels. He also maintained that the reason for the existence of multiple versions of Gospels was the interest of each follower of Jesus to write a *sīra* (biography) and name it a ‘gospel,’ which contained his sermons and history. Therefore, apocryphal books could be useful after comparing them with the other canonical books. Riḍā argued that their significance would lie in their giving information about other religious conceptions, which had not been officially stipulated by clergymen:

Had these gospels survived, they would have been in their content the most affluent historical sources [...] You would have also watched the scholars of this age judging and deducing from them [conclusions] through the methods of modern sciences, as they have become safeguarded by the ‘fence’ of freedom and independence of thought and will: a thing which clergymen had never produced when they selected these four gospels only.<sup>74</sup>

<sup>72</sup> Ibid.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid.

<sup>74</sup> Riḍā’s ‘Muqaddimat al-Nāshir (the publisher’s introduction),’ p. 17, see also, ‘Injil Barnabā, Muqaddimatuna laḥū,’ *al-Manār*, vol. 11/2 (Şafar 1326/April 1908), p. 114 (Cited below as, ‘muqaddimatuna’).

Riḍā stressed that Barnabas accompanied Paul for a long time. After his conversion to Christianity, Paul had been introduced to the apostles on his return to Jerusalem by Barnabas (Acts 9:27). Before making any attempt to review the arguments of Sa'ādeh, Riḍā stated that because the belief of Paul became more dominant and became the pillar of Christianity, it was no wonder that the Church considered the Gospel of Barnabas as non-canonical or incorrect. But he was pleased that the Gospel had not been discovered in Europe during medieval times: 'Had anybody found it in the medieval centuries—the centuries of the darkness of fanaticism and ignorance—it would never have appeared [...]. Its copy, however, appeared in the vivid light of freedom in these [Western] countries.'<sup>75</sup> In Riḍā's evaluation, the views of Western scholars concerning the paper of its manuscript, binding and language had been a result of painstaking and scholarly research, but their conclusions about its earliest writer and the time of its composition were merely reached by way of conjecture. Like any researcher basing his propositions on incorrect assumptions, while considering it as a valid postulate, those who studied the Gospel had assumed that the author was a Muslim, but became puzzled later and did not manage to define his origin.<sup>76</sup>

After this statement, and without further elaboration, Riḍā started to rephrase some of Sa'ādeh's findings that its author was an Andalusian Jew, who had converted to Islam. He also mentioned an argument by an anonymous 'priest in a religious magazine,' who had argued that most of the chapters of this Gospel were not known to any Muslim before. Riḍā was probably referring to Temple Gairdner, who had alluded to the 'strange' fact that none of the earlier Muslim writers had ever referred to this Arabic 'Gospel of Barnabas.'<sup>77</sup> Riḍā was initially persuaded that its reference to the year of Jubilee was the 'strongest' assertion that its composer had been a medieval writer, but Sa'ādeh's argument and his illustration on the 'weakness' of this theory made him change his view. Sa'ādeh's examination was, for Riḍā, meticulous enough, and there was no other evidence to depend on in this regard. The same held true for Sa'ādeh's argument concern-

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 115.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>77</sup> Selim 'Abdul-Ahad and W. T. Gairdner, *The Gospel of Barnabas: An Essay and Inquiry*, (foreword by Jan Slomp) Hyderabad: Henry Martin Institute of Islamic Studies, 1975, p. 15 (first published in Cairo, 1907), cited below as Ahad and Gairdner.



ing Dante.<sup>78</sup> In line with Sa'ādeh, Riḍā supported the viewpoint that Fra Marino probably was the writer of the Arabic glosses on the Gospel. He argued that conversion to Islam must have stimulated him to learn Arabic, but he had not been able to write in correct phrases. As he learnt a language in his old age, it was normal that he had made several mistakes. Most of his correct expressions, however, were literally quoted from the Qur'ān or other Arabic sources, which he might have read.<sup>79</sup> According to Riḍā, there was another possibility that a clergyman had found the Gospel, and started learning Arabic in order to determine any Arabic reference to which he might ascribe this Gospel. Neither native nor non-native (*a'jamī*) speaker would say in Arabic, for example, 'Allah Subhān' instead of 'Subhāna Allah.'<sup>80</sup>

Researchers rejected the Gospel's affirmation of the coming of Muḥammad by name. One of their arguments was that it was not logical that it had been written before Islam, as foretelling should come usually in a metonymical way. Riḍā maintained that it was probable that the translator of the Gospel into Italian had rendered the name Muḥammad from the word 'Paraclete.' However, deeply-religious people, in his opinion, would not see such things as contradictory with divine revelation. He quoted the Tunisian Muslim reformist Muḥammad Bayram al-Khāmis (1840-1889) who reported on the authority of 'an English traveler' that he had seen in the Papal Library in the Vatican a copy of a gospel written in the Ḥimyarī script, which was dated before the coming of the Prophet Muḥammad. Bayram al-Khāmis did not define the gospel by name, but this 'reliable' gospel, according to him, literally corresponded with the Qur'ānic verse: 'And giving the good tidings of an Apostle who will come after me, his name being Aḥmad' (61: 6). Riḍā gave no reference for his information, but tracing Bayram's *Ṣafwat al-I'tibār* I have found that the author did not describe the Englishman as 'traveler.' Bayram also did not hear this report personally from him. It was an account which Bayram mentioned in the context of his description of the Vatican and its library, which he portrayed as containing thousands of books, including this gospel in 'Arabic Ḥimyarī script, which had been written two hundred years before the [Islamic] message.'<sup>81</sup>

<sup>78</sup> 'Muqaddimatuna,' p. 116.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 117.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p. 118.

<sup>81</sup> Muḥammad Bayram al-Khāmis, *Ṣafwat al-I'tibār bi Mustawda' al-Amṣār wā al-Aqfār*, edited by Ma'mūn Ibn Muḥī al-Dīn al-Jannān, Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-Ilmya (2 vols.), 1997, vol. 2, p. 14.



Riḍā, however, admitted that it was never reported that any Muslim had seen a gospel with such an evident prediction of the coming of Muḥammad. In his view, it seemed that the remains of such gospels were still existent in the Papal Library in the Vatican with other banned books dated to the early centuries of Christianity. The appearance of such works, he believed, would remove all assertions around the Gospel of Barnabas and other gospels.<sup>82</sup> In the end, Riḍā urged his Muslim readers not to think that Western scholars and Eastern Christian writers (such as Sa'ādeh and the above-mentioned founders of *al-Muqṭataf* and *al-Hilāl*) doubted the authenticity of this gospel out of their fanaticism as Christians by concluding:

The age when fanaticism used to incite people to obliterate historical facts has elapsed [...] Aside from its historical advantage and its judgment in our [Muslims] favour in the three issues of dispute; namely monotheism, non-Crucifixion and the prophethood of Muḥammad, it suffices us to publish it because of its sermons, wisdom, ethics and best teachings.<sup>83</sup>

#### 5.4.1. *Later use by al-Manār*

Riḍā scarcely mentioned the Gospel of Barnabas in his religious arguments against Christian missions. Four years later *al-Manār* for the first time mentioned the Gospel in its comment on an article published in the Russian journal *Shūrā*, which compared Ibn Taymiyya and Luther in sciences related to Christianity. (see, chapter 2).<sup>84</sup> In 1929, *al-Manār* published a critique written by a certain al-Yazīdī from Rabat on Emile Dermenghem's biography of the Prophet Muḥammad.<sup>85</sup> Al-Yazīdī, among others, attacked the Church for failing to have established clearly the divine revelation, and for the fact that its clergymen had not only corrupted their religion, but rejected

<sup>82</sup> 'Muqaddimatuna,' p. 119. In 1903, Riḍā mentioned the same argument about this Gospel in his answer to a *fatwā* by one of his readers in Cairo on the prediction of the Prophet Muḥammad in other scriptures. *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/2, p. 67.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid. Unlike Sa'ādeh, Riḍā praised people such as Margoliouth for his independent findings on the Gospel.

<sup>84</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 15/7, pp. 542-544.

<sup>85</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 30/6 (Jumādā al-ʿĀkhira 1348/December 1929), p. 445. He was probably Muḥammad al-Yazīdī, a member of the Moroccan secret society al-Zāwiya. His name has been mentioned on the list of the society, Muḥammed Azūz Hakīm, *al-Hāj 'Abd al-Salām Bannūna*, Rabat: al-Hilāl Press, vol. 2, p. 14. Émile Dermenghem, *La vie de Mahomet*, Paris: Plon, 1929.

the message of Muḥammad. As a comment on this article, Riḍā rebuked Dermenghem and requested him to call Christians to convert to Islam, as this religion was the *muṣliḥ* (reformer) of Christianity. In a footnote, he confirmed that Christians had lost the real Gospel. As Islam, in his view, came to abrogate all preceding laws, Christianity should return back to it, and not vice versa. Riḍā was now more outspoken: ‘The Gospel of Barnabas is the truest in our point of view above all these canonical Gospels, as it utterly speaks of monotheism and its proofs, and the prophethood of Muḥammad.’<sup>86</sup>

Riḍā cited the Gospel of Barnabas again in the context of his exegesis of the verse: ‘Those who follow the Messenger; the unlettered Prophet, whom they find mentioned in their own (Scriptures)—in their Torah and the Gospel’ (Al-’A’rāf, 7: 157). In his discussion on the *bishāra* (foretelling or glad tidings) of previous Judeo-Christian Scriptures of the coming of the Prophet Muḥammad, Riḍā quoted lengthy passages (about 60 pages) of *’Izhār al-Ḥaqq*.<sup>87</sup> After discussing what he deduced as *bishārāt* from the authorised Biblical books, al-Qairanāwī preferred to avoid quoting other prophecies mentioned in non-canonical books, except the Gospel of Barnabas. Al-Qairanāwī pointed out that despite its exclusion by clergymen this Gospel included ‘the greatest *bishāra* about the Prophet of Islam.’<sup>88</sup> He also believed that it was one of the most ancient Gospels, and even existed before the coming of Islam. Concerning the historicity of this Gospel, al-Qairanāwī noted that it had been mentioned in books dated back to the second and third centuries A.D. This would mean that it had been written ‘two centuries before Islam.’ Al-Qairanāwī did not accept the argument that it was a Muslim who had corrupted this Gospel either, since it had nowhere been reported that Muslims had ever attempted to make any change in the widely accepted scriptures, let alone the Gospel of Barnabas.<sup>89</sup>

In Riḍā’s view, there was ‘a clear mistake’ made by al-Qairanāwī in calculating the years, since the Prophet had received his message in the beginning of the seventh century. This meant that Barnabas had written his Gospel five centuries before Islam, and not two. Riḍā, however, supposed that Jesus ordered Barnabas to write it down in

---

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 445.

<sup>87</sup> Al-Qairanāwī, *op. cit.*, pp. 146-206.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 206

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 206.

the first century, although there was no earlier mention of it. The oldest version discovered in Europe, nevertheless, was dated to the 15th or the 16th century.<sup>90</sup> Riḏā in details quoted the *bishārāt* from the Gospel of Barnabas annexing to them some passages of his above-mentioned introduction.<sup>91</sup> He added another *bishāra* from the book of Haggai (2:7-8): 'For thus saith the Lord of hosts: Yet one little while, and I will move the heaven and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land. And I will move all nations: and *the desired of all nations* shall come and I will fill this house with glory: saith the Lord of hosts.' Riḏā stated that the 'desired of all nations' was in its original Hebrew '*hemdat* (תְּהִמָּדָת),' which directly means 'praised,' and would consequently refer to the Arabic 'Muḥammad.'<sup>92</sup>

By the end, Riḏā restated: 'We believe that the Gospel of Barnabas is superior to these four Gospels in its divine knowledge, glorification of the Creator, and knowledge of ethics, manners and values.'<sup>93</sup> He agreed with Sa'ādeh that some of its ethical and cognitive notions had been derived from the philosophy of Aristotle. Riḏā argued that similar arguments had also been raised by 'independent' Western scholars concerning the Mosaic laws as derived from Hammurabi (which he had endorsed earlier), and concerning the ethics of the Gospels as emanated from Greek and Roman philosophy. Riḏā was straightforward in declaring his pragmatic approach in polemics by saying: 'We might have agreed with the People of the Book and have accepted these *shubuhāt* (allegations) as well, but we establish proofs against them by exploiting them in [defending Islam] in this situation [of polemics].'<sup>94</sup>

### 5.5. *Short-lived Like an Apricot: A Missionary Response*

The appearance of the Gospel must have been a shock to many Christian believers.<sup>95</sup> Strangely, Riḏā never alluded to any Christian response to his undertaking. He only told us one anecdote that hap-

<sup>90</sup> *Tafsīr Al-Manār*, vol. 9, p. 245.

<sup>91</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 249-250.

<sup>92</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 250; italics mine.

<sup>93</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 251.

<sup>94</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 251.

<sup>95</sup> Some available studies have examined a few evaluations made by Muslims and Christians afterwards, as well as some recent debates on the Gospel and their impact on Muslim-Christian relations later. See, Oddbjørn Leirvik, 'History as a Literary

pened a few months after its publication, when he was visiting his village in Lebanon. In one of his meetings with Muslims and Christians, one of the Muslim attendants shouted: 'Without you [Riḍā] the status of Islam would never be elevated!' A Christian fellow replied: 'Not only yours, he also published the Gospel for us'—meaning the Gospel of Barnabas. Riḍā and other people laughed. He ironically wrote: '*Habbadhā hadhihī al-Sadhāja ma'a hadhā al-'Itifāq bayna al-Muslimīn wā al-Naṣārā* (how wonderful this naïveté is, when accompanied by harmony among Christians and Muslims).'<sup>96</sup> 'Abd al-Masiḥ al-Antākī (1874-1922), the Greek Orthodox proprietor of *al-'Omrān* journal in Cairo and a friend of Riḍā, expressed his interest in the Gospel as well.<sup>97</sup>

Then working in Cairo, Temple Gairdner and his Egyptian fellow-worker Selim 'Abdul-Wāhid wrote a refutation of the Gospel. The authors did not make a straight reference to Riḍā, but their treatise should be seen as a contemporary Christian description of the whole debate. In their own words, they contended:

The name (though not the contents) of this strange book had long been known in India, and was not unknown in Egypt. Though it was only by name, it has been freely cited in these countries by inserted parties, who cited a book they had never seen or read, and almost certainly never would have heard of, except for a chance mention of it in Sale's Introduction of the Qur'ān [...]. Moreover it has been triumphantly cited by the opponents of the Christian religion as the book which most of all confuted the New Testament and demonstrated all that our Muslim friends have alleged against the Christian Book and against Christianity in general. It would seem that such men, therefore, have been guilty of using as one of their valued weapons a book about which they knew nothing other than the name.<sup>98</sup>

As an active member in missionary circles in Egypt, the Muslim convert to Christianity 'Abd al-Masiḥ al-Bajūrī sharply reacted to Riḍā's

---

Weapon: The Gospel of Barnabas in Muslim-Christian Polemics,' *Studia Theologica* 54, 2001, pp. 4-26 (Quoted below, 'Barnabas'); Goddard (1994); Jan Slomp, 'The Gospel in dispute: a critical evaluation of the first French translation with the Italian text and introduction of the so-called Gospel of Barnabas,' *Islamochristiana* 4, 1978, pp. 67-111; id., 'The pseudo-Gospel of Barnabas, Muslim and Christian Evaluations,' *Bulletin Secretariatus pro non christianis* 9, 1976, pp. 69-76.

<sup>96</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 11/11, (Dhū al-Qī'da 1326/December 1908), p. 879.

<sup>97</sup> Letter from Antākī to Riḍā, 8 May 1908. More about Antākī, see Sāmī al-Kayyālī, *al-Adab al-Mu'āṣir fī Sūriyā*, Cairo, 1959, p. 81.

<sup>98</sup> Ahad and Gairdner, p. 1.

publication of the Gospel in a hitherto unnoticed polemical piece of work under the title *Khūdhāt al-Khalāṣ* (see, introduction). According to Bājūrī himself, he was taught Christian theology by Gairdner, and became keeper at the English missionary Library in Giza. His polemical treatise against the Gospel of Barnabas was primarily a collection of articles, some of which he earlier published in the Egyptian Christian journals *al-Haqq* ('The Truth') and *Bashā'ir al-Salām* (see, chapter 4). After the publication of the Gospel in Arabic, he immediately approached a certain Ma'zūz Effendi Jād Mikhā'il, a notable Copt from the town Dīr Muwās (the province of Minia, southern Egypt), who showed his enthusiasm by financing the printing of a treatise against the Arabic edition of Riḏā on the condition that the profit should be used to publish another Christian rejoinder to Muslim attacks.

Throughout his whole treatise, Bājūrī did not refer to Riḏā directly by name, except at the end of his work.<sup>99</sup> Like many other Christian Egyptians, Bājūrī often called him the 'intruder Sheikh,' whose objective was to enflame the animosity between Islam and Christianity. Besides his attack on the Gospel, he reported many interesting stories about his conversion and the conversion of other contemporary Muslims in Egypt. He maintained that he abandoned Islam after a long-term investigation of the Bible. As he committed himself to the 'service of Jesus,' his treatise was a message to the Muslim umma. His intention was to give those 'arrogant' people a lesson if they dared to assault his new religion. In his view, Muslims turned their efforts to attack the essence of Christianity in their magazines instead of reacting to Cromer's writings on Islam.<sup>100</sup>

Bājūrī incorrectly thought that the publisher and translator of the Gospel in English was George Sale. As he had no anxiety that the Gospel would have an impact on the English people, the translator published this 'mythical' work in order to teach his Christian fellow-citizens the superiority of their Gospel over such 'invented and futile' books. Unlike the English people, he went on, Muslims of Egypt believed that the authority of religion was above everything, including

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 122.

<sup>100</sup> Bājūrī, *op. cit.*, pp. 1-24. See, my paper 'Aussi éphémère que l'abricot ». La réponse d'un converti égyptien au christianisme à la publication de l'Évangile de St Barnabé en arabe,' in L. Guirguis, ed., *Conversions religieuses et mutations politiques. Tares et avatars du communautarisme égyptien*, Paris: Editions Non Lieu, 2008, pp. 97-110.

the freedom of individuals. They became excited when they saw the Gospel in Arabic; and it was, Bājūrī believed, part of the anti-Christian propaganda in the country. He scornfully attacked the ‘intruder’ by saying that his claim of publishing the Gospel because of its historical significance was only to escape the ‘arrows of blameworthiness,’ as he did that due to the ‘hidden fanatic hostility [...] boiling in his head’ against Christianity and Paul.<sup>101</sup>

Bājūrī considered it his task to defend the Scriptures, like a ‘solider’ in the Kingdom of Christ,<sup>102</sup> just like the Egyptian soldier who had sacrificed himself and saved the Khedive from an assassination attempt in Alexandria. In his view, four reasons must have been behind the ‘horrifying evil’ which Riḍā brought about by publishing the Gospel: 1) his conviction that Egyptian Muslims had a tendency to purchase any anti-Christian literature; he therefore wanted to gain money without paying attention to the problems which this ‘*Juhanammī* (devilish)’ work was to cause; 2) as reaction to his feeling of exclusion by Al-Azhar scholars, so he attempted to gain their affection by having published the Gospel, and in order to persuade them that he was serving Islam; 3) his pretence that he was an honest servant of Islam so that the sultan would allow him to return back to his homeland; 4) or his desire to support anti-Christian nationalist papers in Egypt (such as *al-Liwā*’ of Muṣṭafā Kāmīl), and to enhance them in their fanaticism and agitation.<sup>103</sup> Bājūrī mockingly described Riḍā as ‘the hero of [propagating] discord among the two Egyptian races, Christians and Muslims,’ and his *Manār* was ‘the theater of offenses against Christianity.’<sup>104</sup>

Bājūrī’s first chapter first appeared in the fifth issue of *al-Ḥaqq* (7 December 1907), which he signed as *Ḥāmīl ‘Ār al-Masiḥ wā Ṣalībuh* (or the bearer of Christ’s Disgrace and Cross). He believed that his treatise was an ‘amputating sword and protective shield’ for Christians against the Gospel of Barnabas. Under the title, ‘Nazareth and Jesus,’ Bājūrī mentioned that he had many discussions with some ‘dissident [Muslims]’ in Giza, who were enthusiastic about the appearance of the Gospel. In his dispute, he used the arguments developed by Gairdner’s magazine *al-Sharq wā al-Gharb* that its writer must have

<sup>101</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>102</sup> Ibid., p. 121.

<sup>103</sup> Ibid., pp. 29-31.

<sup>104</sup> Ibid., p. 124.

been a Westerner, since he was entirely ignorant of the geographical site of Syria and Palestine. The Gospel's notion of Nazareth was, for example, incorrect. In the Gospel, it had been stated that 'Jesus went to the Sea of Galilee, and having embarked in a ship sailed to his city of Nazareth (chapter 20). This picture would represent the city as a harbour on the lake of Galilee, whereas it was a town miles away from the Lake, surrounded by mountains.<sup>105</sup> A Muslim once disputed with Bājūrī and rejected such arguments, and accepted the portrayal of Barnabas asserting that the 'cursed Christians had changed the name of Nazareth and labeled it on this town surrounded by the mountains in order to contend the Gospel of Barnabas.'<sup>106</sup>

A few months later, Bājūrī published another article (his second chapter) in the above mentioned *Bashā'ir al-Salām*. For him, due to its 'fallacies,' the publication of the Gospel was also harmful to Islam, and its circulation could be a reason behind the conversion of many Muslims to Christianity. He praised Sa'ādeh for his scientific introduction, especially his doubts about the Gospel and its foretelling of Muḥammad by name. As for Riḍā's introduction, he found it 'immature' in 'philosophical' terms claiming that it contained nothing but all kinds of provocation against Christianity. Interestingly, Bājūrī charged Riḍā with seeing no understanding for the significance of *Taqālīd* (customs) in Christianity, just as with his resistance against Islamic concepts, such as *Ijmā'* (consensus), *Taqālīd* and *Tawātur*. It was no surprise therefore that he, in a similar sense, rejoiced in the 'baseless' Gospel attributed to Barnabas, while 'closing his eyes' away from the fact that the Bible had been transmitted from one generation to another. Bājūrī consequently compared Riḍā's denial of the Bible to the rejection of the *Tawātur* in Ḥadīth, the Qur'ān, and prophets. He moreover described Riḍā's introduction as religiously 'fanatic,' who based himself on 'the illusions of a lunatic Indian who superficially knew [...] the Holy Book [...], and whose fatal poison was the cause of discord among Christians and Muslims.'<sup>107</sup>

---

<sup>105</sup> Ibid., pp. 35-36. Bājūrī headed his chapter with the verse, 'And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong' (Luke 4:29). This was a direct message that Luke should be considered more reliable as it represents the city surrounded by a hill, not a sea.

<sup>106</sup> Ibid., pp. 44-45.

<sup>107</sup> Ibid., p. 71.



In Bājūrī's opinion, the Gospel of Barnabas contained many contradictions with the Bible and Qur'ān. In the last part of his treatise, Bājūrī traced a hundred chapters (out of 222) from the Gospel and criticised them in the light of his own understanding of Christian and Islamic notions.<sup>108</sup> He complained that his constant shortage of financial resources was the reason why he was not able to publish the remaining chapters in his small book. He therefore requested zealous rich Christians to contact him for the funding of another treatise, if they were interested in seeing his criticisms of the rest.<sup>109</sup>

Bājūrī concluded that Riḍā was not aware of his 'childish' act and the grief it caused. According to him, the Gospel became a weapon in the hands of many Muslim teachers of Arabic, who spent most of their lessons in mocking at Coptic children in state schools.<sup>110</sup> He saw the publication of the Gospel as an integral part of what he considered as anti-Coptic sentiments in Egypt. In his view, by reviewing the Coptic mouthpiece *al-Waṭan* for the last three years (1905-1908) one could count more than 3000 incidents offending the Copts. Bājūrī warned Egyptian Muslims not to continue their assault on the Christians, as he believed that the British would persist in occupying Egypt and protecting its Coptic minority against any aggression. He also expressed his unwillingness to offer any concession by pleading for independence, and by leaving more space for these nationalist voices to play with the Copts after the British departure.<sup>111</sup> He was therefore seeking for some kind of European protection by writing: 'we the Copts are in need of the English or any other European state more than during the *Fitna* (strife) of 'Urābī.'<sup>112</sup>

Bājūrī argued that the writer of the Gospel had inserted the idea that the 'uncircumcised is worse than dogs' after his conversion to Islam in order to satisfy Muslims: 'why the disciples would be disappointed when hearing that [from Jesus], while they were circumcised Jews, and Jesus himself was circumcised!'<sup>113</sup> Another example was the story of Adam according to Barnabas: 'as the food was going down, he remembered the words of God, and, wishing to stop the food, he

---

<sup>108</sup> Ibid., pp. 74-109.

<sup>109</sup> Ibid., pp. 109-110.

<sup>110</sup> Ibid., pp. 115-116.

<sup>111</sup> Ibid., p. 120.

<sup>112</sup> Ibid., p. 119.

<sup>113</sup> Ibid., p. 89.



put his hand into his throat' (chapter 40). Bājūrī maintained that such a story had its Islamic origin. He had heard the same account from his teacher of the Qur'ān, when he was still a young Muslim, twenty-nine years before the publication of the Gospel in Arabic. This was for him enough evidence that the author of the Gospel was 'hunting' for common Islamic notions.<sup>114</sup> Bājūrī also compared verses from the Gospel of Barnabas with their Qur'ānic equivalents. Here Bājūrī was trying to find these equivalents by using Sa'ādeh's Arabic text. For example, he compared the verse of the Gospel of Barnabas which stated that 'the flesh [...] alone desireth sin' (chapter, 23), with a Qur'ānic passage maintaining that 'certainly the soul is indeed prone to evil' (Yūsuf, 55).<sup>115</sup>

Bājūrī concluded his treatise by making an interesting parallel that 'each lie [embodied] in the Gospel of Barnabas was a weapon against the simple-minded Christians, but we thank God that it was published out of agitation in the month of May: [... a month] in which flies are very short-lived; and the age of this Gospel will be shorter than flies. Also in May apricot grows up, which is the most short-lived fruit, and this 'deceitful' Gospel will be likewise!'<sup>116</sup>

### 5.6. Conclusion

The Gospel of Barnabas has been examined as part of a continuing Islamic literary tradition in looking for an 'Islamic Gospel' that supported the principal tenets of the Islamic faith. Four stages have been detected in *al-Manār's* search for this gospel: 1) Riḍā's explicit reference to the existence of the Gospel of Barnabas (May 1903), 2) his simultaneous allusion to a copy of a Gospel confirming the coming of the Prophet Muḥammad, which had been written in the *Himyarī* script to be found in the Papal Library in the Vatican, 3) his declaration in the same month of the Gospel of Tolstoy as the true one, 4) finally his publication of the Arabic edition of the Gospel of Barnabas, after he had received the English translation from the publishers.

It remains an interesting aspect of the Arabic edition of the Barnabas Gospel that it was the product of co-operation between a Christian

<sup>114</sup> Ibid., p. 94.

<sup>115</sup> Ibid., p. 90.

<sup>116</sup> Ibid., p. 117.

(albeit with a secular spirit) and a Muslim scholar. We have seen that Sa'ādeh probably did not study any relevant materials related to the historicity of the Gospel, except the conclusions of the Raggs, whose views were deeper and historically more detailed. Riḏā rephrased Sa'ādeh's ideas most of the time without giving any elaborate explanation.

## CHAPTER SIX

### THE ART OF POLEMICS: TAWFĪQ ŞİDQĪ'S CONTRIBUTIONS TO *AL-MANĀR* AND RIḌĀ'S USE OF THEM

The present chapter will shed light on the contributions of the above-mentioned Egyptian physician Muḥammad Tawfīq Şidqī, who is considered to be the most prolific polemicist in *al-Manār*. In a general sense, the thrust of the approach of Şidqī in his polemics was not innovative in the subjects he dealt with. It did not differ much from the earlier Muslim tradition that considered the Holy Scriptures as falsified, but containing many parts which could be used as a source for apologetics in verifying Islamic tenets. Like all Muslim authors in the field, one of his major concerns was to find proofs of Muḥammad's prophethood in the Bible. He selected Biblical passages extensively, which he depicted as inappropriate, and raised many questions about them. From the bulk of these quotations we will select some salient features that are typical of his approach. His treatment sometimes stood apart from the tradition of earlier Muslim writers. The new dimension of his methods, as we shall note, was that he made wide use of the writings of the Rationalist Press Association.<sup>1</sup> In his analysis of Biblical Criticism, he also used his own medical expertise and scientific interpretations, especially on the Christian set of narratives of Crucifixion and resurrection of Jesus.

We have already mentioned that Şidqī's stridently articulated views against Christianity and missions brought him into conflict with the colonial authorities, and consequently endangered the existence of *al-Manār*. Şidqī's works did not please the contemporary missionary quarterly, *The Moslem World* as well. In reviewing Şidqī's *A View on the Scriptures*, Rev. R.F. McNeile of Cairo wrote that he was not in the least surprised, nor did he intend to complain that an educated Muslim used the methods and results of Biblical Criticism, which to him were wholly incompatible with the belief in an inspired book. He complained about Şidqī's method, describing it as 'wholly out of

---

<sup>1</sup> About its history, see, Bill Cooke, *Blasphemy depot: a hundred years of the Rationalist Press Association*. London: Rationalist Press Association, 2003.

date.’ In his view, Şidqî was ignorant of living scholars, and not a single one of his long list of authorities was a highly recognised scholar of the New Testament. He was only fond of quoting agnostics [...]. In his evaluation, the first part of the book was ‘disingenuous,’ the last part was ‘far worse.’ He concluded:

We are ashamed to defile a printed page by repeating his statements [...] we are willing to grant originality to Dr. Şidqî in such points, and are tempted to ask whether they are not reflections of a society, or at least the state of mind, to which the uplifting of women, the casting out of devils, is unthinkable. [...] Dr. Şidqî is in government employ. What would be the result of a Copt in a similar position, who published articles one-tenth so revolting to the Moslem as these are to the Christian!<sup>2</sup>

Riḍā, nevertheless, was proud of Şidqî’s polemical contributions. He always saw his replies to missionaries as unprecedented. No previous scholars, according to him, had ever dealt with similar subjects, especially the concept of *Qarābîn* (sacrifices) in previous religions, as his friend did. He constantly recommended Muslims, who used to read works of missionaries or to attend their gatherings, to study Şidqî’s works very carefully.<sup>3</sup> In a letter, he enthusiastically told Shakîb Arslân that one of the Chinese Muslim scholars had already translated the work of ‘*Aqîdat al-Şalb wā al-Fidā*’, which he wrote together with Şidqî, into Chinese. Without mentioning the Chinese Muslim by name, he added that the translation had been published in his Muslim journal as a response to missionary propaganda in their town.<sup>4</sup> The clue which allows us to identify this Chinese Muslim is Riḍā’s reference to him as one of his *mustaftîs*, who regularly sent *al-Manār* letters concerning the ‘shameful’ situation of Muslims in China. In *al-Manār*, we find a certain ‘Uthmān Ibn al-Ḥāj Nūr al-Ḥaqq al-Şinî al-Ḥanafî, who regularly lamented to Riḍā about the situation of Sino-Muslims and their lack of religious knowledge and piety. He was the director of an Islamic journal in the Chinese province Guangdong. His journal was much influenced by Riḍā’s thoughts, and sometimes published full chapters from *al-Manār* translated into Chinese.<sup>5</sup> It

<sup>2</sup> *The Moslem World* 4, 1916, pp. 215-216. About more missionary critique of Şidqî, see also, Jeffery, ‘Trends,’ pp. 311-313.

<sup>3</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 15/12 (Dhü al-Ḥijja 1330/December 1912), pp. 949-950.

<sup>4</sup> Arslân, *Ikhâ*, p. 570.

<sup>5</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 31/1 (Muḥarram 1349/May 1930), pp. 75-76. About his questions for *fatwās* in *al-Manār*, see, Riḍā’s response on his questions concerning China

is clear that this al-Ḥanafī is the one who was committed to translate 'Aqīdat al-Şalb wā al-Fidā'.

### 6.1. *Al-Matbūlī of Cairo and the Resurrection of Jesus*

When Şidqī started publishing his anti-Christian polemics in *al-Manār*, an interesting anecdote spread all over the Cairo of 1912. Both Riḍā and Şidqī used this anecdote on a regular basis as a point of departure in their writings, and compared it with the story of Crucifixion. The Caiene story also appeared as an appendix on the back page of one of Şidqī's works.

According to the Egyptian daily *al-Muqaṭṭam* (31 October 1912), a big number of men and women had crowded in the front of the recently built Greek Church downtown in Cairo. The crowds were shouting: 'O, Matbūlī!', and some of them were severely wounded. The police was immediately called, and ambulances were carrying people to hospital. The Governor of Cairo, 'Ibrāhīm Pasha Najīb, came soon to the place. A rumor circulated among the people that Sheikh al-Matbūlī, a holy man buried in the center of Cairo, had been seen standing on the dome of his grave. He then had flown through the air and descended on the building of this Greek Church. A seventy-year old lunatic from Upper Egypt, whose name was Fāris Ismā'īl, had been seen running on the street, wearing green clothes and a turban, shouting: 'I am al-Matbūlī.' Seeking his blessing, the people paraded behind him, and started kissing his hands and clothes. The police immediately arrested him, and dispersed the gathering. *Al-Manār* compared this anecdote with the story of the resurrection of Jesus. It drew the attention of its readers to the influence of illusions and false rumors on the minds of laymen and narrow-minded people, especially the women among them. Illusion could also affect the minds of people to the degree that they would see imaginary things.<sup>6</sup>

---

as *Dār al-Ḥarb* or *Dār al-'Islam*, vol. 31/4 (Jumādā al-'Ūlā 1349/October 1931), pp. 270-278.

<sup>6</sup> Appendix, Şidqī, *Dīn Allah fī Kutub Anbyā'ih*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Manār, 1330/1912 (Quoted below, *Dīn*).

## 6.2. *The Religion of God in His Prophets' Books*

### 6.2.1. *Jesus as Offering*

According to Şidqî, the Christians used concepts and events taken from earlier religions in their narratives about Jesus, even though they lacked a historical basis. They tried to show that the 'former' was a proof to the 'later.' Şidqî reiterated the words of al-Afghānî that 'the authors of the New Testament tailored a dress from the Old Testament and put it on their Christ.'<sup>7</sup> An example of these was that the exodus of the Children of Israel was a sign of the return of Jesus: 'that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, out of Egypt have I called my son' (Mathew 2:15).<sup>8</sup>

In his understanding, Şidqî stated that some Christians used the practice of offerings and sacrifices in previous religions as a token for the Crucifixion. He made a critical observation that sacrifices also existed in ancient pagan religions, which had neither known Jesus nor his religion. And since the Mosaic Covenant also included among sacrifices burnt offerings, he argued, did that also refer to the burning of Jesus? And would an animal sacrifice directly refer to the Crucifixion? In John (19:32-33) the Crucifixion had been described as follows: 'the soldiers [...] brake not his legs: But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.' Medically speaking, Şidqî contended, it was impossible that human beings bleed water. The symbolic resemblance between Jesus' death and offerings in previous religions was in that sense absent. Şidqî maintained that there was also no logic behind his hanging on the cross for six hours, and leaving him in pain and hunger. The same held true for having been pierced, something which is totally different from the way of slaughtering animals as an offering.<sup>9</sup> In pagan religions, people often brought offerings to please their gods. But 'true religions,' according to Şidqî, never ordered offerings in order to please or to profit God. Their objectives have been stipulated, for instance, to feed the poor and needy or to expiate one's illegal acts.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 4. Şidqî opened his book with some passages from the Bible, such as, 'Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life (John, 5: 39).

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 4.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., pp. 5-6.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., pp. 7-8.

### 6.2.2. *The Crucifixion and Divinity of Jesus in the Old Testament*

We have seen that Şidqī renounced any claim or clarification of the Crucifixion as having been foretold in the Old Testament. For example, the book of Daniel indicated the restoration and building of 'Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince' (Daniel, 9:24-27). According to Christian interpretation, the prophecy stated the primary mission of Jesus by giving several particulars. According to this passage, Daniel was told that 'seventy weeks' were required to fulfill his petition concerning the restoration of Israel. The seventy weeks, according to many Christian scholars, were seventy 'weeks' of years, which resulted in a period of 490 years, and these referred to the coming of Jesus.<sup>11</sup> Şidqī found this interpretation unconvincing, and placed the prophecy of Daniel in an Islamic context. He argued that as the Israelites had lost authority over Jerusalem in 132 AD, adding to it 490 years it would mean that the period should have ended in 622, the year of the prophet's migration to Medina. Or it would refer to the year 636, when Muslims conquered Jerusalem. The period of 14 years according to this calculation was left out as an interval period during which the Jews were recovering from the 'injustice' of the Christians.<sup>12</sup> On the basis of the same calculation, Şidqī explained that the revelation to Daniel in the same book 'to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal up vision and prophecy and to anoint the Most Holy' (9:24) was again a reference to the Prophet Muḥammad as the seal of prophets. 'It was his Caliph Omar, who took authority upon Jerusalem, restored it to God's worship, and lifted up the injustice inflicted upon the Jews.'<sup>13</sup>

---

<sup>11</sup> See, for example, Michael Kalafian, *The Prophecy of the Seventy Weeks of the Book of Daniel: A Critical Review of the Prophecy as Viewed by Three Major Theological Interpretations and the Impact of the Book of Daniel on Christology*, New York: University of America Press, Inc., 1991, pp. 107-136; Edward J. Young, *The prophecy of Daniel: a commentary*, Grand Rapids, Mich. : Eerdmans, 1949; William Kelly, *Daniel's Seventy Week*, Colorado: Wilson Foundation, n.d.; Robert D. Culver, *Daniel and the Latter Days*, Revised edition, Chicago: Moody Press, 1977; Paul D. Feinberg, 'An Exegetical and Theological Study of Daniel 9:24-27,' S. John and D. Paul, eds., *Tradition and Testament: Essays in Honor of Charles Lee Feinberg*, Chicago: Moody Press, 1981, pp. 189-222; J. Randall Price, 'Prophetic Postponement in Daniel 9 and Other Texts,' in W.R. Willis & John R. Master, eds., *Issues in Dispensationalism*, Chicago: Moody Press, 1994, pp.132-165.

<sup>12</sup> Şidqī, *Dīn*, pp. 15-16.

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 17-18. For further about his analysis of the book of Daniel, see, pp. 20-26.

Another example was that many Christians argued that there were other prophecies of the Crucifixion in the book of Isaiah (chapter 53). Şidqî interpreted the chapter in the same manner: they had no relation to Jesus whatsoever. He attempted to show the ‘errors’ of the Christians by citing many passages from this chapter, and compared them with other previous ones in the Bible. He concluded that the whole chapter clearly referred to the conquest of Jerusalem. It was Jewish converts to Christianity, such as Paul, who had inserted such notions into their new religion by thoroughly applying them to the figure of Jesus.<sup>14</sup>

In the course of his observations, Şidqî turned to refute what he saw as Christian arguments of proving the divinity of Jesus from within the Old Testament.<sup>15</sup> Şidqî saw that the Jews had an inherent inclination towards paganism. For instance, they worshipped the golden calf. Their ‘affection of paganism’ originated from their long-term residence among the pagans of Ancient Egypt and Babylon. This was the reason why they always held their expected Messiah to be a king, who would grant them victory over all nations. Şidqî moreover added that when Jesus declared his divine mission, such ‘pagan doctrines were grown in their hearts.’ They tried to worship him in a similar manner, but Jesus constantly opposed them by saying, for example: ‘depart from me, ye that work iniquity (Mathew 7:23)’ and ‘O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord’ (Mark, 12:29). Jewish converts and the Romans, therefore, carried their pagan precepts into Christianity, and took up an extreme position by holding the divinity of Jesus as integral part of their new faith. In this context, Şidqî understood the ‘exaggeration’ in the account of the Jewish historian and apologist Flavius Josephus, who wrote about him: ‘Now there was about this time Jesus, a wise man, if it be lawful to call him a man; for he was a doer of wonderful works, a teacher of such men as receive the truth with pleasure. He drew over to him both many of the Jews and many of the Gentiles’ (*Antiquities of the Jews*, Book 18, chapter 3/3. Şidqî translated ‘Gentiles’ as ‘Greek’ in Arabic).<sup>16</sup> Another account of such exaggeration was of the ‘greatest’ Jewish convert Paul: ‘Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they’ (Hebrews 1:4). Şidqî

---

<sup>14</sup> Ibid, pp. 31-32.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., pp. 39-61.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p. 41.



believed that at this precise moment the idea of divinity had not been completely developed in Paul's mind, but he later made it much clearer by putting it bluntly that God had 'raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places [...] and has put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church' (Ephesians 1: 17-22).<sup>17</sup>

Şidqī followed his usual procedure by selecting some examples from the Old Testament, which were alleged to implicitly support the belief of the divinity of Jesus. He totally discredited the Christian argument that Isaiah had predicted the divinity of Jesus as the one whose 'name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, the mighty God, the everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace,' and that the same prophet had predicted that Christ was to order and establish his judgement upon 'the throne of David, and upon his kingdom' (Isaiah, 9: 6-7). Şidqī concluded that Isaiah's prophecy and the attributes he mentioned were only applicable to the Prophet Muḥammad as the seal of the prophets whose followers had ruled over the Holy Land. Supposing that the passage really referred to Jesus, and that people had called him already a 'mighty god,' it was still not enough evidence for Şidqī on his divinity. It was rather the other way around that it had been a real prediction and warning by Isaiah that the people would contradict the notions of the genuine monotheism, and would turn to worshipping Jesus other than the One God.<sup>18</sup> Şidqī forgot, however, to give more clarification of the phrase 'mighty god' in the context of his Islamic interpretation, and how one could understand its application to the Prophet Muḥammad from an Islamic viewpoint.

Şidqī argued that all these implicit passages used by the Christians could easily be explained as referring to the message of Islam. Prophecies in the Old Testament were not specific in defining persons by name.<sup>19</sup> Take for example the passage, 'Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek' (Psalm 110: 4). This was, according to Şidqī, an allusion to the Prophet Muḥammad. Şidqī compared the blessing by Melchizedek of Abraham to the way the Qur'ān respected him. Muslims remember the name of Abraham during their daily prayers. As for the word 'priest,' Şidqī interpreted it within an Islamic

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., pp. 42-43.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., pp. 45-46.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., pp. 50-53.

scope. It directly refers to the prophecy of Muḥammad, since he was the 'leader of Muslims and their greatest imam, who taught them the religion, judged among them, looked into all of their affairs, led them in their [...] prayers, pilgrimage [...] gatherings and feasts. They [Muslims] imitated him in their sacrifices and in everything [...] He was therefore their greatest 'priest' [...] forever.'<sup>20</sup> In Şidqī's mind, Muḥammad deserved the prophecy, as Jesus had less status than he in regard to all these 'priestly' functions. He added ironically that Jesus never practised any priestly job, but was only portrayed as 'offering' in the Book of Revelation: 'the Lamb that was slain to receive power' (Revelation 5:12).<sup>21</sup> He added that in the same chapter we find testimony to the Prophet Muḥammad. 'The Lord shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion' (110:2) showed that the real kingdom and prophethood should be given to Muḥammad after the Jews and Christians. Jesus himself said it clearly that: 'the kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof' (Mathew 21:43).<sup>22</sup>

In his polemics, Şidqī was not always consistent. As we have noted, he made use of Josephus' remark about Jesus as 'a wise man' and the conversion of many Jews and Romans to his religion. Now he fell back on accusing the Christians of interpolating many passages in Josephus' *Antiquities* in order to serve their desires.<sup>23</sup> He followed the arguments of many seventeenth-century critics, who had doubted the authenticity of certain proofs of the *Antiquities* of Josephus (especially book 18) and its reference to Jesus by arguing that it had been added by a later Christian copyist. There was no indication throughout that whole voluminous work, except this one passage. None of the early Christian Church Fathers, such as Origen, mentioned Josephus as having written about Jesus.<sup>24</sup> According to Şidqī, the situation of the Jews at that time was so fragile and they became 'humiliated' to the degree that the Christians were able to manipulate and change their scriptures.<sup>25</sup>

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., pp. 52-53.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p. 53.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 79.

<sup>24</sup> Much has been written about 'Testimonium Flavianum.' For the controversy on his testimony of Jesus, see, for example, Alice Whealey, *Josephus on Jesus: the testimonium Flavianum controversy from late antiquity to modern times*, New York, N.Y., [etc.]: Lang, 2003.

<sup>25</sup> Şidqī, *Din*, pp. 79-80.

Şidqī maintained that the authors of the Gospels did not write everything about Jesus and his life. Jesus only spoke about previous prophecies and legislations, and never mentioned anything about history. Şidqī also wondered why Jesus did not rebuke the Jews for their additions in the version of Septuaginta, but reproached them for nullifying the Mosaic Law through their traditions: 'you nullify the word of God by your tradition that you have handed down' (Mark 7:13). Şidqī labelled their legislations as temporary, and to be replaced by Islam. Jesus had already alluded to Muḥammad's coming by saying: 'I have much more to say to you, more than you can now bear. But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come' (John 16:12-13).<sup>26</sup>

Şidqī intended to prove that the corruption of the Scriptures had been dominant since the earliest history of Christianity. Peter, for example, confessed that 'in them there are some things hard to understand that the ignorant and unstable distort to their own destruction, just as they do the other scriptures' (Peter 2, 3: 16). Paul said the same in Galatians, viz. that 'evidently some people are throwing you into confusion and are trying to pervert the gospel of Christ' (1:7). Şidqī again wondered which 'one was among all these numerous gospels the favourite of Paul to the degree that he called it gospel of Christ: it might have been one of the apocryphal gospels.'<sup>27</sup>

Şidqī made an attempt to reconcile his rejection of the divinity of Jesus with his miraculous birth without a father, which the Christians used as a proof for his supernatural power. In his view, his birth in this way was one of God's countless miracles in His creation. The divine omnipotence was meant to remove the 'illusions' of Greek philosophy, and to show human beings their weakness and to warn them that they should not boast their power. Şidqī argued that people always believed in the impossibility of creating animals without a father, but God made the matter different by the creation of Jesus. Modern scholars, he went on, investigated many creatures and found that there are tiny animals, such as aphides (plant lice), which are often found to be partheno-genetic in many generations. It is theoretically possible that the process of parthenogenesis in the same way

---

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 81.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 84.

could produce human beings and mammals. 'It would be crazy,' Şidqî wrote, 'to hold such odd examples of creatures as deity. It is just as considering a lady with more than two breasts as a goddess, and worshipping her only because one did never see or hear about someone alike. Or like worshipping a virgin woman who delivered without any intercourse.'<sup>28</sup>

Elsewhere Şidqî gave another medical interpretation of the fatherless birth of Jesus. There was no *naqlî* (traditional) or *'aqlî* (rational) objection against making a comparison between the pregnancy of Mary and the exceptional case of somebody like Catherine Hohmann, a masculine hermaphrodite who in her life was said to have a sort of menstruation.<sup>29</sup> However, Şidqî did not mean that Mary was not a feminine: 'it was probable that she had male and female genitals, but her female structure was exceeding [the other]. She bore Jesus, delivered and fed him, if we believe in what the New Testament claimed that she got married after his birth and had children (Matthew 1: 25 & 13: 55).'<sup>30</sup> It is interesting to note that the thirteenth-century Qur'ân exegete Abū Bakr al-Qurṭubî made a similar portrayal of Mary, which J.I. Smith & Y.Y. Haddad interpreted as that of a kind of hermaphrodite. According to Qurṭubî:

The truth is that when God created Adam and took the covenant with his progeny, He made some of the liquid in the back of fathers and some in the uterus of mothers. When the waters join, a child is formed. God made both waters in Mary, part in her uterus and part in her back. Gabriel blew in order to arouse her desire. A woman cannot conceive unless her desire is aroused. When her desire was roused with the blowing of Gabriel, the water in her back descended to the uterus, and became mixed and then became fertilized.<sup>31</sup>

Şidqî offered a separate presentation of the Qur'anic description of Jesus as *Kalima* (Word of God) and its relation to the Christian concept of *logos*. He understood the term as metaphorically pointing to all God's creatures, including Adam and Jesus, as God's *Kalimât*.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., pp. 87-88.

<sup>29</sup> *Al-Manâr*, vol. 18/4 (Jumadâ al-Âkhirâ 1333/May 1915), pp. 300-301. See, Magnus Hirschfeld, *Sexual Anomalies*, New York: Emerson Books, Inc., 1944.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 301.

<sup>31</sup> J. Smith & Y. Yazbek Haddad, 'The Virgin Mary in Islamic tradition and commentary,' *The Muslim World* 79/3-4, 1989, p. 167. For other Muslim views, see, for example, N. Robinson, 'Fakhr al-Dîn al-Râzî and the virginal conception,' *Islamochristiana* 14, 1988, pp. 1-16.

Islam portrayed Jesus in particular, but not Adam, as God's *Kalima* in order to show the way of his creation, and to rebuff the Christian 'allegation' concerning his divinity and the Jewish 'accusation' of him as an illegitimate child. Another reason, according to Şidqī, was that he, unlike Adam, did other miracles, such as talking in his infancy, and curing the sick. In that sense, Şidqī blamed the Christians that they incorrectly grasped the figurative meaning of the word *logos*. They exaggerated the concept of Jesus by understanding his place as God's *logos* and therefore the creator of all things (John 1:3). Şidqī agreed with the common argument that the Christian tenet of identifying Jesus with the *logos* was derived from Stoic ideas as incorporated in Judaic and Christian thought in the first and second century.<sup>32</sup>

Şidqī compared the Islamic rejection of the Crucifixion with that by earlier Christian sects, such as the Cerinthians, Carpocratians, Basilidians, and Arians. He did not define his source at this point, but made it clear in the book '*Aqīdat al-Şalb wā al-Fidā*', discussed below. He directly quoted the Qur'ān translation by George Sale, who elaborated on this point. Şidqī, however, quoted an anonymous book under the title, *Rihlat al-Rusul* (Journey of the Apostles), which included the acts of Paul, Peter, John, Andrew, and Thomas. He asserted that the account of Patriarch Photius of Constantinople that Jesus was not crucified, but another person instead, was based on that book.<sup>33</sup> It is difficult to trace this source. But it is interesting to know that it was Photius who preserved a fragment from a lost work by the Jewish historian Justus of Tiberias, a native of Galilee, who made no reference to the appearance of Jesus.<sup>34</sup>

### 6.3. *The Doctrine of Crucifixion and Salvation*

Şidqī mentioned his main arguments about the Crucifixion and salvation in Christianity in the book of '*Aqīdat al-Şalb wā al-Fidā*', which he co-published with Riḍā. In that work, he expressed his presupposi-

<sup>32</sup> About Christianity and Stoicism, see, Ralph Stob, 'Stoicism and Christianity,' *The Classical Journal* 30/4, 1935, pp. 217-224.

<sup>33</sup> Şidqī, *Din*, pp. 118-119.

<sup>34</sup> See, for example, Flavius Josephus and Steve Mason, *Life of Josephus*, Leiden: E. J. Brill, 2003; Tessa Rajak, 'Justus of Tiberias,' *The Classical Quarterly* 23/2, 1973, pp. 345-368.

tion that some narratives in the Gospels related to the story of the Crucifixion were correct. But he tried to make his own reconstruction of the story as an attempt to remove the 'blur' from the eyes of his missionary opponents.<sup>35</sup> Instead of propagating Christianity outside Europe, he advised them to go and save their religion from the critique of the rationalistic attacks of their fellow-citizens. If they did not save their religion there, he cynically said, Europe would one day entirely leave Christianity aside.<sup>36</sup>

Throughout his statements, Şidqī championed the controversial anonymously published work *Supernatural Religion*, which was later attributed to the above-mentioned English literary figure Walter Richard Cassels.<sup>37</sup> This work attracted wide attention after its publication in 1874. Many scholars began to speculate about the identity of its author. Others responded strongly to its criticism of Christianity. The two Victorian scholar-critics J.B. Lightfoot and Matthew Arnold were among its strongest opponents. Its 'author managed to maintain his anonymity through more than a decade of wild conjectures, until, finally, in 1895, the *Manchester City News* announced that a Manchester poet, Walter R. Cassels, has now avowed himself the author.'<sup>38</sup> Being a lay theologian, Cassels drew much from British and continental Biblical scholars past and present, including the works of such German scholars as Eichhorn and Baur.<sup>39</sup>

Most of the classical Muslim commentators understood the Qur'ānic clause *wā lākin shubbiha lahum* (4:157) that the person who was killed was made to resemble Jesus in their eyes. Putting the likeness of Jesus on another person happened according to these interpretations in a miraculous way. They depended mostly on the Prophetic Traditions claiming that it was a loyal disciple of Jesus who volunteered to die in his place. Other Traditions suggested that God

<sup>35</sup> Riḍā-Şidqī, *'Aqīda*, p. 88.

<sup>36</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 130-131.

<sup>37</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 91. Cf., Cassels, *op. cit.*; see, W.C. van Manen, *Bovennatuurlijke godsdienst*, Sneek: Brouwer, 1876. More about Cassels, see Alan H. Cadwallader, 'Male Diagnosis of the Female Pen in Late Victorian Britain: Private Assessments of Supernatural Religion,' *Journal of Anglican Studies* 5/1, 2007, pp. 69-88. The book is also available at, <http://www.ftarchives.net/cassels/bio.htm>, accessed on 15 September 2007. Şidqī must have made use of the popular edition London: Watts & co., 1902.

<sup>38</sup> Jerold J. Savory and Matthew Arnold 'The Author of 'Supernatural Religion': The Background to God and the Bible,' *Studies in English Literature* 16/4, 1976, p. 681.

<sup>39</sup> *Ibid.*

caused Judas Iscariot or one of those who were sent to arrest Jesus to appear like Jesus as a punishment for their betrayal.<sup>40</sup>

Şidqī did not follow the lines of the classical *Tafsīr*, and proposed that Judas looked very much like Jesus. He accepted most of the details of the story of the Gospels, but filled in some other parts according to his own logic, and to Islamic traditions. Şidqī broached it as a historical matter that the Jewish chief priests became 'jealous' of Jesus, when his message began to attract the people of Jerusalem. They made a deal with Judas to lead the soldiers to arrest him, during his last visit to the city (Mark, 14:43-48). All the disciples of Jesus fled away, except Peter, who later denied his relation with Jesus (Mark, 14:50). Pilate, who presided at the trial of Jesus, hesitated to condemn him, but he failed to withdraw. After his arrest, Jesus was able to escape, possibly in a miraculous way. (Acts 12:6-10 & 16:25). He probably went to the Mount of Olives (John 8:1, 59; 10:39) in order to hide. As Judas regretted his act, he decided to go and hang himself (Mathew, 27:3-10). Due to their similar physical appearance, the soldiers arrested Judas and led him to prison. They thought that he was Jesus. As they were afraid of punishment, they completely concealed his escape. During his last minutes before committing suicide, Judas had become very hysterical. He yielded to death, and decided not to tell the truth about his identity wishing that by saving his master this time his sin would be forgiven. As he was awake the whole night, Judas became very pale and tired, and was not able to carry his cross. For this reason, they ordered Simon to carry it. None of Jesus' disciples was present during the time of the Crucifixion, 'except some women beholding afar off' (Mathew, 27:55). Şidqī preferred the explanation that these women failed to recognise the real Jesus because it is always the habit of women to become emotional and tender-hearted in such situations. He rejected the narrative of the fourth Gospel that Mary and John were standing there (John 19:26). Şidqī quoted Renan's critique that it is difficult to 'understand how the Synoptics, who name the other women, should have omitted her [Mary], whose presence was so striking a feature.'<sup>41</sup>

<sup>40</sup> See, for example, K. Cragg, *Jesus and the Muslim. An exploration*, London 1985; M. Ayoub, 'Towards an Islamic Christology II: The death of Jesus, reality or delusion,' *The Muslim World* 70, 1980, pp. 91-121; E.E. Elder, 'The Crucifixion in the Qurān,' *The Muslim World* 13, 1923, pp. 242-58.

<sup>41</sup> Ridā-Şidqī, *Aqīda*, pp. 104-105. See Chapter XXV: 'Death of Jesus.' Renan's work is also available at: [http://www.infidels.org/library/historical/ernest\\_renan/](http://www.infidels.org/library/historical/ernest_renan/)



Besides, Şidqī went on with his reconstruction of the story that the standing people were also not well-acquainted with Jesus, as he was not a native inhabitant of the city. Even those who were close to the scene could not grasp Judas' dissimilarity with him. They must have thought that it was his exhaustion and distress that might have changed his face. According to his medical knowledge, Şidqī argued that many comparable examples occurred, and people became confused when identifying their dead relatives. Such cases could be explained by forensic medicine.<sup>42</sup>

In the evening Joseph of Arimathaea, a disciple of Jesus, secretly asked Pilate for permission to bury the body of Jesus after the Crucifixion (John 19:38). In Şidqī's view, Joseph did not know Jesus before in person. He could not recognise the identity of the crucified man. Even Nicodemus, who helped Joseph during the burial, had seen Jesus only once at night (John 19:39), three years before the Crucifixion (John 3: 1-10). In order to remove the humiliation attached to them and render the Jews saddened, Şidqī continued, one or two of the disciples decided to get the corpse of the dead body out of the grave and hid it in another place. In the same way, they also alleged that their Saviour was taken to the heaven.<sup>43</sup> It was not until Sunday that Mary Magdalene told Peter and John that Jesus' dead body was not in his grave. People consequently started to believe that the body had been raised to the heaven. Şidqī stressed that Mary Magdalene was the only woman who had seen him and spoken to him. Şidqī was certain that the story of the 'seven devils' cast upon her after having witnessed Jesus' rising meant that she became very hysterically nervous (Mark 16:9). She only imagined that there had been two angels talking to her. Such 'illusive imaginations' would sometimes occur in the minds of women, who become emotional and hysterical; especially at the graveyard in the darkness (John 20:1). Şidqī argued that she was not able to determine the right place of his grave. He compared these 'illusions' to the above-mentioned Matbūlī incident. The two angels were, in his view, probably the two disciples, dressed in white, who were trying to take the dead body away. This was in agreement with the other report that 'two men stood by them

---

life\_of\_jesus.html; & [http://www.lexilogos.com/document/renan/life\\_jesus.htm](http://www.lexilogos.com/document/renan/life_jesus.htm); accessed 20 August 2007.

<sup>42</sup> Riḍā-Şidqī, *Aqīda*, pp. 102-103. He quoted William A. Guy & David Ferrier, *Principles of Forensic Medicine*, London 1895.

<sup>43</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 113-116.



in shining garments' (Luke 24:4). The differences between the reports of the writers of the Gospels, he went on, lay in their entire dependence on the 'circulated unorganised rumours' after the death of Jesus. The disciples became haunted by 'illusions' and 'obsessions' to the extent that they thought that everybody whom they had met or with whom they had eaten was Jesus (Mark 16:12, Luke 24:16 and John 21:4-7).<sup>44</sup>

To support his arguments, Şidqī quoted similar examples of illusions mentioned by European psychologists. William Benjamin Carpenter (d. 1885), an English psychologist, reported about the Scottish historical novelist Sir Walter Scott (d. 1832) that, while having been deeply engaged in reading, he had seen his friend Lord Byron, after the latter's death. When he stepped onwards towards the figure, there had been merely a screen occupied by great-coats, shawls, plaids and such other articles.<sup>45</sup> A similar incident also occurred after a fire had broken out in 1866 in the Crystal Palace in London. People fancied an ape trying to escape, but finally they realised that there was nothing.<sup>46</sup>

Returning to his hypothesis on the crucified person, Şidqī maintained that people must have wondered where Judas Iscariot had been. But as they had already known that he was planning to hang himself, it was probable that they had found a dead body whose 'bowels were gushed out (Acts 1:18)' outside Jerusalem. Şidqī believed that it was also possible that this dead body was of Jesus himself, if it were true that he died a natural death after his escape. In that case, God must have raised him up only in the spiritual sense. Şidqī stressed that his disciples, due to their extreme love to him, never thought of his death, just as the companions of the Prophet Muḥammad had done after his death.<sup>47</sup> He moreover argued that it was impossible that people would recognise the one to be crucified, as they 'arrayed him in a gorgeous robe' (Luke 23:10) and Jesus 'came out wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe' (John 19:2). When they crucified him, they divided his garments (Mark 15:24 & Matthew 27:35-36). The fact that he was unclothed at the moment of the

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 101

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 102. William Benjamin Carpenter, *Principles of Mental Physiology with Their Applications to the Training and Discipline of the Mind and the Study of its Morbid Conditions*, New York, 1889, pp. 207-208.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., p. 102.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 108.

Crucifixion must have made it more difficult for the attendants to recognise him.<sup>48</sup>

Şidqī suggested yet another scenario of the burial moments of Jesus. It was also probable that Joseph of Arimathaea and Nicodemus became anxious that the Jews would abuse the dead body or leave it to wild animals. After having pretended that they had buried his body, they returned back to the graveyard in order to relocate the body in another grave after having become sure that everybody had already departed. They had made a pledge that they should keep it highly confidential.<sup>49</sup>

The story of his rising up to heaven in the beginning was only confined to his disciples in Jerusalem (Luke 24:33). They only assembled for a period of eight days while the doors were shut for fear of the Jews (John 20:19 and 26). It was only 50 days later when they were able to publicly gather when the Day of Pentecost had come (Acts 2:1). Şidqī concluded that if they had really found a dead body, it would have been impossible to identify it after it had decayed.<sup>50</sup> Şidqī rejected the Biblical claim that there were 3.000 souls who ‘gladly received his word and baptised’ (Acts 2:41). The house where the disciples were gathering could only include 120 persons (Acts 1:15). Peculiar to him was the quick reporting to the public from various communities about the Holy Ghost, which began to speak with other tongues. He wondered why the disciples had not written the Gospels in these world languages that were familiar to them so that they would have made it easy for the people to accept the message without translation. It would have also been an eternal miracle to them.<sup>51</sup> Şidqī doubted the reports on the locality of Jesus after his rising. He raised the question that if Jesus had really told his disciples that he would go before them into Galilee after his rising (Matthew 26:32 & 28:10), how was it that they had met him in Jerusalem (Luke, 24:36-37)? What was the wisdom behind sending them to Galilee?<sup>52</sup>

Şidqī knew of the Roman historian Cornelius Tacitus (AD 55-120) and his discussion on the Crucifixion. For him, Tacitus’ report had been based on the already circulated rumours without any investiga-

---

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., p. 95.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., pp. 97-98.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., p. 114.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 118.

tion.<sup>53</sup> He was also aware of the ideas of the English humanist F.J. Gould (1855-1938) who denied the story of Tacitus as a forgery.<sup>54</sup> Most of the Roman historians, in Şidqī's view, had poor knowledge of the history of Jesus. The Romans had never heard of him, except after the spread of Christianity in Italy. Some of them had looked down upon Christianity. For a long time, they had not been able to distinguish between the Jews and Christians, and had been convinced that the god of the Jews was a donkey, or donkey-headed.<sup>55</sup> Şidqī compared the value of such 'pagan' works on Christianity with Western writings on Islam in the Middle Ages. He concluded that Muslims should not take these histories into account, as 'they were valueless and should not be taken as a correct history. They were all based on rumours, inventions, illusions and lies without taking the least trouble in investigating [Christian] history.'<sup>56</sup>

#### 6.4. *Şidqī's View on the Scriptures of the New Testament and Christian Doctrines*

Şidqī published his last polemical work in 1913. Under the title *A View on the Scriptures*, he repeated the testimony made by some early Christian writers, such as Papias, Irenaeus and Eusebius on the history of the four Gospels. Irenaeus of Lyons, for example, mentioned that Matthew wrote his Gospel in Hebrew or Aramaic. According to him, an anonymous translator took this version and arranged the Greek version.<sup>57</sup> The circulation of these Gospels, in Şidqī's view, did not deter the Christians from attempting to twist many parts of them. Although the concern of many of these translators was to prove ancient prophecies about Jesus, they were not aware that their insertion of such elements would make them 'blind' about other problematic issues. For example, they had inserted the statement of Jesus 'saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' (Matthew, 27:46), only in order to apply to what they saw as a prophecy in the Psalms: 'My God, my God,

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., pp. 132-133.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid. See, Frederick James Gould, *A Concise History of Religion*, 3 vols., London, Watts & Co., 1893-1897, vol. 3, p. 22.

<sup>55</sup> See, for instance, Morton Smith, *Jesus the Magician: Charlatan or Son of God?*, London, 1978, pp. 81-82.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid.

<sup>57</sup> Şidqī, *Naẓra*, pp. 2-12.

why hast thou forsaken me?' (22:1). They did not take into account that this would be a sign of weakness, inability and despair. Şidqî developed his ideas on the basis of a study of the Protestant writer W.T. Turton, who, in his eyes, was a defender of the truth of Christianity.<sup>58</sup>

In his work, Turton wrote: 'it would have weakened the force of Prophecy enormously, since, in the absence of ancient manuscripts, the assertion that the old Jewish prophecies had been tampered with, to make them suit their Christian interpretation, would be difficult to disprove.'<sup>59</sup> Şidqî added that the reason why the Christians did not reform these mistakes was the dominant ignorance in ancient times, and the belief that without these matters one's belief would have been invalid. In his words, it was 'only because of their fear of disgrace and shame that they did not dare to change all these mistakes in their scriptures nowadays. This would also have saved them *al-Qîl wâ al-Qâl* (prattle).'<sup>60</sup>

Şidqî's writing rendered the vast majority of the material in the New Testament as inauthentic. He maintained that the Twelve Apostles did not write important things on the history of Jesus. Eight of them had never reported anything on his life. He belittled the contribution made by the other four. For instance, Peter was, in his view, a man of weak personality, and because of many negative incidents he could not be trusted. Jesus, for instance, rebuked him 'saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men' (Mark 8:33). Above all, during the Last Supper, Jesus foretold that Peter would deny association with him three times in the course of the night.<sup>61</sup>

Like all other Muslim polemicists, Şidqî held the common view that the prophecy of the Paraclete had a direct relation to the Prophet Muḥammad. In addition, he quoted the theory of the *Pagan Christs* of the British rationalist journalist John M. Robertson (d. 1933), who had pointed to the emergence of the concept of Paraclete in Christian circles in Asia Minor. The figure of Mani was declared to have called himself the Paraclete promised in the Christian Gospel.<sup>62</sup> Another,

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 45.

<sup>59</sup> Turton, *op. cit.*, p. 386.

<sup>60</sup> Şidqî, *Naẓra*, p. 51.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., pp. 52-54.

<sup>62</sup> John M. Robertson, *Pagan Christs: Studies in Comparative Hierology*, London, 1903, p. 268. Cf. for more critical study on the concept of Paraclete according to these

Montanus, in Asia Minor had claimed to be inspired by the Paraclete.<sup>63</sup> The critique of Robertson and others, in Şidqī's view, supports the argument of al-Qairanāwī that the Christians during the time of the Prophet were expecting the coming of another prophet who was to confirm the message of Jesus.<sup>64</sup>

Şidqī detected that the Gospels sometimes exaggerated the limits of power of the disciples. They ascribed to them a certain divine capacity or supernatural powers. Jesus was reported, for example, to have addressed them 'Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained' (John 20: 23). Şidqī repeated Riḍā's above-mentioned stance that such instructions in the Gospel could be an indirect call to the believers to commit sins lavishly, while resting assured that they would be forgiven. It was also impossible that those human disciples would have the power to know the intentions of a person in order to assess the sincerity of his repentance. This promise given to them by Jesus, in Şidqī's polemics, indicated that the will of the disciples took precedence over that of anybody else, including God himself. He went further by attacking these notions to be the *raison d'être* why 'clergymen' in the European Middle Ages had systematically murdered people during the period of Inquisition. The sacralisation of such doctrines was the cause of their corruption and tyranny. Şidqī recapitulated his astonishment that these notions contradict the other verses in which Jesus himself made it clear that he had no capacity to forgive, except 'for whom it is prepared of his Father' (Matthew 20: 23). Likewise absurd to Şidqī were the accounts of Jesus' promise to the disciples that they 'shall say unto this mountain, remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you' (Matthew 17: 20). This meant that they left nothing for God to carry out in the universe. According to him, the spread of such concepts among people was the direct motive behind the urgency of sending the Prophet Muḥammad with his message in order to bring people back to the real concept of monotheism.<sup>65</sup>

Şidqī challenged his opponents by saying that the divine wisdom behind the difference of opinions among the Christians and the vari-

---

sects, see Christine Trevett, *Montanism: Gender, Authority and the New Prophecy*, Cambridge University Press, 2002, pp. 62-69.

<sup>63</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 274.

<sup>64</sup> Şidqī, *Naẓra*, pp. 77-78. Cf., al-Qairanāwī, *op. cit.*, vol. 2, pp. 149-150.

<sup>65</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 108-110.

ous sects before Muḥammad was to satisfy human minds with reasonable investigation and thinking, which would promote their readiness to accept the Islamic doctrine after a long period of longing for the truth. As it was the final message, the Muslim umma was never to go astray from the truth. If it were misled, he contended, a new revelation would be needed. But it was the divine will to send Muḥammad as the seal of prophets in the climax of progress of the human mind.<sup>66</sup> Had God willed that their Scriptures would continue to be the criterion, he went on, He would have preserved them unimpaired as in the case of the Qur'ān. However, God had ordained that some parts should remain in them, which contained true doctrine, sermons and high values.<sup>67</sup>

Medieval Muslim polemicists developed some linguistic analysis in understanding the Christian concept of the Sonship of Jesus. They repeatedly attempted to explain to their Christian counterparts that Jesus' Sonship was a metaphor.<sup>68</sup> In the same manner, Şidqī ascribed the Jewish and Christian usage of the words 'Father' and 'Children of God' to the fact that people in the historical context of revelation had been feeble-minded. They would have never understood the logic behind the divine message except by means of allegories and similes. Their Scriptures used such terms in order to describe God as merciful and forgiving. Soon after the death of Jesus, Şidqī went on, people had begun to believe in the Sonship in the literal sense. He referred to the early Christian and apologist Justin Martyr, who justified the worship of Christ on the basis of certain passages from the Old Testament.<sup>69</sup> This 'erroneous' understanding of the metaphoric meaning of the word 'Son' was, in Şidqī's mind, substantiated by the fact

---

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., pp. 113-115.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., pp. 116-117.

<sup>68</sup> Hava Lazarus-Yafeh, 'Some Neglected Aspects of Medieval Muslim Polemics against Christianity,' *The Harvard Theological Review* 89/1, 1996, pp. 79-80.

<sup>69</sup> Much has been written about Justin Martyr, see, for example, George H. Gilbert, 'Justin Martyr on the Person of Christ,' *The American Journal of Theology* 10/4, 1906, pp. 663-674; Otto A. Piper, 'The Nature of the Gospel According to Justin Martyr,' *The Journal of Religion* 41/3, 1961, pp. 155-168; Charles H. Cosgrove, 'Justin Martyr and the Emerging Christian Canon. Observations on the Purpose and Destination of the Dialogue with Trypho,' *Vigiliae Christianae* 36/3, 1982, pp. 209-232; J. E. Morgan-Wynne, 'The Holy Spirit and Christian Experience in Justin Martyr,' *Vigiliae Christianae* 38/2, 1984, pp. 172-177.

that early Christian theologians had mixed their doctrines with ancient foreign philosophies.<sup>70</sup>

Şidqī added a new Islamic concept to the discussion by stressing that God did not metaphorically use such words as father and son in the Qur'ān because it became well-known among people that they were harmful from a doctrinal point of view. It became therefore useless to use them again, as it might have taken 'silly-minded' people back to the doctrine of paganism once again. God, therefore, replaced the word 'Father' in the Qur'ān with many other words and phrases that closely portray the reality of His entity, such as *Ra'ūf* (compassionate) and *Raḥīm* (merciful). The Prophet put it more clearly in one of his Ḥadīths by saying metaphorically that all created human beings are God's *'Iyāl* (children), and that God is more compassionate to his creatures than the mother to her children. Şidqī was convinced that people in the time of the Prophet were more advanced than earlier generations, and could easily grasp the meaning of God's mercy without the instrument of allegory.<sup>71</sup>

Şidqī maintained that when the Church seized power in the Middle Ages, it saw that any rational investigation would endanger its position and lead people to discard specific Christian doctrines. For this reason, it tried to dishearten the human *Fiṭra* (nature) by forbidding the reading of some religious texts. In his view, people were able to read these banned books only thanks to Protestantism. He believed that those Western scholars, who studied the Bible critically, were a product of Protestantism. He expected that although remained some defenders of Christianity in Europe, the critical scholars of the Bible would one day reject the authenticity of the Scriptures altogether.<sup>72</sup>

### 6.5. *Riḍā's Reflections*

Riḍā published his reflections on the same subjects together with Şidqī in the above-mentioned '*Aqīdat al-Şalb wā al-Fidā*'. According to him, the Qur'ānic reference to the Crucifixion was meant to be a severe censure of the claims of the Jews. Their offence and rudeness

<sup>70</sup> Şidqī, *Naẓra*, pp. 137-146.

<sup>71</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 147-149.

<sup>72</sup> *Ibid.*

with regard to Jesus had originated from the fact that he declared himself a new prophet. For Riḍā, the Gospels explicitly mentioned that Jesus repeatedly confirmed his prophecy and the oneness of God: ‘Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent’ (John 17: 3).<sup>73</sup>

In his interpretation of the passage *wā mā qatalūh yaqīnan* (for sure they killed him not), Riḍā argued that the Gospel of Barnabas made it clear that it was Judas Iscariot upon whom God put the likeness with Jesus. Riḍā used Ṣidqī’s argument that there was no dispute that the soldiers did not know Jesus in person either, but he gave another metaphoric interpretation to the word *qatala*. It did not mean ‘kill’ or ‘slay,’ but should be seen as comparable to the Arabic usage of the word in the phrase, *qataltu al-sha’ya baḥthan* (I have studied something thoroughly). The verse could therefore denote that they followed their uncertainty without trying to reach any kind of sure knowledge. Riḍā did not entirely reject the Muslim interpretation that it had been Judas or another person who shared the likeness with Jesus. In collecting their arguments, Muslim exegetes depended mostly on the narratives of Jewish and Christian converts to Islam, but did not pay any attention to the premises of the story as have been told in the Christian Scriptures themselves.<sup>74</sup>

Regarding the Qur’ānic reference to the ‘raising’ of Jesus, Riḍā drew upon ‘Abduh’s exegesis of the verse, ‘When God said, ‘O Jesus, I am the One who will take you and raise you to me and cleanse you from those who disbelieve’ (Al-‘Imrān, 3:55). ‘Abduh’s interpretation of the Arabic phrases *innī mutawāffika wā rāfi’uka* differed much from most of the early Muslim commentators. Al-Ṭabarī, for example, explained that Jesus was taken by God in his sleep. It hinged on the Ḥadīth in which the Prophet was reported to have said: ‘Jesus did not die and he will not return to you before the Day of Judgement.’ The whole passage would thus mean: ‘I am the One who collected you from the earth and raised you from among the idolaters and those who disbelieved in you.’<sup>75</sup>

In her *Qur’ānic Christians*, J.D. McAuliffe studied the interpretation of ‘Abduh (which Riḍā followed) on that Qur’ānic verse. Her analysis can be accepted in a general sense, but she has sometimes

<sup>73</sup> Riḍā-Ṣidqī, *‘Aqīda*, p. 5.

<sup>74</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 7-8.

<sup>75</sup> McAuliffe, *op. cit.*, p. 131. For more interpretations, see, pp. 132-141.



failed to understand the technical language of *Tafsīr al-Manār*.<sup>76</sup> ‘Abduh maintained that some commentators interpreted *mutawaffika* as ‘causing you to sleep,’ others explained the phrase that Jesus was collected from the earth to heaven alive in body and spirit; but the majority of the commentators paraphrased it as ‘I rescued you from those aggressors so that they could not kill you. Rather I caused you to die a natural death (*umituka ḥatfa anfik*) and then raised you to Me.’<sup>77</sup> The key to a more proper interpretation, according to ‘Abduh, lies in the conjunctive *wā*, which does not point to the order of the actual event (*al-Tartīb fī al-Wujūd*). Both ‘Abduh and Riḍā tended to accept the alternative interpretation that *al-Tawaffī* overtly meant causing to die in the usual sense of death. The *raf* (raising) afterwards denoted a ‘raising’ of the soul: ‘it is not odd to speak of an individual, meaning only his soul. Because the soul (*al-Rūḥ*) is the true essence of a man, while the body is like a borrowed garment. It increases and decreases and changes. But the human being is human because his soul persists.’<sup>78</sup> ‘Abduh explained the Ḥadīth referring to the bodily raising of Jesus and his eventual return before the Last Day to preach the message of Islam and judge among people with Islamic law into two ways. First of all, all Prophetic traditions with regard to this had been transmitted in an *aḥād* (narrated by a small number people) way; and *al-Umūr al-‘Itiqādiyya* (the doctrinal matters) should not be deduced on the basis of such traditions. As a doctrinal issue, the raising or the return of Jesus should only be taken from the *mutawātīr* Ḥadīth.<sup>79</sup> Secondly, the verse could be understood as referring to the spiritual triumph (*al-Ghalaba al-Rūḥiyya*) of Jesus:

The Messiah did not bring a new law to the Jews: he brought them something which would prize them from their inflexibility over the external signification of the words of the Mosaic Law and set them to understanding it clearly in its real meaning. He instructed them to observe this true essence and to do whatever would draw them to the

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 142. Take for example her translation of the Arabic term *nuktah balāghiyya* as ‘joke.’ Although the word *nuktah* means in another context ‘joke,’ it refers here to a technical term in the science of *Balāghah* (Arabic rhetoric). It is any word specifying the hidden meaning of the phrase or the sentence.

<sup>77</sup> *Tafsīr al-Manār*, vol. 3, p. 261. Translation is McAuliffe’s, *ibid.*, p. 142. A.H.M. Zahniser, ‘The forms of *tawaffā* in the Qur’ān, a contribution to Christian-Muslim dialogue,’ *The Muslim World* 79, 1989, pp. 14-24.

<sup>78</sup> McAuliffe, *op. cit.*, p. 142.

<sup>79</sup> *Tafsīr al-Manār*, p. 261. McAuliffe skipped this point altogether.

world of the spiritual by paying great heed to the complete fulfilment of religious obligations.<sup>80</sup>

Riḍā shifted to give an interpretation of the verse: ‘And there is none of the People of the Book but must believe in him before *his* death; and on the Day of Judgment he will be a witness against them’ (al-Nisā’, 159). Some exegetes defined the pronoun *his* in the verse as referring to Jesus. This meant therefore that all of them believed in Jesus before his death because he is still alive in heaven. In Riḍā’s view, the pronoun referred to the person who would believe in Jesus, but not to Jesus himself. In other words, everybody among the People of the Book, before his own death, would witness the truth about Jesus. Riḍā’s understanding of the verse in this manner was closely related to the Muslim eschatological point of view that everybody will witness his final destination of *al-Thawāb* (reward) or *al-‘Iqāb* (punishment) during the last moments before his death. Riḍā quoted the Prophetic Traditions that clearly pointed out that the believer will receive the good tidings about God’s contentment before his death, on the other hand the unbeliever will be told about God’s torture and punishment. The angels consequently will address those who are about to die about the truth of Jesus. Riḍā attempted to prove his interpretation in the light of the Qur’ānic verse indicating that when the Pharaoh was overwhelmed with the flood, he confessed his belief (Yūnus, 90).<sup>81</sup>

Riḍā made it clear that the belief in the murder and the Crucifixion of Jesus at the outset is not needed for Muslims. Disbelief in it does not decrease Muslim knowledge of Christian ethics or history. It was the Christians who took it as the basis of their faith. Riḍā only criticised it because the Christians made it a point of departure in their attacks against Islam, especially when they found the Qur’ān abhorrently condemning it.<sup>82</sup>

### 6.5.1. *Riḍā Discussing Crucifixion in a Missionary School*

In his commentary on these verses, Riḍā recalled his early contact with missionaries, when he arrived in Cairo. Once he passed by the above-mentioned English Missionary School (situated at Muḥammed

<sup>80</sup> As translated by McAuliffe, p. 143.

<sup>81</sup> Riḍā-Şidqī, *‘Aqīda*, pp. 12-14.

<sup>82</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 14-15.

'Ali Pasha Street). A missionary was standing at the entrance of the school asking people to come in and listen to the Word of God. When Riḏā was invited in, he saw many people sitting on wooden benches. A missionary preacher stood up and started to address his audience by dwelling on the question of Crucifixion and the Original Sin.<sup>83</sup> Riḏā related the words of the preacher without giving any elaboration on the Christian theological interpretations of the concept of the Original Sin as such. In the missionary's words, human beings were born sinful and deserve punishment because of the Adamic guilt. It was a 'dilemma' for God, Who was supposed to be characterised by justice and mercy. If He were to punish Adam and his offspring, it would contradict His mercy. If not, it would not correspond with His justice. Since the creation of Adam, God had been 'thinking' of solving the problem by finding a way to combine mercy with justice. It was only 1912 years ago (from the year Riḏā wrote his treatise), when He found this solution by incarnating His only son in the womb of a woman from Adam's offspring. This son was destined to live and bear the pain of Crucifixion in order to salvage human beings.<sup>84</sup> As soon as the missionary finished his sermon, Riḏā stood up and asked: 'If you have gathered us in this place in order to convey to us this message out of mercy and compassion, would you allow me to clarify the effect of your sermon on me?' The preacher allowed him. Riḏā took the position of the preacher and started to refute the contents of the sermon by raising six points for discussion. According to Riḏā, his missionary counterpart was not able to give any answer, but made it clear that their school was not a place for debating. Those who were interested in debating were asked to go to their library. Riḏā proudly relates that the audience was shouting: 'There is no God, but Allah and Muḥammad is His messenger!'<sup>85</sup>

During this discussion, Riḏā identified some theological problems surrounding the man's sermon. He recapitulated his amazement at how it was possible that the Maker of the world would fail to find a solution to this predicament for thousands of years. Those who believe in this doctrine, he went on, do not seek the least of rationality behind their faith.<sup>86</sup> Riḏā was dismayed that the Maker of the universe would

---

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., pp. 18-19.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., pp. 17-18.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 19.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 20.

became incarnated in the womb of a woman, who had the tiniest place in His Kingdom. The outcome was a human being, who was eating, drinking and being tired to the extent that he was slain in humiliation with thieves.<sup>87</sup> Likewise scandalous to Riḍā was the suggestion that God had to leave Jesus to his enemies who tortured him and stabbed him, even though he was guiltless. The divine toleration of their acts significantly contradicts the concept of mercy and justice, which the Christians sought behind the doctrine.<sup>88</sup> For Riḍā, the concept of forgiveness never contradicted the divine justice and perfection. Riḍā related a parable that any master who forgives his guilty slave is never described as unjust. Forgiveness is, on the other hand, one of the most excellent virtues.<sup>89</sup>

### 6.5.2. *Reward and Salvation in Islam*

After having recalled this discussion in the missionary school, Riḍā continued by discussing the infallibility of prophets, which he had already discussed in the *Shubuhāt*. It was again a reaction to the missionary claim that the Prophet Muḥammad took the place of Jesus in Islam as redeemer for Muslims. Riḍā was frustrated by their propaganda among the simple-minded Muslims that Jesus had never committed a sin. As in the case of Muḥammad, we are left with some reports that he did make mistakes. According to him, the sinful was never capable of saving his followers from any sin.<sup>90</sup>

Riḍā argued that Islamic instructions in this regard were superior to the Christian doctrine of Crucifixion. In his words, as it never encouraged its followers to exert efforts towards good deeds in order to be saved, this doctrine made people lax in blindly relying on something that had ‘corrupted their minds and ethics. He stressed that the light of knowledge and independence, which was originally taken from Islam, liberated the whole of Europe from it.<sup>91</sup> Despite Riḍā’s deep belief in the sinlessness of all prophets (including Jesus and Muḥammad), he was convinced that his Christian addressees were not able to produce any ‘*Aqlī* (rational) or ‘*Naqlī* (traditional) proofs from within their religion. Very suspicious about their way of trans-

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., pp. 20-21.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 22.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., pp. 22-23.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 24.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 30.

mission, Riḍā maintained that the Christian scriptures had no explicit texts telling us that a large number of the followers of Jesus had accompanied him in every minute of his life so that they could have given their testimony that he never lapsed in sin in his whole life. In accordance with Islamic theology, Riḍā differentiated between the Arabic usage of *Khatī'ah* (guilt or fault) and *Dhanb* (sin). As for the former, it never happened on the part of prophets, since it included all acts of divergence by committing what God prohibits. The latter concept was derived from *Dhanab al-Ḥayawān* (the tail of animal) because it refers to any act that entails unpleasant and opposing results. All prophets had probably made this kind of mistake. An example of these was the Prophet Muḥammad's permission to the Hypocrites not to join him in the Expedition of Tabūk (or the Expedition of Distress, circa 630 AD), when they decided to stay behind in Medina. In Riḍā's view, such acts—even though a *dhanb* in the literal sense—could not be considered as a *khatī'ah*, which might prevent human beings from deserving the Kingdom of God and His eternal reward.<sup>92</sup> However, he pointed out that such issues did not represent the core of the Islamic doctrine; and their rejection brings no harm. For Riḍā, the Muslim criterion of salvation and eternal pleasure in the Hereafter was only accomplished by means of purifying one's soul from all 'false' pagan dogmas and performing good and virtuous acts in this world.<sup>93</sup> This kind of purification does not mean that the believer should be fully infallible from committing any mistake; but he should always wipe off these mistakes by showing remorse: 'It is like one's house which one regularly sweeps and wipes by using all cleaning methods. Whenever any dust or filthiness touches it, one would immediately remove it away [...] Clean houses have sometimes little dust and filthiness, which could be easily removed.'<sup>94</sup>

### 6.5.3. *A Pagan Nature of the doctrines of Crucifixion and Salvation?*

Riḍā remarked that many Christians had personally confessed to him that such doctrines as the Crucifixion, Salvation and Trinity could never rationally be proved. Their mere support for such beliefs originated from the Holy Scriptures with which they must comply regardless of their rationality or irrationality. In Islam, he further argued,

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 26.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 27.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., p. 28.

there was no fundamental doctrine that did not conform to rationality, except some reports on the ‘unseen world,’ which cannot be proven by means of human reason independently. But their occurrence cannot be denied, as they are considered as *Mumkināt* (possibilities).<sup>95</sup>

Riḍā reiterated the arguments of the above-mentioned Ṭāhir al-Tannīr verbatim. As we have mentioned, Tannīr drew parallels between various Christian doctrines and other doctrines held in antique religions. As for the Crucifixion, he also quoted other sources, such as a piece of work by the nineteenth-century rationalist Thomas William Doane who argued that ‘the idea of salvation through the offering of a God as a sacrifice is very ancient among the pagan Hindus and others.’<sup>96</sup>

#### 6.5.4. *An Illusive Crucifixion?*

As continuation to his reflection on the Crucifixion, Riḍā occasionally drew from the arguments of Ṣidqī, sometimes with no differentiation between Ṣidqī’s and his own. Riḍā doubted the soundness of the Christian narratives on the Crucifixion as lacking the quality of *tawātur*. Riḍā took pride in the status of the *tawātur* in Islam. For him, historical reports acquire this specific attribute, when they are related after the agreement of a large group of narrators, whose collusion to lie over the narration is impossible. In order to avoid any doubt, the absence of collusion and error should be also testified from the side of this multitude of informers.<sup>97</sup> The fact that Mary Magdalene and other women, for example, had been in doubt about the crucified person violated the conditions of *tawātur*.<sup>98</sup>

Riḍā challenged the Christians to prove the *tawātur* of their Scriptures in that sense. He also distrusted the reliability and the holiness, which the Christians ascribed to their Scriptures. He found no evidence whatsoever on their internal infallibility or the infallibility

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 31.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid., p. 32. ‘The idea of expiation by the sacrifice of a god was to be found among the Hindoos even in Vedic times. The sacrificer was mystically identified with the victim, which was regarded as the ransom for sin, and the instrument of its annulment. The Rig—Veda represents the gods as sacrificing Purusha, the primeval male, supposed to be coeval with the Creator.’ T. W. Doane, *Bible myths and their parallels in other religions*, New York: Commonwealth Co, circa 1882, p. 181.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid., pp. 35-36

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 36.

of their writers. The same held true for the synods which had been established to authorise them. The fact that the Qur'ān has been narrated by the way of *tawātur* was a more reliable foundation for faith than their non-*mutawātir* books. Riḍā warned Muslims not to believe in the missionary propaganda that their Scriptures had been transmitted without interruption since the time of Jesus, and that all Christian sects had accepted them with no disagreement. Riḍā drew the attention of common Muslims to the fact that Islam, unlike Christianity, was born in the 'cradle' of power, civilisation and culture. In that milieu the Qur'ān was preserved.<sup>99</sup>

Riḍā retold Şidqī's arguments regarding the alleged prediction in the Old Testament of the Crucifixion.<sup>100</sup> He also repeated his ideas concerning the confusion of the soldiers, who had led Jesus to his prison. Riḍā used his own experience as an argument. Often, he would greet strange people confounding them with his friends. But after having talked to them, he would recognise that they were not his friends. Riḍā quoted from the same medical work used by Şidqī. Besides, he cited another incident mentioned in the afore-mentioned educational French work, *L'Émile du dix-neuvième siècle*, that it has been attested that people would sometimes be confused in recognising others who have similar appearance.<sup>101</sup> Unlike Şidqī, who mainly interpreted the confusion about the Crucifixion from a medical and scientific point of view, Riḍā repeated the classical Muslim view that it was primarily caused by a divine supernatural act, when God put the likeliness of Jesus upon another man and changed his appearance. For this reason, he was able to escape unseen.<sup>102</sup> Riḍā tried to substantiate this Islamic viewpoint on the basis of passages from the New Testament. He alluded, for example, to Jesus' words to his followers that 'a time is coming, and has come, when you will be scattered, each to his own home. You will leave me all alone. Yet I am not alone, for my Father is with me. I have told you these things, so that in me you may have peace. In this world you will have trouble. But take

---

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., pp. 38-39. Riḍā mentioned many examples of the reasons why Muslims should not take the reliability of these Scriptures for granted. Most of these examples were quoted from Şidqī's arguments. There is no need therefore to repeat them. See, pp. 39-44

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 44

<sup>101</sup> Ibid., p. 46

<sup>102</sup> Ibid., pp. 47-48.

heart! I have overcome the world' (John 16:32-33). This was a prediction of what Matthew stated when he said that 'all the disciples forsook him, and fled' (Matthew 26:55) (See also, Mark 14:50).<sup>103</sup>

The preferable alternative, in Riḍā's eyes, was the narrative of the Crucifixion as told in the Gospel of Barnabas. He added that if it were true that Judas Iscariot had plans to commit suicide and had later completely disappeared, Riḍā argued, it could mean that it was he who had been crucified. Giving up himself to the soldiers must have been much less demanding than committing suicide. In Riḍā's mind, it was also reasonable that when Judas witnessed the divine Providence having saved his master, he must have instantly perceived how grave his infidelity was. He therefore submitted himself to death in order to have his sins wiped off. Riḍā compared the escape of Jesus with that of the Prophet Muḥammad before his migration to Medina, when the Meccans fell asleep in front of his house and did not perceive him passing by.<sup>104</sup>

Riḍā held the same view as Ṣidqī that the whole event of the Crucifixion was based on illusions and rumours. It was only the 'hysterical' Mary Magdalene, who was touched by the 'seven devils,' who had witnessed the Resurrection and claimed to have talked to Jesus. After having heard the story, the disciples circulated it among the common people. Riḍā clarified all that happened as something that normally occurs to people in the situation of 'nervous excitement,' such as fear, sorrow or thirst. In these circumstances people sometimes imagine that other persons are talking to them. This could also be compared to things happening in dreams and visions.<sup>105</sup>

Similarly to Ṣidqī, Riḍā made the interesting remark that all reports related to the Crucifixion and resurrection of Jesus looked much like the supposed imaginary visions that occasionally appear to Ṣūfī figures. An example of these was the occurrence, which took place in the Moroccan city Fez, and was narrated by the writer of the well-known eighteenth-century influential Ṣūfī work *al-Dhahab al-Ibrīz*.<sup>106</sup>

<sup>103</sup> Ibid., pp. 48-49.

<sup>104</sup> Ibid., pp. 56-57.

<sup>105</sup> Ibid., p. 64.

<sup>106</sup> Riḍā did not define the writer by name. But it is obvious that he referred to *al-Ibrīz min Kalām Sayyidī al-Ghawth 'Abd al-'Azīz al-Dabbāgh*, which was written by the Mālikite jurist Aḥmad Ibn al-Mubārak al-Sijilmāsī (d. 1742). In his unpublished work, 'al-Ḥikmā al-Shar'iyyā,' Riḍā criticised many points of this work. See, *al-Ibrīz*, edited by Muḥammad 'Adnān al-Shammā', 2 vols, Damascus, 1st edition, 1986. See also the French translation of Zakia Zouanat, *Paroles d'or Kitāb al-Ibrīz*,



The author related a story on the authority of his master that a butcher lost one of his most beloved children, and remained overwhelmed by the presence of that child in his thoughts day and night. He once went to Bāb al-Futūḥ (a famous gate in Fez) in order to purchase sheep. While he was thinking about his dead son, he saw all of a sudden the boy standing beside him. The man claimed that he was really asking his son to seize the sheep till he would buy another one. When the surrounding people asked him whom he was speaking to, the butcher retrieved his consciousness once again. The son disappeared. 'None knew exactly,' the author concluded, 'what occurred inside him out of longing to [see] his child, except God the Almighty.'<sup>107</sup>

Riḍā mentioned another example about an elderly lady from his hometown al-Qalamūn who often saw the dead and talked to them. A brother of hers, who had drowned, was her most habitual companion in conversation. Riḍā and others were almost sure that the lady was not lying or deceiving with her story, for she was overwhelmed by that experience.<sup>108</sup> Adding to these examples, Riḍā now glossed long citations from the Arabic translation of Gustave Le Bon's work *Psychologie des foules*,<sup>109</sup> especially on the author's ideas concerning 'the suggestibility and credulity of crowds.' In his works, Le Bon put more emphasis on mass movements in general, and appealed more directly to the sensibilities of the middle class.<sup>110</sup> Riḍā quoted his particular ideas on how the community thinks in images, and the image itself instantaneously calls up a series of other images of no connection with the former. The ways in which a community distorts any event which it witnesses must be manifold, since the temperaments of individuals composing the gathering are very different. The first perversion of the truth affected by one of the individuals of the gathering is the starting-point of the contagious suggestion. The miraculous appearance of St. George on the walls of Jerusalem to all the Crusaders was certainly perceived in the first instance by one of

---

*enseignements consignés par son disciple Ibn Mubārak al-Lamī*, du Relié, 2002. More about al-Ibrīz, see, Valerie J. Hoffman, 'Annihilation in the Messenger of God: The Development of a Šūfī Practice,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 31/3, 1999, pp. 351-369.

<sup>107</sup> Riḍā-Şidqī, 'Aqīda', p. 65. Riḍā quoted the story from Sijilmāsi's, vol. 2, p. 72.

<sup>108</sup> Ibid., p. 66.

<sup>109</sup> G. Le Bon, *Psychologie des foules*, various editions, Paris. Riḍā used the translation by A. Fathī Zaghūl, *Rūḥ al-Ijtīmā'*, Maṭba'at al-Sha'b, Cairo, 1909.

<sup>110</sup> See, Jaap van Ginneken, *Crowds, Psychology, and Politics, 1871-1899*, Cambridge University Press, 1992, p. 130ff.

those present, and was immediately accepted by all.<sup>111</sup> Another example of these ‘collective hallucinations’ had been related by Julian Felix, a naval lieutenant, and was cited by the *Revue Scientifique*. The French frigate, the Belle Poule, was cruising in search for the cruiser Le Berceau, from which she had been separated as a result of violent storm. It was daylight and in full sunshine. Everybody on board signaled a disabled vessel with many officers and sailors, who were exhibiting signals of distress. But it was nothing but a collective hallucination. When Admiral Desfosses had lowered a boat to rescue the wrecked sailors, they saw masses of men in motion, stretching out their hands and screaming. Finally, they discovered that it was only a few branches of trees covered with leaves, which had been carried from the neighboring coast.<sup>112</sup> Le Bon mentioned another example, which he read in the newspapers about the story of two little girls, who had been found dead in the Seine. Half a dozen witnesses recognised both of them. On the basis of these affirmations, the *juge d’instruction* had the certificate of death drawn up. During the procession of their burial, people discovered that the supposed victims were alive. They also had but a remote resemblance to the drowned girls.<sup>113</sup>

Riḍā argued that if it were possible in the opinion of those psychologists (which he called philosophers) that people can be affected by their imagination to this extent, it should be accepted that those who witnessed the Crucifixion and resurrection (such as Mary Magdalene and others) were also affected by these kinds of illusions.<sup>114</sup> Some Ṣūfīs, whom Riḍā personally knew, claimed many times to him that they saw the spirits of many prophets in their visions. One of these acquaintances was an *a’jamī* (non-Arab Western) Ṣūfī, who confessed to Riḍā the same thing, and that these prophets who came to him used to read religious sciences in Arabic.<sup>115</sup> Parallel to the appearance of St. George on the walls of Jerusalem, Riḍā again mentioned the story of Sheikh al-Matbūlī of Cairo and another analogous account reported about a certain Rāghib from Syria. This Rāghib was training himself in mystical disciplines to the degree that he was overpowered by numerous imaginations. It was said that he memorised many parts of the Gospels after having lived among Christians in

<sup>111</sup> Riḍā-Ṣidqī, *‘Aqīda*, pp. 66-67. Zaghlūl, *ibid.*, pp. 28-29.

<sup>112</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 30.

<sup>113</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 31-32.

<sup>114</sup> Riḍā-Ṣidqī, *‘Aqīda*, pp. 73-74.

<sup>115</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 76.

Damascus. As a result, he started to imagine the story of the Crucifixion. Once he claimed that he envisioned Jesus as nailed in accordance with the image mentioned in the Gospels. After having told his Christian fellows about that, they believed him and declared him a saint. The famous Syrian reformer Ṭāhir al-Jazā'irī (d. 1920)<sup>116</sup> visited him and began to discuss with him the story from an Islamic point of view without any direct reproach about his mistake until he established another vision in his mind. Rāghib consequently stated that he envisioned Jesus once again standing in front of him, but without any trace of the Crucifixion whatsoever. In his vision, Rāghib began to ask Jesus about the reality of his Crucifixion. Jesus informed him that his image was placed upon Judas; and they therefore had crucified him. When he told them about his new vision, his Christian fellows declared him to be a lunatic.<sup>117</sup>

#### 6.6. Conclusion

We have provided a detailed synopsis of the contents of Şidqī's polemical treatises. Like his missionary counterparts polemicising against Islam, Şidqī was not very charitable in his criticism of the Bible. His approach was typical of the Muslim response to missionary work in its spirit of combativeness. We have seen that he attached great value to the European rationalistic attacks on the credibility of the miracles of the Bible and its supernatural ethical authority. On the other hand, he paid little attention to the classical Islamic sources. It was clear that he agreed with earlier Muslim polemicists that the Jewish and Christian sacred texts cannot boast any prophetic authorship even though they were supposedly based on the life stories of their prophets. At almost every point, Şidqī established the principal lines of his inquiry by sorting out various ideas already accepted in some Western circles in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. We have also noticed that his choice of words and tone was bolder and more startling than that of Riḍā. Though not a specialist, he tried to enter

---

<sup>116</sup> About his life, see, Joseph H. Escovitz, 'He Was the Muḥammad 'Abduh of Syria' a Study of Ṭāhir al-Jazā'irī and His Influence,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 18/3, 1986, pp. 293-310; Itzhak Weismann, 'Between Şūfī Reformism and Modernist Rationalism: A Reappraisal of the Origins of the Salafīyya from the Damascene Angle,' *Die Welt des Islams* 41/2, 2001, pp. 206-237.

<sup>117</sup> Riḍā-Şidqī, *Aqida*, pp. 74-75.

upon the province of Biblical criticism giving it an Islamic flavour. His zealotry in defending Islam against missionary attacks made his arguments an impoverished imitation of these Western writings. His medical knowledge was one of the most salient features of his polemics.

In his joint contribution to *‘Aqīdat al-Ṣalb wā al-Fidā’*, Riḍā generally set forth his ideas on the basis of his religious knowledge. Riḍā’s attitude towards the Crucifixion was, to say the least, surprising. He was clearly not concerned with analysing the wide range of narratives developed by early Muslims. In the course of his arguments, he stepped sometimes outside the established Muslim interpretations, mentioning many stories related in Ṣūfī traditions of visionary occurrences, and comparing them to the Christian narratives. The story of the Egyptian old man playing the role of al-Matbūlī, who was envisioned by people in the sky above the Greek Church, was one of the favourite stories quoted by Riḍā and Ṣidqī. As Riḍā was known for his heavy critique of the extreme forms of Sufism, we can plausibly conclude that his comparison of these stories with the Crucifixion was an indication of his belittling of their miraculous aspects as ‘illusive.’ These interpretations took a new turn in the force with which they insisted on the understanding of the Crucifixion and resurrection of Jesus as illusive events, which had nothing to do with the reality of his last moments on earth. Riḍā replicated many of his arguments from the same Western rationalist sources, which had been mentioned by Ṣidqī. Besides, he tallied many examples of comparable ‘illusions’ in some of the available Western works on ‘Crowd Psychology,’ such as the ideas of his favourite French physician, Gustave Le Bon.

## CHAPTER SEVEN

### RECAPITULATION OF IDEAS: CHRISTIANITY AS REFLECTED IN RIḌĀ'S FATWĀS

We have already discussed the polemics of *al-Manār* on Christianity on different levels. In chapter three we have seen that Riḍā had opened the pages of his journal to some of his readers by publishing their reactions to missionary activities. As early as 1903, *al-Manār* published a poem by an anonymous reader under the title of *Su'ālun fī al-Tathlīth* (A Question on the Trinity). Signing his poem *sīn nūn*, the poet challenged the Christians to prove that this doctrine was *qadīm* (primordial). The fact that it had never been explicitly mentioned in the teachings of previous prophets (especially Moses) proves that it was *ḥādīth* (newly innovated).<sup>1</sup> We have also pointed out that missionary activity in Egypt reached its peak in the beginning of the 1930s. In June 1933, another reader under the name Ḥasan al-Dars, a police officer and a journalist in Cairo, wrote a poem which he entitled, *Muḥārabat al-Mubashshirīn lil-'Islām fī Miṣr* (Missionaries fighting Islam in Egypt), which Riḍā never published in his journal. In his long poem, al-Dars accused missionaries of being 'charlatans,' who used all means, such as hypnosis, to convert people. He was grieved by the 'laxity' of the government in combating their work.<sup>2</sup>

Riḍā's interaction with his readers is best exemplified in his *fatwā* section.<sup>3</sup> In this section, he illustrated many of his views on many a great deal of theological, scholarly, religious, and social issues. Beginning in 1903, firstly under the title 'Questions and Answers' (*Su'āl wā Jawāb*), and later '*Fatāwā al-Manār*,' he responded to a wide variety of queries from all over the world. This collection indicates that *al-Manār* was a remarkable record of interests and preoccupations of the Muslim world.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 6/6, pp. 225-226.

<sup>2</sup> Letter to Riḍā, Ḥasan al-Dars, 15 June 1933, Cairo, Riḍā's private archive.

<sup>3</sup> The whole collection of his *fatwās* has been collected in six volumes in 1970-1971 by Ṣalāḥ al-Dīn al-Munajjid and Yūsuf al-Khūrī, 6 vols., Beirut, 1976-77.

<sup>4</sup> Dudoignon, 'Echoes,' pp. 85-116. More studies about Riḍā's *fatwās*, see, Jajat Burhanudin, 'Aspiring for Islamic Reform: Southeast Asian Requests for Fatwas in

It should be stressed that most of these petitions were submitted by Muslim readers; but there were also questions raised by Christians and missionaries. As we shall discuss, Riḍā's answers to the Danish missionary Alfred Nielsen represented his only reaction to queries directly sent by an active missionary in the Middle East. We also encounter the name of the above-mentioned Coptic lawyer Akhnūkh Fanūs (see, chapter 2), who sent Riḍā a long message in which he discussed the differences between some Qur'ānic narratives and their equivalents in the Old Testament. We should remember that Fānūs was one of the pivotal figures behind the Coptic Congress, which Riḍā had strongly resisted in 1911. Riḍā published his brief reaction to his message as a *fatwā* in 1913.<sup>5</sup> He reacted sharply, stressing that the Qur'ān was the Word of God and more trustworthy than the Biblical narratives written by Jewish historians. He divided Jewish narratives into two types: 1) divine as they contained the history of prophets, and 2) non-divine, such as the historical account of the Jewish historiographer Josephus. Riḍā stated that the Christian views of the narratives of the Old Testament were not always coherent, especially those on the stories of prophets. Muslims were therefore required not to trust their Scriptures, neither in the 'literal,' nor in the 'figurative' sense. They should be merely seen as historical records.<sup>6</sup>

### 7.1. Early Encounters

The first pertinent question was raised as early as 1902. In the minds of one of Riḍā's readers there were some theological problems as to the narratives on the *nuzūl* (descending) of Jesus before the end of

---

*al-Manār*, 'Islamic Law and Society 12/1, 2005, pp. 9-26. Cf. Charles Adams, 'Muḥammad 'Abduh and the Transvaal fatwa,' in *The Macdonald presentation Volume*, Princeton University Press, 1933, pp. 13-29; John O. Voll, 'Abduh and the Transvaal Fatwa: The Neglected Question,' in T. Sonn, ed., *Islam and the Question of Minorities*, Atlanta, Georgia: Scholars Press, 1996, pp. 27-40.

<sup>5</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 16/7, (Rajab 1331/July 1913), p. 520. In 1904, Riḍā published a poem by Fanūs on the Russo-Japanese War, and the reason behind Japan's progress in many fields. *al-Manār*, vol. 7/19 (Shawwāl, 1322/December 1904), p. 752. See also Riḍā's criticism to Fanūs and his role in the Coptic Congress in 1911; *al-Manār*, vol. 14/3, pp. 216-17.

<sup>6</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 16/7, (Rajab 1331/July 1913), p. 520.

the world. And would his return as a prophet contradict the concept of the Prophet Muḥammad as the seal of prophecy?<sup>7</sup>

Riḍā confirmed that Muslims were not required to believe in the return of Jesus because there was no related *qat'ī* (definite) Qur'ānic text. All Ḥadīths related to this issue, mostly from Abū Hurairah, were *aḥād* (narrated by a small number people) or *gharīb* (odd). In matters of *'Aqīda* (doctrine), one should depend on definite and *mutawātir* traditions. Riḍā furthermore disagreed with those who quoted the Qur'ān in order to support this element of doctrine. He gave different interpretations to the two verses related to this issue. The verse: 'And there is none of the People of the Book but must believe in him before his death' (al-Nisā', 4:159) was actually mentioned in the context of the claims of Christians about Jesus as the Son of God. In the *fatwā*, Riḍā employed the same arguments he used in the *Tafsīr* which we have already discussed in the previous chapter. The verse refers to a group of the People of the Book who revert to the true belief in Jesus as God's prophet immediately before their death. To take the verse as proving the descending of Jesus, and that people will believe in him before his natural death before the Day of Resurrection, was, in his view, inaccurate. The narratives concerning the coming of Jesus only became known after the circulation of the manuals of the two *Shaykhs* (Al-Bukhārī and Muslim).<sup>8</sup>

Despite his refusal to accept the return of Jesus on the basis of the Qur'ān, Riḍā insisted on making his own comparison between the concept of the Messiah in Judaism, Christianity and Islam. The Jews, in his view, expected their messiah who will renew the kingdom of Israel. Riḍā alluded that as they are desirous for wealth, the Jews predicted somebody who would consolidate their 'materialistic' aspirations on earth. The Christians expected the return of theirs in order to re-establish his Kingdom and the Cross. But Muslims believed that Jesus will return and 'break the cross, kill the swine, put an end to the payment of the *jizya* (the poll tax on the People of the Book), establish the Islamic Sharī'a, and observe the Muslim prayer in order

<sup>7</sup> Aḥmad effendi 'Abd al-Ḥalīm from Shibīn al-Kūm (Egypt), 'Nuzūl al-Masiḥ,' vol. 5/4 (Ṣafār 1320/May 1902), pp. 135-138. Riḍā gave a similar answer on the ascension of Jesus to Heaven to a question raised by a certain Aḥmad Ismā'īl al-Quṭb, a subscriber to *al-Manār* from Lebanon, see, 'Ṣu'ūd al-Sayyid al-Masiḥ 'ilā al-Samā', vol. 14/7 (Rajab 1329/July 1911), p. 507.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, 137.

to make it clear that Islam is the true religion.<sup>9</sup> Riḍā however argued that some Christians believed in the return of Jesus not in the physical sense. They interpreted his ‘return’ as referring to his ‘good attributes and sermons of love, peace and brotherhood.’ In the same sense, Riḍā metaphorically elucidated the word *nuzūl* in the Ḥadīth as that the descending of Jesus would be exemplified in the propagation and loftiness of Islam as the true religion of God. The Christians will also comprehend the nature of Jesus to be a man, in the same way as the Muslims believe in Muḥammad.<sup>10</sup> Concerning the second point of the question, Riḍā confirmed that the notion of the Prophet Muḥammad as the seal of prophecy was confirmed by means of *mutawātir* and definite traditions; and there was no need to interpret it in the light of other *aḥād* narratives such as that about the return of Jesus.<sup>11</sup>

In 1903, a habitual *mustaftī* (petitioner) of *al-Manār* under the name Aḥmad Muḥammad al-ʿAlfi, a regional scholar in the town of Tūkh nearby Cairo, wondered why many Christians, despite being highly qualified and having significantly contributed to the Arabic language, still insist on disbelieving in the Qurʾān as the final and true revelation. Some of them, he went on, already admitted its miraculous nature, but rejected its divine origin out of ‘stubbornness’: Why did eloquent Christian men of letters adhere to Christianity, and ignore the ‘contradictions, the broken chain of transmission, and the opposition to logic in the Christian Scriptures? Why did they leave the Qurʾān with its ‘wise’ message and ‘beautiful’ style aside?<sup>12</sup>

Riḍā answered that those Christians insisted on adopting their religion only as a matter of ‘nationality’ and a socio-political bond. They preserved its religious symbols of doctrines, traditions in order to keep their national and religious unity intact. In Riḍā’s thinking, they did not study Islam with due fairness in order to understand its origins. However, the ‘vices’ widespread among Muslims made the ‘merits’ of Islam invisible to the fair-minded among them. Riḍā

<sup>9</sup> Ibid, pp. 137-38.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., pp. 138-139.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid.

<sup>12</sup> ‘Bayān al-Qurʾān wā Balāghatuh wā mā yuhimu dhālik,’ *al-Manār*, vol. 6/12, pp. 461-466. About questions by the same person see, vol. 4/6 (Ṣafar 1319/May 1901), pp. 221-22; vol. 4/7, pp. 256-57; vol. 4/8 (Rabīʿ al-ʿAwwal 1319/June 1901), p. 303; vol. 6/10, pp. 373-74; vol. 6/12, pp. 461-62; vol. 14/2, pp. 99-100.



moreover spelled out that most of the well-versed Christian Arab linguists hardly looked at the Qur'ān in an objective way. Their 'ethnic enmity' against Islam, he further argued, frequently prevented them from saying the truth about the Qur'ān's miraculous (*mu'jiz*) nature. However, he excluded the group of those who reached another conclusion, viz. that the language of the Qur'ān is miraculous, such as the above-mentioned Christian Lebanese linguist Jabr effendi Ḍumiṭ in his book *al-Khawātir al-Ḥisān*.<sup>13</sup> Riḍā assured his petitioner that most of the educated and rational Christians did not believe in the Trinity, and a group of them had frequently informed him that they were entirely sceptical about their religion.

In 1904, an unnamed Tunisian questioner asked Riḍā whether a Muslim was allowed to read non-Muslim scriptures, such as the Torah, only for the sake of acquiring knowledge about their contents. He suggested that should Muslims be prohibited from reading other scriptures, non-Muslims would be more knowledgeable and stronger than Muslims, since they were not discouraged by their religion to study the Qur'ān.<sup>14</sup> For Riḍā, reading other scriptures for the purpose of supporting the truth of Islam and refuting the allegations of others was highly recommended. He even considered this act as a matter of *'Ibāda* (worship); and in many cases this should become a duty. As early Muslim scholars had been reading other scriptures in order to deduce proofs from them, Riḍā deemed it an obligation upon himself and other contemporary scholars to combat missionary writings on Islam by reading Christian scriptures and disproving them. In order to avoid disturbance in their beliefs, Riḍā discouraged common Muslims and young students to read the books of other religions. He compared the state of those Muslims with a 'crow' who tried to learn the way of walking of a 'peacock.' As soon as the crow acquired the peacock's way of walking, it would totally forget its former nature.<sup>15</sup>

<sup>13</sup> Jabr Ḍumiṭ, *al-Khawātir al-Ḥisān fī al-Ma'ānī wā al-Bayān*, Cairo, 1896.

<sup>14</sup> 'Muṭāla'at Kutub al-Milal Ghayr al-'Islāmiyya,' *al-Manār*, vol. 7/7, pp. 262-263.

<sup>15</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 263.

## 7.2. Are Christians Unbelievers?

Muḥammad Effendi Ḥilmī, a secretary at the Prisons of Ḥalfa (Sudan), put a question to Riḍā concerning the eternal abide of unbelievers and Christians in the Fire.<sup>16</sup> Riḍā expounded that the Qurʾān is clear-cut in stating that the *Kāfirūn* (unbelievers) and *Munāfiqūn* (hypocrites) abide eternally in the Fire, except whom the Lord wills to be saved. The scholars interpreted the concept of *Khulūd* (eternity) in this case as *Mukth* (eternal residence) in a similar way as in the other verse: 'If a man kills a Believer intentionally, his recompense is Hell, to abide therein for ever' (al-Nisā' 4:93). Muslim theologians were also of the opinion that anyone who knew about Islam on a sound basis stimulating his contemplation, while he did not believe out of stubbornness and rigidity, was eternally destined to the Fire. However, they excluded those who had not received the message properly or those who studiously and seriously investigated Islam, but did not manage to discover the truth before their death.

Another petitioner had some doubts about the authenticity of the Ḥadīth of the *Fiṭra* (God's way of creating or His plan): 'Every infant is born according to the *Fiṭra*, then his parents make him a Jew or a Christian or a Magian.'<sup>17</sup> Riḍā explained that every infant is born ready to 'promote' himself by accepting Islam as agreeable with God's original nature of creation. The infant later will be taught other psychological and physical behaviours which might influence his nature. When parents (or anybody playing their role) bring up their children according to beliefs other than Islam, they will be creating in the character of their children other traditions opposing the *Fiṭra*. Riḍā concluded that Christian parents, for example, raise their children to believe that all human beings have been created by nature with 'evil' and 'sin.' They also teach them that salvation and happiness could be reached if they believe in the Crucifixion, which Riḍā defined as a change in their *Fiṭra*.<sup>18</sup>

In another *fatwā* on the belief of the People of the Book, Riḍā made his points clearer. He gave the example that their belief was like a

<sup>16</sup> 'Khulūd al-Kāfir fi al-Nār,' vol. 7/7, pp. 258-259; questions by the same person, see, vol. 6/13 (Rajab 1321/September 1903), p. 510; vol. 6/17, p. 672, vol. 7/4, p. 141

<sup>17</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 8/1 (Muharram 1323/March 1905), pp. 18-20; a certain 'Abdullāh Sulaymān sent the question from Suez. In his comment, based on the question, Riḍā found him a 'strange man.'

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.*

group of slaves whose master left them his farm in order to reconstruct it and avail themselves from its crops. Later he sent them a more educated and well-informed slave with a manual of other instructions and duties. They followed that manual, but soon abandoned it after the death of the slave. They were 'tempted' to discard their work according to his manual, replacing it by extravagant veneration of the slave instead of exerting efforts to keep the farm cultivated. Riḏā followed the line of Abū Ḥāmid Al-Ghazālī (d. 1111) who maintained that those who died after having conducted deep investigation, but did not reach the truth of Islam before their death, would be forgiven in the Hereafter. Such people are excused until they have a real opportunity to learn about the 'truth' of Islam.<sup>19</sup>

### 7.3. A Kuwaiti Petitioner on Slavery in the Bible

In the Gulf region, there were slave-holding areas even until the 1950s, despite official out-lawing of the slave trade. In their writings, missionaries in Kuwait and Bahrain were critical of the institution of slavery.<sup>20</sup> In response to many questions, Riḏā published opinions on slavery. Sulaymān al-ʿAdasānī (d. 1957), *al-Manār*'s agent and Riḏā's informant in Kuwait, requested Riḏā to dwell upon the concept of captivity and slavery in the Bible. The reason for the query was to respond to the objections to Islam as an 'anti-humane' and 'barbaric' religion.<sup>21</sup> Al-ʿAdasānī had several debates with Christian missions in his homeland. In a letter to Riḏā, he mentioned a well-circulated missionary pamphlet in Kuwait entitled: *Ḥusn al-ʿIjāz fī Ibtāl al-ʿIjāz* (The Best Refutation of the Unapproachable Eloquence) by a certain

<sup>19</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 13/8 (Sha'bān 1328/September 1910), pp. 572-574. See, Abū Ḥāmid al-Ghazālī, *Fayṣal al-Tafriqa Bayna al-Islām wā al-Zandaqa*, edited by Sulaymān Dunyā, Cairo, 1961, pp. 206-208.

<sup>20</sup> Eleanor Abdella Doumato, 'An 'Extra Legible Illustration of the Christian Faith': Medicine, Medical Ethics, and Missionaries in the Arabian Gulf,' in Eleanor H. Tejirian & Reeva Spector Simon, eds., *Altruism and Imperialism: The Western Religious and Cultural Missionary Enterprise in the Middle East*, Middle East Institute, Colombia University, 2002, pp.167-182; G.E. Dejong, 'Slavery in Arabia,' *The Muslim World* 24, 1934, pp. 127-31. More about slavery in Kuwait, see, Suzanne Miers, *Slavery in the Twentieth Century*, Rowman Altamira, 2003, pp. 164-172.

<sup>21</sup> 'Al-Saby wā al-Riqq fī al-Tawrah wa al-'Injil,' vol. 17/9 (Ramaḏān 1332/August 1914), pp. 658-661.

Nuṣayr al-Dīn al-Zāfirī, whose aim was to disapprove the Qur'ān's claim of eloquence.<sup>22</sup>

In his answer, Riḍā did not cite any specific sources. His reply was based on lengthy quotations from the Bible which he saw as encouraging slavery. He continued to elucidate that there was ample evidence that captivity and slavery were permitted in ancient legislations. He pointed for instance to the Biblical narrative that Abraham's brother had been taken captive (Genesis 14:14). The Mosaic Law had also allowed the Israelites to take 'the children of the strangers' as their 'bondmen forever' (Leviticus 25:46). Riḍā argued that these Biblical passages stated that it had not been permitted to free any foreign slave. The Israelites, on the other hand, were requested to free their Hebrew slaves during the year of Jubilee, except those who showed a desire to remain in eternal slavery. Riḍā went further and applied his analysis of these Biblical passages to the Zionist movement. He expected that once they had completely seized Palestine and established their laws, they will 'root out' all native inhabitants and keep them in slavery forever. In his view, the Israelites were likewise asked not to set a king over themselves who was 'a stranger' and not a 'brother' (Deuteronomy 17:15). Riḍā referred to another passage as responsible for the subjugation of female captives. According to Deuteronomy, when an Israelite saw among the captives a beautiful woman, and had a desire to have her as his wife, he should bring her home. She had to shave her head, and pare her nails (21:11-14). As for the Gospels, Riḍā pointed out that they endorsed slavery in the same manner as the Romans. It neither demanded masters to free their slaves nor to be lenient with them. In many places it was stressed that servants should be submissive to their masters 'with all fear' and 'according to the flesh, with fear and trembling' (Ephesians 6:5-8; Colossians 3:22-25; I Peter 2:18-20).

In this *fatwā*, Riḍā did not exemplify the Islamic rules of slavery in details, but referred the questioner to other articles in *al-Manār*

---

<sup>22</sup> Al-'Adasānī was the founder of the first public library in Kuwait. He later became a member of the Kuwaiti Legislative Council. See, [http://www.moe.edu.kw/schools-2/mobarak\\_alkabeer/moqararatschools/boys/Wchool/nbza.asp](http://www.moe.edu.kw/schools-2/mobarak_alkabeer/moqararatschools/boys/Wchool/nbza.asp); accessed on 25 January 2008.

In Riḍā's archive, I found about 30 letters sent by the petitioner. The treatise was published by the American Press in Cairo (Bulaq, 1912, 24pp). The title is to be listed in the *Summer 1914 Edition, op. cit.*, p. 13.

on the subject.<sup>23</sup> In this way he rebuked those who criticised Islam as an unjust religion towards slaves. Unlike Judaism and Christianity, he argued, Islam never made slavery an obligation, but allowed it for specific reasons. Riḍā looked at the role of slaves in that sense in a positive way. In the case of war and the murder of most of the male members of the clan, slaves had always been of great benefit in taking care of children and women. Islam always demanded masters to treat their slaves on an equal footing, even in giving them the same food and clothes; and never to humiliate or afflict them with heavy work.<sup>24</sup>

#### 7.4. An Aḥmadī Petitioner

In 1915, Shir 'Alī, the director of the *Aḥmadī* quarterly *Review of Religions* (firstly published in 1902) in Punjab, made a statement that *al-Manār*'s interpretation of the phrase *muṣaddiqan limā bayna yadayhi* (lit. confirming which is between his hands) was an eye-opener for him. This phrase is often mentioned in the Qur'ān as a testimony to other holy books. *Al-Manār* made a distinction between 'saddaqa lahu' (a non-transitional verb with the preposition *lām*) and 'saddaqa bihi' (a non-transitional verb with the preposition *bā*). The former refers to 'verification and confirmation,' whereas the latter means 'completion, or implementation of the purport of something.' The usage of the concept by the Qur'ān referred to the former meaning of verification, only. According to Shir 'Alī, this interpretation might remove the misunderstanding between Muslims and Christians concerning the testimony of the Qur'ān to their scriptures. Shir 'Alī had heard about this interpretation, but did not read *al-Manār* himself. The significance of it lay in the fact that he, as a Muslim missionary in India, was indebted to Riḍā whose arguments regularly endorsed his debates with Christian missionaries.<sup>25</sup>

<sup>23</sup> Riḍā dealt with the issue of slavery in *al-Manār* in many other places. In 1910, for example, he received a group of questions on the issue from a certain Muḥammad Mukhtār from Paris, see vol. 13/10 (Shawwāl 1328/November 1910), pp. 741-744.

<sup>24</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 17/9. Later in 1922, Riḍā clung to the notion that Muslims were obliged to retain slavery if their enemies did so, to improve their bargaining position. Towards the end of his life, he even opined that servitude could be a refuge for the poor and weak, notably, women, and could give all women a chance to bear children. See, William Gervase Clarence-Smith, *Islam and the Abolition of Slavery*, London: Hurst & Oxford University Press, 2006, pp. 205-206.

<sup>25</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 18/3 (Jumāda al-'Ūlā 1333/14 April 1915), pp. 178-180.

Riḍā explained to Shir ‘Alī that the interpretation was not his own, but had been formulated earlier by Tawfīq Ṣidqī in one of his polemical treatises. Riḍā added to the interpretation more linguistic analyses of some theological connotations. The verb *ṣaddaqa* could be used in the Qur’ān as *muta‘addī bi nafsihī* (transitional form in itself) and has two meanings: 1) the Prophet verbally conveyed the truth of the Jewish and Christian messages, or 2) his mission, supported by his ‘merits and deeds,’ confirmed his prophecy on the coming of other scriptures. Riḍā agreed that the non-transitional verb *muṣaddiqan limā* was only used for confirmation, but the other way around, viz. the other scriptures contained clear prophecies, which confirmed the coming of the prophet Muḥammad and the message of Islam.

### 7.5. A Lutheran Danish Missionary in Riḍā’s Fatwās

Riḍā was never reluctant to publish his own debates with missionaries in his *Manār*, and opened its pages for their questions. He thought that this was the best way to raise the Muslims’ awareness of the missionary movements of his time. He published three *fatwās* on Christian missions, whose questions had been raised by the Danish missionary Pastor Alfred Julius Nielsen (1884-1963), a Lutheran missionary in Syria and Palestine.<sup>26</sup>

It is worth noting that Nielsen had worked for some time in Riḍā’s village, and was a subscriber to *al-Manār*.<sup>27</sup> He was also keen on having correspondences with other Muslim scholars in Palestine, in which he discussed many theological aspects of the Bible and the Qur’ān. He was much interested in promoting tolerance and the free

<sup>26</sup> For more details, see, Ryad, ‘Nielsen.’ See also, Nielsen’s articles and the reviews on his Danish works, ‘Koranen og Biblen (Book Review, by S. Zwemer),’ *The Moslim World* 12, 1922, p. 210; ‘Skildringer af Syriske Medarbejdere (Book Review, by S. Zwemer),’ *The Moslim World* 12, 1922, p. 211; ‘Bag Libanons Bjerger (Book Review),’ *The Moslim World* 12, 1922, p. 211; ‘Damascus as a Mission Center,’ *The Moslim World* 13, 1923, pp. 160-166; ‘Difficulties in Presenting the Gospel to Moslems,’ *The Moslim World* 19, 1929, pp. 41-46; ‘Moslem Mentality in the Syrian Press,’ *The Moslim World* 20, 1930, pp. 143-163; *Muhammedansk Tankegang i vore Dage*, Copenhagen, 1st ed., 1930; ‘Muhammedask Tankegang I vore Dage (Book Review, by Zwemer),’ *The Moslim World*, 20, 1930, p. 426; ‘The Islamic Conference at Jerusalem,’ *The Moslim World* 22, 1932, pp. 339-354; ‘Colloquial Arabic,’ *The Moslem World* 34, 1944, pp. 218-219; ‘Comparison,’ *The Moslem World* 39, 1949, pp. 1-5.

<sup>27</sup> Letter, anonymous to ‘Abd al-Rāziq Ḥamzah, Damascus, 15 Rabī‘ al-Thānī 1343, Riḍā’s archive in Cairo.

exchange of opinions relative to Christianity and Islam.<sup>28</sup> As a liberal theologian, Nielsen argued that 'the Christians of the Near East were to lose nothing, if they would abandon Christianity and become Muslims.'<sup>29</sup> It was not important for him that Christians and Muslims might reach an ultimate conclusion with each other as regard to the concept of Salvation; but they should live as 'brothers.'<sup>30</sup> In its review of one of his Arabic treatises, the Jesuit magazine *al-Machreq* severely criticised Nielsen for his overzealous goals by 'treading a wicked road.' It also considered his views 'a slap in the face of Christians.'<sup>31</sup>

Riḍā's three *fatwās* for Nielsen contained interesting arguments, which were rarely found in the Muslim-Christian controversy of that time. They were unique in the sense of being a face-to-face debate between a Muslim theologian and a Christian missionary. Riḍā's answers did not only dealt with his conception of the missionary work, but contained some reflections on a few theological issues as well.

The first *fatwā* (1924) dealt with Nielsen's questions on several points, such as the Muslim perception of the upright missionary work which does not attack Islam, and learning the Bible as it is the basis of Western civilisation. In his answer, Riḍā amply vindicated that the Muslim, with the knowledge and reason given to him, can distinguish between good missions whose work was fair and included no defamation or obscenity of other religions. The Muslim, according to him, could differentiate between zealous Christians and most missionaries who exploited it in politics and retained religious fanaticism. Riḍā evaluated all missions working among Muslims as corrupting and indecent due to their 'bad' behaviour, which had been attested. A decent missionary approach, however, was acceptable. His own experience convinced him that there were some individuals who preached their religion on the basis of manifesting its values, standing up for their convictions on the basis of solid knowledge, and keeping abreast of honesty and blamelessness. He lived among such Christians

---

<sup>28</sup> *The Moslem World* 25, 1935, pp. 411–422. He also co-published a treatise entitled as, *Afkār Mu'minīn fi Ḥaqā'iq al-Dīn: li-mādhā Atba'u Dīnī dūna Ghayrih*, with a certain 'Abdallāh al-Qayshāwī of Palestine. See, W. Bjorkman, *Die Welt des Islams* 20, 1938, p. 139.

<sup>29</sup> As quoted in, *al-Machreq*, vol. 33 (1935), p. 470.

<sup>30</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>31</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 470-471.



in his hometown. He had many debates with them, and they used to respect each other.<sup>32</sup>

As for the point of learning the Bible, Riḍā stated it was not true that it was the duty of every enlightened person to know the Bible. It was only the duty of the scholars who specialised in religious sciences. He also rejected Nielsen's statement that Western civilisation is based on the Holy Book. This allegation, according to him, was absurdly formulated by the missionaries in order to win over those who were dazzled by the European civilisation. The association between Western civilisation and the Bible was not plausible. In his mind, Western laws had no connection whatsoever with the legislation of the Torah. Nor did the morals of Western people have any relation whatsoever with the body of ethics included in the Gospel. The civilisation of the West, he believed, was lustful and materialistic, and mainly based on arrogance, conceit and the adoration of money, covetousness, and extravagance in embellishment and lusts. On the contrary, the principles of the Gospel were founded on modesty, altruism, asceticism, truthfulness, the renunciation of embellishment, and the abandonment of lusts. The dissemination of sciences and arts in the West was not due to the spread of missionary groups there. Riḍā stressed that the impact of religion on nations was at its strongest and most complete in the early stages of guidance. Once a nation reaches its full blossoming, religion gradually becomes weaker. For many centuries, even after the spread of Christianity, the West remained without the application of any principle of the sciences and arts. All these concepts were originally transferred from the Arabs and Muslims to Europe. 'It should be borne in mind that,' he wrote, 'the propagators of these concepts in Europe were tyrannised and ill-treated by "the Holy Group" and its defenders in the courts of Inquisition. Had the West acquired the religion of the Arabs from the East, just as it had acquired their knowledge and wisdom, it would have been perfect in both religious and worldly matters, and it would not have been entirely materialistic as it is today.'<sup>33</sup>

Riḍā was persuaded that the Bible was not a 'virtue' which everybody should appreciate. Appreciation should be only given to things of real benefit. Missionary activities had proved to be tragic and catastrophic wherever they worked. He challenged Nielsen to bring him

---

<sup>32</sup> Ryad, 'Nielsen,' pp. 96-99.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid.



any justification necessitating the gratitude of Muslims to Christian missions. The high esteem that Riḍā gave to the Qur'ān stimulated him to maintain that 'if any Muslim, who is aware of the true nature of Islam, studies the Bible, he will be more convinced that the Qur'ān is given priority over all books, superior to them, and has the soundest judgement among them all.'<sup>34</sup> Furthermore, Riḍā predicted a total fiasco for missionary work among Muslims. The real Muslim believing in his religion on the basis of true knowledge and firm belief should not fear any 'call' for any other religion. Riḍā quoted al-Afghānī who said that the Muslim could never become a Christian because Islam is Christianity with additions. Having decided on something perfect, Riḍā added, one would never accept a subordinate alternative.<sup>35</sup>

He attempted, for instance, to hit straight at the doctrine of Trinity: one of the most vulnerable spots, which Muslims always took into account in the opposition with Christian dogma. His very premise started from the argument that Muslim theologians are of the agreement that there is no logical impossibility in Islam (*muḥāl 'aqlan*). This means: a Muslim is never required to believe in anything that is logically impossible. If he once encounters anything which seems to be in rational or practical conflict with a definitive proof, it should be interpreted as an attempt of reconciliation between the rationale and the text on the basis of the Qur'ānic passage: 'On no soul doth Allah place a burden greater that it can bear. It gets every good that it earns, and suffers every ill that it earns' (al-Baqara, 2: 286). Riḍā argued that religions other than Islam required people to believe in what is rationally impossible, i.e., the reconciliation between the two antitheses or opposites, such as the real Unity and the real Trinity. In other terms, that God is truly one, and truly more than one at the same time.<sup>36</sup> Putting in mind that he was in debate with a Christian missionary, Riḍā argued that unlike the life of the Prophet Muḥammad, there was little historical information about previous Prophets, including the record of the life of Jesus in the four Gospels.<sup>37</sup>

Riḍā's due respect for Nielsen was explicitly noted in the *fatwās*. One rarely met in missionary circles, he commented, someone who

---

<sup>34</sup> Ibid.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid.

would write in such a confident way like this Danish missionary. Riḍā had no respect for Christians with extravagant evangelistic ideas. Those who preached their religion with firm conviction and submission, such as Nielsen, were to be respected by any sensible person.<sup>38</sup>

Only one year later (1925), Riḍā published an answer to another question sent by Nielsen, who bluntly challenged Riḍā by asking why he repudiated the ‘call of Christianity,’ despite being quite aware of Christian sources. In his reply, Riḍā gave a brief outline of the reasons why he firmly upheld Islam as the true religion. He maintained that it had been proved to him that the Prophet Muḥammad was *ummī* (illiterate). He was never a disciple of any scholar of theology, history, law, philosophy, or literature. Neither was he an orator, nor a poet. Thereupon Riḍā proceeded to speak about the qualities of the Prophet Muḥammad:

Unlike the people of his age at Mecca, the prophet Muḥammad was not keen on leadership, fame, pride or eloquence. He was very renowned for his good disposition, truthfulness, honesty, decency, austerity, and all other kinds of good morals to the degree that they used to call him *al-ʿAmīn* [the honest]. At his maturity of age he maintained to be a prophet sent by Allah for all people. His message was to preach the same message of other prophets before him.<sup>39</sup>

In view of these reasons, Riḍā underlined that he was firmly convinced of the message of Islam. The Qurʾān foretold many things, which had been unknown among the people of Mecca during that time. The most important among these things, he argued, was the corruption and alterations made by the Christians and the Jews in their Books. It had been revealed in the Qurʾān that the Jews and the Christians had twisted the truth by corrupting their Scriptures, a fact which was verified by modern Western scholars.

The controversy around the book of the Egyptian Ṭāḥa Ḥusayn on *Pre-Islamic Poetry* (1926)<sup>40</sup> and his understanding of the place of the prophet Abraham in Islamic history was a turning point in the Riḍā-Nielsen discussion. Nielsen’s inquiries centred upon the Muslim-Christian critique of each other’s scriptures as understood in the term *Ṭaʿn* (defamation). Nielsen aggressively blamed Riḍā for his rooted

<sup>38</sup> Ibid.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., pp. 99-100.

<sup>40</sup> Ṭāḥa Ḥusayn, *Fī al-Shiʿr al-Jāhili*, Cairo: Matbaʿat Dār al-Kutub al-Miṣriyya, 1st ed., 1926.

hostile attitudes to missionaries when he stated that it was always their duty to defame Islam. He raised the important question whether it was possible to declare the Muslim, who would still be committed to Islam in both religious and moral aspects, as unbeliever, if he (such as in the case of Ḥusayn) reached a conclusion that might contradict the Qur'ān and the Islamic creed through his scientific methods and research.

Nielsen raised his questions to Riḍā because he did not want to put any other argument against Islam than what Muslims themselves would agree upon. At the same time, he believed that enlightened Muslims were expected very soon to change their attitudes towards the Qur'ān by distinguishing between religious and moral matters, on the one hand, and scientific and historical ones on the other. Imbued by his Lutheran background, Nielsen insinuated that this would lead to the same conclusions reached by the Christians of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries. The belief of those scholars of the infallibility in the Bible was different from those of the eighteenth century, despite the fact that both Christian generations shared the same belief in Jesus as the only Saviour mediator between God and mankind. In addition, Nielsen predicted some changes in the Muslim world. He saw, for instance, the coming of modernist movements and magazines in Turkey and elsewhere in the Muslim world as a signal for a new and similar trend within Islam in the near future.<sup>41</sup>

Riḍā clearly pointed out that the Christian Scriptures were not binding for Muslims. He lexically defined the word *Ṭa'n* as originally used to mean, 'to thrust or stab a spear or a lance,' which was also designated to mean 'to rebuke, insult, deny, and orally disregard.' The parallel between both definitions was that the latter spiritually hurt the person, just like the former did in a material sense. What Ṭāha Ḥusayn (a Muslim himself) wrote in his book 'painfully hurt' Muslims, so it was valid to say that he rebuked Islam. But Riḍā made it clear that it would be no *Ṭa'n* if any Muslim, Christian, or Jew attempted to deal with the Book(s) of the others. The same holds true, according to him, for the things in which they did not believe and what they might see as contradictory to their own religion, so long as they did not go beyond 'moral obligations' in their critique. For example, he

---

<sup>41</sup> Ryad, 'Nielsen,' p. 101.

deemed neither what Nielsen wrote about Islam in formulating his questions, nor his reply to them as *Ta'ān*.<sup>42</sup>

Referring to Nielsen's comparison between the changing attitudes of enlightened Christians and Muslims, Riḍā did not accept the concept that enlightened Muslims, like the Christians in the passage of time, might change their belief in the Qur'ān. He strongly disagreed that they would ever make distinction between the religious and moral matters as infallible on the one hand, and the historical ones as vulnerable to criticism, on the other. Such a comparison sprang to Nielsen's mind, Riḍā believed, because of his interest of drawing an analogy between Islam and Christianity, and the Qur'ān and the Bible.

Regarding the denial of the historical existence of Adam, Ibrāhīm and Ismā'īl, Riḍā consistently maintained that the existence or the non-existence of anybody, who was said to have lived in long past eras, was not to be proved by scientific methods, in so far as this was not logically impossible. Nobody could deny the existence of someone called 'Ibrāhīm, as far as it was not logically impossible. At any rate, the very premise of the possibility of his existence, Riḍā contended, was supported by the Revelation according to both the Children of Israel and the Arabs. In support of his argument, Riḍā discussed at considerable length the denial of the existence of some generally recognised men in history. He, furthermore, lamented that suspicions had been expressed against the existence of famous persons, for instance by those who denied the existence of Jesus on the ground of the historical account of the Jewish historiographer Josephus, who was contemporary to Jesus. He did not allude to him in his writings on Jewish history, though he paid much attention to less important events. Riḍā refuted this suspicion by pointing out that Josephus must have concealed this fact in his writings fearing that he would have been considered as a preacher of the Christian message. He deliberately did not want to give his readers any suggestion that he was a believer in the message of Jesus. The other two examples were Homer, the Greek poet, and Imrul Qays, the Arab poet. Homer was asserted to have been an imaginary mythical character, to whom the Greeks attributed many eloquent poems. As for the second example, it was said that the poetry of Qays was composed during the Umayyad Empire, but that somebody had attributed it to him. Apparently Riḍā

---

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 102

intentionally referred to the example of the pre-Islamic poetry of Qays, as it was the core of Ḥusayn's book.<sup>43</sup>

In Riḍā's vocabulary, Muslim scholars were unanimous, the same as the 'People of the Book,' on the point that there must be a distinction in religion between the principal theological matters, the rituals and legislations on the one hand, and what was mentioned in the Scripture about the secrets of the Creation on the other. The former were intended to reform and cultivate human beings, and prepare them for the best of their life. In contrast, the latter were mentioned as a manifestation of the divine signs of the Creation, which indicate the divine oneness, mercy and power. The latter category, Riḍā argued, is not used by scientists and historians in their methods of scientific research. Allah, on the contrary, let human beings use their own capabilities to reach specific scientific conclusions through research without depending on the divine revelation. And yet if there were any accurate scholarly conclusion, which might not be agreeable with the literal meaning of the Qur'ān, the subjects in question should be interpreted in the light of the concept of *Ta'wīl*.

In his concluding remarks, Riḍā stressed that one of the characteristics of the Qur'ān was that there is no *qaṭ'ī* (definite) passage which can be violated by definite logical and scientific proofs. The People of the Book, on the contrary, never hold such a claim with regard to their Scripture. Indignantly criticising Muslim doubters, Riḍā expounded that ignorance of the Qur'ān in both spiritual and social matters had dominated some Muslim minds, though the Qur'ān in fact is agreeable to logic and science: 'unlike many Westerners who were ready to raise funds for the spread of their religion, despite the contradictions their Scriptures contain,' Riḍā said.<sup>44</sup>

#### 7.6. *An Egyptian Debater in Gairdner's Magazine*

Due to his polemical writings against missionary attacks, a certain 'Abd al-'Azīz Nuṣṣī 'Abd al-Majīd was known to the readers of *al-Manār* in the late 1920s. Very little is known about him, but he always signed his contributions to Riḍā's journal as 'a warden of the storeroom of the Royal Agricultural Cooperative Society in the city

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., pp. 105-106.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 106.

of Ashmūn' (Northern Egypt). In *al-Manār* we read that he wrote a treatise entitled: *al-Qawl al-Ṣaḥīḥ fī Tarjamat Muḥammad wā al-Masīḥ* (The True Statement concerning the Biographies of Muḥammad and Jesus), which was also available for two Egyptian piasters in al-Manār Bookshop in Cairo. The treatise was a brief summary of the histories of both prophets. Riḍā showed his appreciation to Nuṣḥī's small work, describing it as: 'nicely written and well-styled in its discussion on the authors of the Gospels.'<sup>45</sup>

During my further research, it appeared that Nuṣḥī had a correspondence with the above-mentioned missionary periodical *al-Sharq wā al-Gharb* of Temple Gairdner. In June 1923, for instance, he asked the editorial board of the magazine to explain the genealogy of Moses and that of Jesus from the side of their mothers.<sup>46</sup> Nuṣḥī's tone reflected the challenge of a Muslim reader who tried to cast doubts on Biblical narratives.<sup>47</sup> Later in March 1924, he raised two more questions, firstly in relation to the concept of polygamy in the Bible; and secondly whether there was any obvious statement in the Bible prohibiting slavery.<sup>48</sup> It was apparent that Nuṣḥī's aim was to oblige the missionary magazine to give an implicit refutation of its own allegations on Islam regarding these points, which they also used in their critique of Islam.

Nuṣḥī also turned to Riḍā with a query (1928) on the concept of Original Sin in Christianity. He mentioned that he had had regular gatherings with Christian missionaries in his hometown. Once he had discussed the matters of the Original Sin and the Crucifixion with a missionary, who adamantly challenged him as a Muslim that those who did not believe in Jesus as the saviour would continue to carry this sin. 'Without shedding blood,' the missionary went on, 'one's sins would never be forgiven. Muslims themselves sacrifice [animals] on behalf of themselves, including the Prophet who himself

<sup>45</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 29/5, p. 400.

<sup>46</sup> See, *al-Sharq wā al-Gharb*, vol. 19/7 (July 1923), pp. 212-214.

<sup>47</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 212-214 In their answer, the editors of the magazine referred Nuṣḥī to the Biblical passages on the genealogy of Moses in Exodus (6:16-20), and to that of Jesus in Mathew (1:1) and Luke (3:23). The magazine added that, as he was concerned with availing the Jews with his writings, Mathew intended to prove that Jesus had the full right to be called 'the offspring of David.' And as he wrote his Gospel for the 'nations,' Luke's intention was to prove the progeny of Jesus from David from the side of his mother.

<sup>48</sup> *Al-Sharq wā al-Gharb*, vol. 20/3 (March 1924), p. 86.

offered sacrifice.' Nuṣḥī asked Riḍā how true the missionary claim was about Adam's Sin as attached to his offspring.<sup>49</sup>

In his answer, Riḍā articulated many elements of his anti-missionary polemics mentioned above. He repeated that the 'missionary enterprise is a part of the Western penetration in Eastern lands.'<sup>50</sup> He quoted again Lord Salisbury's statement that 'missionary schools are the first step towards colonialism [...] that they cast strife and animosity among the inhabitants of the one country.'<sup>51</sup> Riḍā warned people like Nuṣḥī neither to read missionary literature, nor to waste their time in debating with them. He stated that those missionaries—except a few—were 'soldiers hired to carry out mischief on earth.'<sup>52</sup> He harshly attacked the Christian concepts of Salvation and Trinity as 'ancient pagan creeds,' referring to the work of Tannīr. Again, he praised the 'independent' Western Christian intellectuals, who rejected these doctrines.<sup>53</sup> In conclusion, Riḍā totally rejected that offering animals as sacrifice was prescribed in Islam as a 'pagan practice,' like in other religions. It was only stipulated in order that a Muslim would show his gratitude to God in his sharing with other poor fellow-Muslims in the society.<sup>54</sup>

### 7.7. A Muslim Facing Missionaries in Tunisia

On a similar level, a certain 'Umar Khūja from Tunisia became confused about some theological issues due to his debates with Protestant missionaries in his region.<sup>55</sup> One of the issues they dealt with was the creation of the universe and the explanation of the cosmic structure in light of the Qur'ān, such as in the verse: 'Allah is He Who created seven Firmaments, and of the Earth similar ones' (Al-Talāq, 65:12). It was difficult for Khūja to understand that the heavens were spanned out as seven layers in the context of modern scientific discoveries. The second problem in the Tunisian petitioner's mind was the status and place of Jesus after death. If it were really true that he was still

<sup>49</sup> 'Nazariyyat al-Naṣārā fī Khatī'at 'Ādam (The View of Christians concerning the Sin of Adam),' *al-Manār*, vol. 29/2, pp. 100-104.

<sup>50</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 29/2, *op. cit.*, p. 102

<sup>51</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>52</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>53</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 29/2, *op. cit.*, p. 103

<sup>54</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 104.

<sup>55</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 28/10 (Rajab 1346/January 1928), pp. 747-757.

living on 'earth,' how could he get food or drink? But if he survived in the heaven, where would he descend at the end of time? What about the Muslim who did not believe in his present survival in Heaven?

Riḍā mentioned that there were several Qur'ānic verses speaking about the creation of heavens and earth. The word *arḍ* (earth) was always found in the singular form, except in the verse quoted by the petitioner. Riḍā described it as *mutashābih* (ambiguous). He considered all interpretations of the verse describing the length or breadth of the heavens as unreliable because they were based on the lore of *Isrā'iliyyāt*. Riḍā referred to the Ḥadīths related by Ibn 'Abbās, 'Ā'isha and 'Abū Hurairah in this regard as indefinite and not *marfū'*, which means a Ḥadīth effectively elevated to the Prophet. As for the second point, Riḍā contended that there was no *qaṭ'ī* (definitive) tradition which indicated that Jesus had been lifted to Heaven and was still alive with his soul and body.<sup>56</sup> As for the verse: 'O Jesus! I will take thee and raise thee to Myself (Al-Imrān: 3:55), Riḍā was more inclined to accept the interpretation of Ibn 'Abbās that God made him really die. He rejected the commentary of Wahb Ibn Munabbih (b. 34 AH/654-5 AD) that 'God had made him die three hours at the beginning of the day after which he was lifted to Heaven.' The reason for his rejection was that such interpretations contradicted the apparent meaning (*dhāhir*) of the verse, along with the role of Ibn Munabbih in disseminating Israelite tales, which Riḍā totally denounced.<sup>57</sup>

The same held true for the return of Jesus before the Day of Resurrection, which we have already discussed in the first of the *fatwās* selected in the chapter. This notion was, in Riḍā's evaluation, the basis on which the Christian belief lies, but it had no foundation in Islam. Riḍā also doubted the Traditions indicating that Jesus' descent before the end of the world will be on to the white arcade of the Eastern gate at Damascus, or on to a hill in the Holy Land with a spear in his hand to kill the *Dajjāl* (Antichrist). He highlighted that most of the Traditions on the second return of Jesus were narrated in the context of the *'aḥād* traditions on *'Alamāt al-Sā'ah* (Signs of the Hour), on which one should not depend in matters of belief.<sup>58</sup> The belief of Jesus' being alive in Heaven, Riḍā added, was no part of the fundamentals

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., pp. 753-54.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid, p. 754.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid, p. 756.



of the Islamic creed. Therefore, if a Muslim rejected it, he would be no apostate. But he was hesitant to leave his statement open, and stipulated that if a Muslim reached the conclusion after his investigation that the Prophetic Traditions in this respect were to be regarded as sound, he must believe in the return of Jesus on the basis of them. His doubt of the Prophet's sayings in that case, Riḍā asserted, might lead to apostasy. In other words, there was no harm in his refusing or accepting his return on the basis of what he believed to be *ẓanni* (subjective) traditions. The Muslim should rather maintain the Prophet's sayings as trustworthy, and leave all other details to God. At the end, Riḍā summarised:

A Muslim should not cling to such traditions, since they were no article of the Islamic faith. It is also no harm for one's doctrine to suspect their authenticity [...]. What could really harm him is his scepticism or rejection of these traditions after having recognised their authenticity [...]. In this case he is discrediting the Prophet [... by thinking of] his erroneousness in delivering God's revelation.<sup>59</sup>

### 7.8. *Fatherless Birth of Jesus: non-Qur'ānic?*

In the early 1930s, a student in Indonesia wrote a long article in which he denied the virgin birth of Jesus. He argued that the matter was totally in contradiction with the Qur'ānic verses which stressed that there would never be *tabdīl* (change) or *taḥwīl* (turning off) in God's order or system of the universal laws (al-Aḥzāb, 62 & Fāṭir 43). The editors of the magazine challenged those who believed in the fatherless miraculous birth of Jesus to bring Qur'ānic verses or authentic Prophetic Traditions which would prove the contrary. The above-mentioned Basyūnī 'Imrān of Java (see, chapter 1) brought the issue to *al-Manār* to say its word, since he was persuaded that its commentary on the relevant verses could put an end to this controversy. Riḍā briefly elaborated on the issue by saying that Muslim scholars on the basis of many Qur'ānic verses have unanimously agreed on the fatherless birth of Jesus. If anyone denied its truth, he harshly concluded, he should be deemed to be an unbeliever.<sup>60</sup>

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 757.

<sup>60</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 32/9 (Jumāda al-'Ākhira 1351/October 1932), pp. 671-672.

### 7.9. *Missionary Doubts on Qur'ānic Narratives*

A certain 'Alī al-Jundī, a teacher at al-Nāṣiriyya School in Cairo, had religious debates with Christian missionaries, who had raised doubts on some Qur'ānic narratives. He eagerly requested Riḍā for his clarifications on such 'allegations' in order that he could sustain his arguments with solid arguments.<sup>61</sup> The first point focused on the *Ḥawāriyyūn* (disciples) of Jesus, who were constantly praised in various places in the Qur'ān, but were also mentioned in the Christian Scriptures as believing in the Trinity and Crucifixion. Al-Jundī was also confused that some Christians portrayed some figures in the Qur'ānic tales as being Christians. The Qur'ān, for instance, described *Ahl Al-Kahf* (the People of the Cave) as monotheists, but they had existed 250 years after Jesus. This might suggest that they had believed in a 'corrupted' Christianity. Al-Jundī once read that the Jesuit scholar L. Cheikho had argued that the People of the Cave were believers in 'the Cross.' The commentators of the Qur'ān explained the story of *Ahl al-Qarya* (the People of the Village)<sup>62</sup> as a tale about the disciples of Jesus, including Paul. Fourthly, the questioner had many 'moderate' Christian friends who believed in Jesus as a prophet and saw Islam as a 'true' religion, but still believed in the Crucifixion. They argued that the story had been mentioned by the Jews and witnessed by contemporary people and scribes. What were the differences between the Jewish and Christian Scriptures? Were the Jews closer to Muslims in monotheism than the Christians? If so, what was the reason for their 'inherited' hostility to Muslims as related in the Qur'ān? Were there any Christian religious men other than Barnabas who had propagated pure monotheism and rejected the Crucifixion? Did such people also exist after the message of the prophet Muḥammad? Could Muslims rest assured that Islam would win over Christianity, even though Christian missionaries were more vigorous in propagating their religion?

In the beginning, Riḍā explained that there was no mention of the names or genealogy of Jesus' disciples in the Qur'ān. But the Christian Scriptures narrated that they were twelve. He argued that it was only John who described them as believing in the Trinity. He saw that

<sup>61</sup> Vol. 33/7 (Sha'bān 1352/November 1933), pp. 507-512.

<sup>62</sup> Yasin, 36: 13-32.

there were discrepancies among the four Gospels concerning the story of the Crucifixion. Riḍā demanded that his questioner should not base his belief entirely in the narratives mentioned in the works of *Tafsīr* regarding the People of the Cave. He also accused Cheikho that as a Jesuit he had either based his story on such 'invented' Israelite tales, or had made it up himself. He confirmed that Jesus had been sent to preach monotheism. All Muslim commentators maintained that the People of the Cave were not Christians, except Ibn Kathīr (d. 1373) who attributed to them the religion of Jesus. However, Riḍā believed that they had existed a long time before Christianity. He rejected that they had been Christians, who believed in the Cross. Riḍā's only proof was that such a claim would have contradicted the Qur'ān, which he deemed impossible.<sup>63</sup>

The same held true for the Prophetic Traditions of the story of the People of the Village. They were related by the converted Jews Ka'b al-Aḥbār and Wahb Ibn Munabbih, who disseminated most of these 'mythical' tales on the authority of Ibn Abbās. Riḍā depended on Ibn Kathīr's view, who interpreted that the People of the Village as messengers sent by God and not by Jesus.<sup>64</sup>

Regarding the Christians who firmly believed in the Crucifixion and accepted Islam as true, Riḍā explicated that the Qur'ānic verse negating Jesus as having been slain (al-Nisā', 3:157) did not indicate the rejection of the story completely, but rebuffed his death in the way explained by Christian Scriptures. Riḍā was less clear in judging those Christians than his above-mentioned *fatwās* on those who searched for the truth. One would also expect Riḍā to repeat his interpretations of the Crucifixion as 'illusive,' which he had uttered earlier in his aforementioned treatise in 1913 (see, chapter 6). After twenty years, he now put emphasis in this *fatwā* on his conviction that the story of the Crucifixion was not reliable, and there was no consensus among the early Christians about it.<sup>65</sup>

Riḍā admitted that the concept of the Messiah according to the Torah was a complex issue. He only repeated his point mentioned in the first *fatwā* that the Jews believed in the Messiah as a coming king who would revive the kingdom of Solomon, but not as a prophet.

---

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., pp. 508-09.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., pp. 510-11.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 511.

For him, the Christians considered his coming kingdom as a spiritual one, while the Jews would expect it as a political and financial one. Riḍā explained the verse regarding the animosity of the Jews and the friendship of the Christians as revealed in the case of the Jews of Ḥijāz and the Christians of Abyssinia in particular. It should not be understood as part of the realm of the Islamic belief. He also rejected the view that the animosity between Jews and Muslims was intrinsic. He insisted that it was the Jews who had first shown animosity against Muslims, especially in Palestine. In the same sense, Christians had also founded their hostility with Islam in the form of the Crusades in the past and the continuation of European colonialism and Christian missions in the present. Without colonialism and missionary activities, he went on, Christians would have been much closer to Muslims than Jews. However, he explained that the conflict between Muslims and Western Christians would result in many advantages for Muslims, viz. that all Western nations would one day convert to Islam.<sup>66</sup>

#### 7.10. *Miḥrāb and Altar*

In 1932, Riḍā received a question concerning the *miḥrāb* (niche) in the mosque and its similarity with the altar in the church.<sup>67</sup> The questioner cited the Ḥadīth where the Prophet was reported to have said: ‘My nation remains in a good status as far as they do not turn their mosques into altars like the Christians.’

Riḍā maintained that the *miḥrāb* was embedded in the *qibla* (direction of prayer) wall for the practical reason that the imam would not occupy a whole row in the mosque. The niche of the Christians and Jews known as altar was a shrine and place for worship. The altar was known in ancient religions as the place where men used to give their offerings to God. He cited the Old Testament ‘And Noah built an altar unto the Lord; and took of every clean beast, and of every clean fowl, and offered burnt offerings on the altar’ (Genesis, 8:20). Stories about the altar of burnt offering and that of incense are also mentioned in details in the chapter of Exodus. Riḍā issued the *fatwā* in the period when he had intense conflict with *Nūr al-Islām*, the mouthpiece of Al-Azhar at that time (see, chapter 3). He suspected the authenticity

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., pp. 512-13.

<sup>67</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 32/4 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1350/April 1932), p. 268.

of the Ḥadīth quoted by the questioner, accusing Al-Azhar scholars of propagating such doubtful narratives in their magazine.<sup>68</sup>

### 7.11. *Don't Recite the Qur'ānic Verses on Christians in Public!*

In chapter three, we have seen that Riḍā's views on allowing Muslim children to attend Christian schools had led to a rigorous dispute with Al-Azhar scholars in the early 1930s. In 1934, he had another dispute with a regional scholar under the name of Sheikh Maḥmūd Maḥmūd, the deputy of *Jam'iyyat Makārim al-'Akhḻāq* (Society of Best Moralities) and a high school teacher in Cairo. The society was situated in Shubrā, at the outskirts of Cairo. Upon his arrival in Egypt, Riḍā became an active member of the society, where he used to deliver many lectures. One of the main objectives of this society was to combat missionary organisations in the neighbourhood. It had its own primary school and printing house. Besides this it published two magazines, one was named after the society, and the other bore the name *al-Muṣliḥ* (The Reformer).<sup>69</sup>

According to the Cairine newspaper *al-Waṭaniyya*, Sheikh Maḥmūd maintained that broadcasting Qur'ānic recitations on the radio should be stopped. He argued that the Qur'ān contains certain verses opposing the People of the Book. The reasons for their revelation were not existent anymore. 'Since the People of the Book have become under our protection (*Dhawī Dhimmatina*),' Maḥmūd argued, 'their feelings should not be hurt any longer by letting them listen to such verses.'<sup>70</sup> He further explained that he himself hated Surat Yūsuf being recited inside Muslim houses because he worried that women would suspect Yūsuf's chastity, when they regularly listen

<sup>68</sup> In 1935, a certain 'Umar al-Jundī, teacher at Alexandria Religious Institute, sent *al-Manār* an article on the history of the *miḥrāb* in Islam. He traced the Prophetic Traditions on it and the difference with altars. See, 'Umar al-Jundī, 'Maḥārīb al-Masjid wā Madhābih al-Kanā'is,' *al-Manār*, vol. 34/9 (Dhū al-Ḥijja 1353/April 1935), pp. 708-710.

<sup>69</sup> The society was founded by Sheikh Zakī al-Dīn Sanad during the late nineteenth century in Cairo. See, *al-Manār*, vol. 2/27 (Jumāda al-'Ūlā 1317/16 September 1899), p. 430; vol. 2/45, (Ramaḍān 1317/January 1900), p. 537. The activities of the society waned after the death of Sanad, but it revived again in 1920s-1930s. See Riḍā's article on the society, vol. 32/8 (Jumada al-'Ūlā 1351/September 1932), p. 634.

<sup>70</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 34/1, p. 33.

to the story. Also people, according to Maḥmūd, should not recite the Qurʾān in public in case they did not grasp its inner meanings.

Ayyūb Ṣabrī, the editor of *al-Waṭaniyya*, referred the question to Riḍā, requesting him to deal with the issue as soon as possible.<sup>71</sup> Riḍā did not hesitate to express his total rejection of Maḥmūd's *fatwā*. In his primary answer, Riḍā preferred in the beginning not to mention the name of the mufti, hoping that he would recant his opinion or would send a clarification to *al-Manār*. He strongly declared that the Qurʾān as 'the true word of God' must be propagated and any concealment of its verses was sin; any acceptance of this sin as lawful would lead to infidelity.<sup>72</sup>

Two years earlier, we read in *al-Manār* that Riḍā highly commended Maḥmūd because of 'his religious knowledge and enthusiasm.'<sup>73</sup> But his religious views in this regard turned this enthusiasm into total frustration. Riḍā attempted to convince his readers that there was no difference between 'knowledgeable' or 'ignorant' reciters of the Qurʾān in public occasions. All Qurʾānic verses speaking about the People of the Book negatively or positively were suitable to each age and place. Riḍā asserted forcefully that there were many among the People of the Book in the modern age, who were more hostile to Islam than those contemporary with the time of revelation. He saw that Maḥmūd's attempt of 'abrogating' these verses was only to satisfy the Christians and Jews, giving them priority above the Qurʾān.

Five months later, Riḍā mentioned the name of the person, who issued the *fatwa*. Having read *al-Manār*, Sheikh Maḥmūd started to defend his point of view. The discussion quickly turned into a hot polemical attack on Riḍā's character as a scholar. In his commentary on the Qurʾānic verse: 'Revile not ye those whom they call upon beside Allah, lest they out of spite revile Allah in their ignorance' (Al-An'ām, 6:108), Maḥmūd concluded that Muslims were prohibited from insulting the 'gods of the Christians.'<sup>74</sup> He intensified his assault upon Riḍā by saying that the Qurʾān was dearer and more beloved to him than the founder of *al-Manār*. He depicted Riḍā as having grown old and his memory became weak. He had also started to forget what he himself said in his *Tafsīr* regarding the same verse.<sup>75</sup> He reminded

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., pp. 33-38.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid.

<sup>73</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 32/8 (Jumādā al-ʿUlā 1351/September 1932), p. 634.

<sup>74</sup> As quoted in, *al-Manār*, vol. 34/5, p. 383.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid.

Riḍā of what he had already stated years ago in his commentary on the verse that it was forbidden to call the *dhimmīs* 'unbelievers' if it would lead to hurting them.<sup>76</sup> He also concluded that any abuse of the gods or saints of the Christians on radio should be forbidden, especially when Muslims were divided, humiliated and weakened while the unbelievers were more strong and unified. Muslims should especially avoid this when it also leads to the disintegration and ruin of the umma.<sup>77</sup>

Riḍā contested the *fatwā* by cynically maintaining that he held higher esteem for the Qur'ān than the mufti of *Makārim al-Akhlāq*. He was deeply disappointed by Maḥmūd's remarks on his 'weak memory' and 'old age.' He counterattacked by saying that due to his 'young age' Maḥmūd was not able to understand *al-Manār*'s views. He moreover argued that the Qur'ānic verses on Christians contained no offending passages for their gods, cross or saints. The Qur'ān on the contrary recommended cooperation and concord with them. In the end, Riḍā promised to put an end to the conflict if Maḥmūd would discontinue publishing his 'absurdity' on the Qur'ān.<sup>78</sup>

#### 7.12. *A Muslim Copyist of Missionary Books and Crafting the Cross for Christians*

In 1930, Riḍā issued an interesting *fatwā* concerning a Muslim calligrapher, who was hired by Christian missionaries in Algeria to copy their books.<sup>79</sup> Riḍā considered that any assistance to missionaries by reproducing such 'repulsive' books would lead to participating in spreading 'infidelity.' Those 'geographical Muslims' should be called back to repent from earning money through ways of infidelity and enmity of God and the Prophet. To continue working with missionary institutions leads to apostasy. His Muslim fellows should not give their daughters to him in marriage, nor should they bury him according to Muslim rites. Riḍā urged that if there were a Shar'ī court in

<sup>76</sup> *Tafsīr al-Manār*, vol. 7, p. 550. Riḍā published this view for the first time in the first issue of *al-Manār* in February 1898. See, vol. 1/1 (Shawwāl 1315/February 1898), p. 17.

<sup>77</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 34/5, p. 383.

<sup>78</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>79</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 31/4, p. 276.

the province, a case of apostasy must be brought against him in order to separate him from his Muslim wife.

Riḍā's last *fatwā* (July 1935), a few months before his death, came as an answer to a similar petition by a certain Muḥammad Maṣṣūr Najātī from Damascus, whose craft was probably printing, on the religious ruling concerning printing books of other religions and engraving the cross on copper, zinc and on covers of those books.<sup>80</sup> In the same line of his previous *fatwā*, Riḍā deemed printing or giving any assistance to print or propagate 'false' books as totally forbidden. This work might lead to infidelity in the case of the printer's admitting its contents were accurate. In Riḍā's view, the cross was a symbol of a non-Muslim religion; and Muslims should not help its followers to spread it. However, nobody should protest against the freedom of the Christians to display it in the Territory of Islam. To engrave it on metals for commercial reasons was not considered sinful as far as there existed no verification for belief in the heart of the Muslim doing so.

### 7.13. Conclusion

The chapter has proved that Riḍā's *fatwās* are a useful reference in tracing his theological and polemical views on Christianity. The questions raised in these *fatwās* were diverse. This medley of *fatwās* echoed synopses of some of the major elements of Riḍā's analysis of Christological doctrines, such as the Trinity and the Original Sin, from an Islamic point of view. The questions show a significant dimension of the Muslim encounter with missionary attacks on Islam in various regions at the micro-level. These questions not only related to the theological challenges to Islam put forward in missionary writings, but were also connected with social problems, such as the question of slavery in Kuwait and to the petitions of Muslim copyists and printers of missionary works in Algeria.

Riḍā's *fatwās* for Alfred Nielsen were unique. It has been noted that both sides were ready to come close to each other, each trying their best to show the merits of their own belief. As religious men, both Riḍā and Nielsen were keen on giving their views on several subjects. The discussions not only reflect an Islamic view on missions,

---

<sup>80</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 35/2 (Rabi' al-Akhar 1354/July 1935), pp. 134-35.



but clearly represent Nielsen's understanding, as a missionary, of Islam as well. Nielsen's questions took the form of a missionary challenge to Islam. He attempted to probe the Muslim perception of missions through Riḍā's views. Nielsen's questions also reflected a strand of self-critical liberal Christian thought which many conservative Christian thinkers, at that time and still today, would have found objectionable: the idea that doubt—grappling with one's faith rather than accepting it without thought—is necessary for faith, for a Christian's faith as well as for a Muslim's.



## CONCLUSION

The study has offered an important example of Muslim-Christian contact in the modern age as highlighted in 1) *al-Manār*'s views of Christianity, 2) its founder's relations with his fellow Arab Christians and most significantly 3) his responses to Christian missionary writings on Islam. In his responses, Riḍā clearly proclaimed his religious and political doctrines with all the fervour of a Muslim scholar and activist. He was 'an indefatigable writer [...], whose views carried weight with friend and foe alike.'<sup>1</sup> However, his views were sometimes ambivalent. His early writings on Christianity seem to be rational and calm. But this position underwent a marked change with the passage of time. Riḍā was severely provoked by what he deemed the social and political decadency of Muslims of his time. Driven by this spirit of despair and his pan-Islamic outlook, his pen (especially in his later years) started to produce harsher apologetic literature, which expressed his frustration with all forms of Western penetration in Muslim societies. The study has emphasised in many cases Zaki Badawi's observation that Riḍā's 'façade of liberalism or tolerance within the umma in the interest of unity did not prevent him for lashing out at any opponent if he felt incensed.'<sup>2</sup>

Apart from these distinct reversals in his thought, there was one area in which he remained unchanged, viz. he did not reject Christianity as such, but attempted to interpret the Holy Scriptures in the light of the Qur'an by rejecting all passages which indicate any notion contrary to Islamic principles of belief. In consolidation of his interpretations, and in an attempt to demonstrate the 'irrationality' of the faith of his Christian adversaries, he eagerly utilised works of historical criticism, first developed by Christian theologians, philosophers and writers. Riḍā's motivation for using such Western studies in his polemics was to vindicate the authenticity of Muslim Scriptures vis-à-vis the Bible and to fulfill his aim of Da'wa.

---

<sup>1</sup> See, A.L. Tibawi, 'From Rashīd Riḍā to Lloyd George,' in Khurshid Aḥmad and Zafar Ishaq Ansari, eds., *Islamic Perspectives: Studies in Honour of Sayyid Abū al-A'ḷā al-Mawḍūdī*, Leicester: The Islamic Foundation, 1980, pp. 335-342.

<sup>2</sup> Badawi, *op. cit.*, p. 136

Riḍā's polemical tone against Christianity should be studied against the background of his general understanding of the West. In many places of his journal, he praised the progress of the West, which he ascribed to 1) its independence of thought; 2) the eradication of political oppression; and 3) the foundation of social, political and scientific associations.<sup>3</sup> But his writings exposed also his feelings of parallel vexation, which focused more on those Western Christians, who tried to ridicule Islam and relate the socio-political failure among Muslims to the tenets of Islam.

Throughout our discussions we have seen how complex and diverse Riḍā's network of associates was. Riḍā's ignorance of Western languages did not prevent him from proving the authenticity of Islam. He quoted positive findings or remarks made by European writers, whom he always described as 'fair-minded.' In that way, the translation movement and Riḍā's circle of associates always proved to be rich sources for his journal in accumulating knowledge from and on the West. Studying such sources has helped us to understand the value of these contributions in forming the shape of his journal especially regarding his anti-Christian polemics. The contributors to *al-Manār* were selective in their approach. Nevertheless, an identifying characteristic of their writings was that they did not see a problem in accepting modern thinking when they found it compatible with Islam, and that, consequently, should not pose a problem to the Islamic identity.<sup>4</sup>

Arslān's contributions in Riḍā's journal on the Christian theological developments in Europe expressed an integral part of their common belief in pan-Islamism and their broad efforts of anti-imperialism. Those articles indirectly attempted to argue that European politicians were ready to collaborate with clergymen and invoke religious fanaticism against non-Christians. One should also not underestimate the importance of hitherto unknown figures, such as Kirām. From Berlin, he was a useful informant for Riḍā, although he was on the periphery of the 'first class' group of Muslim luminaries in *al-Manār*'s circle. While writing his book *al-Waḥī*, Riḍā was interested in reading some Western biographies about the Prophet Muḥammad. As an example, he requested Kirām to make an Arabic summary of Tor Andrae's work, as we have mentioned above.

<sup>3</sup> 'Manāfi' al-'Urubiyyīn wā Maḍārruhum fī al-Sharq (The Benefits and Harms of the Europeans in the East),' *al-Manār*, vol. 10/3, pp. 192-199; Shahin, *Eyes*, p. 46.

<sup>4</sup> Haddad, 'Manrists,' p. 60.

It was characteristic of Riḍā to borrow Western positive views in his defence of Islam. But he also tried to use a combination of his religious knowledge and these Western scholarly critiques of the Bible to prove his conviction that their findings about the Bible conformed with the Qur'ānic reports, especially concerning the 'corruption' of Jewish and Christian Scriptures. But he was much upset about the critique Western scholars of established Muslim theories about Biblical figures in the Qur'an, as is shown by his response in 1933 to Wensinck's article on Abraham in the *Encyclopedia of Islam*. Although he was not directly involved in the affair, Riḍā was provoked by Wensinck's article to the degree that he discredited the Dutchman's meticulous undertaking in indexing the Ḥadīth. Elissa-Mondeguer rightly observes that Riḍā's understanding of the West (especially in the 1930s) should be seen as part of his program of reform in which he tried to envisage that Western civilisation was in need of the guidance of Islam, which he presented as the religion of 'brotherhood, mercy, and peace.'<sup>5</sup>

Riḍā's multi-dimensional relations with his contemporary Arab Christians have been studied. Due to his political bent, coupled with his uncompromising religious convictions, his relations with many of them fluctuated. In his discussions with his Arab Christian counterparts, he held specific attitudes that varied according to the intellectual, political or religious background of the counterpart in question. In the course of our discussion it has been observed that the editor of *al-Manār*, in its process of evolution over more than three decades, tried to integrate many political ideas with his religious aspirations. His Christian fellow-citizens, mostly educated in their homeland at missionary schools, provided a whole generation with many journals. With his heart turned to Syria, Riḍā directed his political activism towards those compatriots, and very rarely had the chance to develop any political ambition in Egypt. While, as a reformer, he had a role in Syrian nationalism, his main role was neither in Syria nor in Egypt but within the world of *al-Manār* and the ideas it propagated in the Muslim world.<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>5</sup> Shahin (1989), p. 115 ; Nadia Elissa-Mondeguer, 'Al-Manār de 1925 a 1935: la Dernière Décennie d'un Engagement Intellectuel,' *Revue des mondes musulmans et de la Méditerranée*, n°95-96-97-98—*Débats intellectuels au Moyen-Orient dans l'entre-deux-guerres*, April 2002, pp. 205-226.

<sup>6</sup> Adal, *op. cit.*, p. 202.

These diverse relations with Syrian Christians did not always proceed smoothly. Riḍā's friction with them should be understood within the context of great controversy about science, politics and religion in the Arab world. In as far as his Arab Christian counterparts carried forward his investigations—either on religion (Islam in particular) or politics—in a way that was in conformity with *al-Manār*'s world-views, Riḍā had no inclination whatsoever to draw negative conclusions. But Syrian Christians' criticisms of Islam aroused a wide range of intense replies in his journal. The political and socio-cultural upheaval in the Muslim world also directly affected his exchanges with them to the extent that he became sometimes unpredictable in his responses, especially in his debate with them. A typical confrontation was his dispute with Faraḥ Anṭūn. His critics see him as the 'assassin' of Anṭūn's journal *al-Jāmi'a*, but it has also been noted that he was a key figure in organising the ceremony of Anṭūn's tribute after the latter's death. Riḍā's reaction to the type of secularism the Syrian Christians were propagating was temperate compared with his treatment of the views of Muslim secularists, as we have seen in the case of the Iraqi poet al-Zahāwī. He was vexed by the abolition of the Caliphate and its repercussions on Islamic identity, and that might explain his later impassioned rejection of secularism, which he perceived as insidiously creeping into the Arab world.

*Al-Manār*'s anti-missionary polemics contain indirect responses to the belittling remarks of Europeans about Eastern civilisation and Islam. Just like many previous Muslim thinkers, Riḍā's vehement refutation of the Christian belief and Scriptures affirmed his conviction of the inherent superiority of Islam over other religions. Characteristic of his style was his bemoaning of the sad state of Muslims which made it possible for the opponents of Islam to deprecate it in its own home. Muslims had become powerless, so that Europeans lorded over them everywhere.<sup>7</sup> Riḍā's anti-Christian polemics involved his critique of their attempts to win over Muslim 'souls' as well. He was sometimes emotional and showed bitterness and stern tones towards the missionary work in the Muslim world. However, he was initially positive about the efforts of missionary schools, and admitted their role in achieving some social and technical developments in the Muslim world, especially the American Protestant College in Beirut. But this positive tone was soon muted.

---

<sup>7</sup> Ayoub, 'Views,' p. 54.

When he became embroiled in intensive polemics with his Azhari opponents, and the 'saddened' news he received from his Muslim readers, Riḍā started to recognise the other side of the coin; namely, that these schools were established to achieve the 'colonial covetousness.'

As part of his anti-missionary campaign, Riḍā tried to develop some ideas on the nature of religious propaganda. Cole described Riḍā's approach as pragmatic and secular.<sup>8</sup> In his early years, he was of the view that successful religious propaganda grew out of his struggle against Christian missionary activity among Muslims. He began by rejecting an explanation of success in mission through governmental support. He continued by suggesting that success in mission could be enhanced by practical techniques adopted by the missionaries, and that these techniques could be used to promulgate any religion, true or false.<sup>9</sup> But looking at the development of his thoughts one finds that he was always convinced of the propaganda of Islam as the only true mission. Giving the Qur'ān a higher esteem than the Bible, he was certain that Islam would expand on its own with no need of any missionary effort. A proof of that was, according to him, the higher social status of Muslim converts (such as Headley) than those Muslims who changed their faith. However, Riḍā was aware of the fact that he was lacking official religious institutions to support him in his religious aspirations, like the Church in the Christian case, which was ready to spend a huge amount of money in spreading its religion. Riḍā tried to put his ambitions into practice by words and actions. His words had great impact on Muslim thought, but his religious missionary project of Da'wa was short-lived.

Against this background of Riḍā's network and activities, we have specifically examined *al-Manār's* early mode of polemical thoughts as expressed in his series of articles on the *Shubuhāt* (or allegations) of Christians on Islam, which he later compiled in one small volume. Riḍā's book was of an unsystematic character, due to the fact that it was a compilation of sporadic issues that he raised from time to time in his disputes with certain Christian writings on Islam. Writing these articles in 1903-1904, Riḍā imposed a condition upon himself to defend Islam without attacking Christianity and going no further

---

<sup>8</sup> Cole, *op. cit.*, 291.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*

than addressing Muslim readers' questions.<sup>10</sup> Later, in 1931, and amidst his polemics with al-Azhar scholars (mentioned above), he clarified that after the experience of three decades, it was sometimes unavoidable for him to counterattack missions by using harsh words; and his 'journal, despite its cautiousness in decency and politeness, could not defend Islam only by responding to missionaries with statements they did not hate.'<sup>11</sup>

The core of these articles discussed the textual authenticity of both the Torah and the Gospel from an Islamic point of view. He directed his most detailed discussions in that regard against the claims of the Egyptian missionary writer Ghabriyāl (whose book is still widely used on Christian websites nowadays) on the Qur'anic testimony for Jewish and Christian Scriptures. It has been correctly remarked that Riḍā did not discuss the doctrine of Trinity in details.<sup>12</sup> Neither did he discuss other key concepts in Christianity, such as the birth, Crucifixion and salvation of Jesus. This was not because he had nothing to say about them. In the *Shubuhāt*, Riḍā rejected these doctrines as 'irrational,' but the ideas of *al-Manār* on these issues were more clearly put forward later, especially after the appearance of Tawfiq Ṣidqī on *al-Manār's* stage.

In his *Shubuhāt*, Riḍā was convinced that it was not harmful for a Muslim to believe in a Chinese religion or in Hinduism as part of God's revelation. More than twenty years later, he further developed the idea by making it clear that 'all people of ancient religions, such as Buddhism and Zoroastrianism, belonged also to the category of the People of the Book and were followers of prophets, but paganism and polytheism crept in to the extent that we do not know [the reality] of their scriptures anymore.'<sup>13</sup>

We have also seen that Riḍā, in order to put his pursuit of a 'true' Gospel supporting the Islamic message into practice, first published fragments of the work of Tolstoy on the four Gospels, and in the end published a full Arabic translation of the Gospel of Barnabas. It has been observed that despite his faith in its authenticity, Riḍā in his introduction was somehow cautious in declaring this in an explicit manner. It was only in 1929 that he overtly voiced his opinion that the Gospel of Barnabas was more authentic than the four canonical

<sup>10</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 47.

<sup>11</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 31/6, p. 479.

<sup>12</sup> Wood, *op. cit.*, p. 57.

<sup>13</sup> *Al-Manār*, vol. 25/3, p. 227.



Gospels. Bājūrī's anti-*Manār* piece of work is a remarkable example of the Coptic reaction to this Gospel. As a Muslim convert to Christianity, considering himself a 'soldier of Jesus,' he was not only sarcastic about *al-Manār*'s printing of the Gospel of Barnabas, but also critical of Riḏā's views on Islam. He must have felt compelled to express his disdain for this Gospel with vehemence, proving beyond doubt his devotion to his new faith. Bājūrī did not see Riḏā's publication as part of an Islamic, anti-colonial discourse, but as part of the Muslim polemics against Christian minorities in the Muslim world, especially the Copts.<sup>14</sup> Strangely enough Riḏā did not react to Bājūrī's treatise, nor to any other polemical work against the Gospel of Barnabas. The treatise should be read as an illustration of the reaction of other Christians of his age; and these reactions deserve to be carefully studied in further research.

*Al-Manār* changed its strategy in polemics by giving Ṣidqī a principal position. Why Ṣidqī? As part of Riḏā's network of associates, we have studied Ṣidqī's place in the world of *al-Manār*. The very reason why he came into contact with Riḏā was his intense discussions with his classmate and Christian convert to Islam 'Abduh 'Ibrāhīm. More importantly, Riḏā was also impressed with his knowledge of natural sciences and medicine, as well as his ability to apply this kind of knowledge to Islamic sources. Infuriated by what they saw as 'unsympathetic' critique of the West and Westerners on the basis of Biblical passages, some missionaries approached Lord Kitchener, who attempted to convince the Egyptian authorities to ban Riḏā's journal. Riḏā did not give many details about the affair, but his diaries help us know more about its background. Although the Egyptian authorities did not attempt to ban *al-Manār*, it seemed that this protest had its effect. It is observable that Riḏā stopped publishing Ṣidqī's anti-Christian articles directly. But his tone of grief about this incident reflected the 'underneath' feeling of an 'oppressed' colonised person in face of his 'colonising oppressors.'

Our analysis of Ṣidqī's works included a survey of the sources accessible to him. Besides a limited knowledge of some Western rationalistic books on Christianity and Jesus, Ṣidqī's medical knowledge was more thorough than his knowledge of Islamic sources. However, we indicated that his medical interpretation of the fatherless birth of Jesus that Mary was probably a 'masculine hermaphrodite' came close

---

<sup>14</sup> See, Leirvik, *Images*, p. 139.

to the portrayal of Mary by the thirteenth-century Muslim exegete of the Qur'an al-Qurṭubī. Ṣidqī and Riḍā shared many ideas, and the most noteworthy of these was their common belief in 'illusive' happenings around the event of the Crucifixion. Although their interpretation agreed with the classical Muslim exegesis that Judas (or another person) was killed instead of Jesus, it diverged in its rationalistic argument that the crucified man really looked like Jesus, and that the Roman soldiers arrested him by the way of a mistake. It was interesting to read that Riḍā depended in his analysis of the theory of 'Crowd Psychology' according to the medical populariser Le Bon who believed that crowds generate specific emotions. According to this theory, the anonymity of facts and the creation of clichés in the minds of the people is a natural result. Riḍā drew a parallel and argued that those who witnessed the event of the Crucifixion became emotional, and therefore did not recognise any difference between the real Jesus and the one resembling him.

Our discussion came to an end with a recapitulation of *al-Manār's* ideas on Christianity through Riḍā's lively contact with his readers. The presence of missionary work in the Muslim world was a breeding ground for many Muslim readers to ask questions, which Riḍā included under the section of *fatwās*. Some of these questions focused on christological issues, with which Riḍā had already dealt in many other places in his journal, such as the fatherless birth of Jesus, his natural and physical death, as well as his return before the Last Day. Besides, Riḍā's Muslim readers were curious to know his views on other issues which resulted from their daily contact with missionaries. The most visible among those was the Egyptian Muslim 'Abd al-'Azīz Nuṣṣī, who was boldly challenging missionaries by sending inquiries to their journals. His participation in *al-Manār* and the subjects of his inquiries to *al-Sharq wā al-Gharb* of Gairnder pointed to his critique of the missionary work and the views of missionaries on Islam. An obvious rupture is noted in Riḍā's answer to the Danish missionary Nielsen. He did not consider Nielsen's discussions on the case of Ṭāha Ḥusayn as 'defamation' of Islam. Riḍā's general views on this case were harsh. But addressing Nielsen, as an 'outsider,' he dared to accept discussing such issues with non-Muslims. It can be also concluded that Riḍā's anti-Christian polemic was 'an apologetic directed towards Muslim doubters.'<sup>15</sup>

---

<sup>15</sup> H.A.R. Gibb, *Modern Trends in Islam*, Chicago, 1947, p. 53.

Riḍā's *fatwā* that Jesus died a natural death after having been saved from the Cross, and that he then was taken up to Heaven, deserves a special concluding observation. Even though he was in line with 'Abduh in this regard, the view comes close to the interpretations of Mirza Ghulam Ahmad, the founder of the Ahmadiyya movement, who denied the belief that Jesus was alive and waiting in the Heaven for an eschatological return to earth. In his view, the idea that Jesus was alive was nothing but a Christian invention, designed to demonstrate that the living Jesus was superior to the deceased Muhammad.<sup>16</sup> In his *fatwā* to the Tunisian Umar Khūja on the rejection of Jesus as having been taken alive into Heaven, Riḍā was more cautious in leaving it open. He boldly stated that a Muslim, who would reject the relevant traditions after having reached the conclusion of their soundness, was an apostate.

It is nowhere mentioned in *al-Manār* that the views of 'Abduh and Riḍā in this respect caused any Muslim repercussions in their time. But in 1942 the then member of the High Corps of Al-Azhar 'Ulamā' and later Sheikh of Al-Azhar Maḥmūd Shaltūt (1893-1963), who was influenced by the spirit of *al-Manār*, issued a similar *fatwā* in which he maintained that Jesus died and was taken in soul and body to God.<sup>17</sup> In support for his arguments, Shaltūt quoted the views of 'Abduh, Riḍā and al-Marāghī after his analysis of classical interpretations of the relevant Qur'ānic verses. It is interesting to know that Shaltūt specifically cited Riḍā's *fatwā* for Khūjā. It was ironic that the questioner of Shaltūt was an Indian officer of Aḥmadī background, and the *fatwā* remains one of the sublime specimens which the Ahmadiyya publications still use as a sign of triumph for their founder's pioneering analysis of the subject.<sup>18</sup> However, Shaltūt's opponents were among his colleagues within Al-Azhar, who accused him of

<sup>16</sup> Much has been written in this regard. See, for instance, Y Friedmann, *Prophecy Continuous: Aspects of Ahmadi Religious Thought and Its Medieval Background*, University of California Press, 1989, pp. 114-115; N. Klatt, 'Jesus in Indien,' *Zeitschrift für Religions-und Geistesgeschichte*, 1987, pp. 267-272.

<sup>17</sup> Shaltūt's *fatwā* was firstly published in the Egyptian weekly *al-Risāla* 10/462, 11 May 1942, pp. 515-517. The *fatwā* and Shaltūt's later reactions were also published in his collection, M. Shaltūt, *al-Fatāwā*, Cairo: Dār al-Qalam, second edition, n.d., pp. 59-83. See, the translation of the fatwa by C. C. Adams, 'A fatwa on the ascension of Jesus,' *The Muslim World* 34/3, 1944, pp. 214-217.

<sup>18</sup> See, for instance, 'The Ulama of Egypt on the Death of Jesus Christ—A Fatwa: Exaltation of Jesus by Prof. Mahmud Shaltut,' <http://www.ahmadiyya.ws/text/books/others/misc/ulamaegyptdeathjesuschristfatwa.shtml>, accessed on 7 January, 2008.

issuing the *fatwā* in a ‘Qadiyānī spirit.’<sup>19</sup> Shaltūt was very upset about the critique, and considered it as an implicit ‘accusation’ of ‘Abduh, Riḍā and al-Marāghī as well.<sup>20</sup> O. Leirvik correctly observed that the christological discussions of the school of *al-Manār* remained mostly within the tradition of apologetics and polemics towards Christianity, but the discussions of the 1940s around Shaltūt’s *fatwā* were an internal Muslim affair.<sup>21</sup>

Without resorting to a neatly tailored or exaggerated hypothesis, Riḍā’s influence over modern-day Muslim reformist polemics is clear that at times his words are reproduced almost verbatim.<sup>22</sup> His views on the Christian faith and its Scriptures have also left their impress upon later Muslim writers, but the impact of the earlier work of *Izhār al-Ḥaqq* by al-Qairanawi seems in my view to play a greater role in Muslim polemics. It is true that the idea that Christianity has been always espoused with Western imperialism to subdue the Muslim faith, which later polemical genre stressed, is not new in the modern polemical and apologetic discourse. According to H. Goddard, this claim ‘goes back to Afghānī and Riḍā, but it has been developed by means of a more systematic examination of Western political and missionary objectives and plans and a more detailed study of Western academic literature.’<sup>23</sup> Riḍā’s idealisation of Da‘wa and the call for the conversion of non-Muslims to Islam in order to fight increasing Western dominance in the Muslim world and defeat European colonial rule has been copied in many Muslim circles.<sup>24</sup>

Riḍā’s Arabic edition of the Gospel of Barnabas inspired several translations in several languages, such as Urdu (1916), Persian (1927), and Indonesian (1969).<sup>25</sup> It has made a major impact on a generation of anti-Christian polemical writers, especially in Pakistan, and was found to be a useful weapon in the hands of many Arab and Indian Muslim writers in their resistance to Christian missionary efforts.<sup>26</sup>

<sup>19</sup> See, Shaltūt’s reply, *al-Risāla* 11/513, pp. 363-363.

<sup>20</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 364.

<sup>21</sup> Leirvik, *Images*, p. 143.

<sup>22</sup> Ana Belèn Soage, ‘Rashīd Rida’s Legacy’, *The Muslim World* 98, 2008, p. 20

<sup>23</sup> Goddard, *Perceptions*, p. 93

<sup>24</sup> Chanfī Ahmed, ‘The *Wahubiri wa Kislamu* (Preachers of Islam) in East Africa,’ *Africa Today* 54/4, Summer 2008, pp. 3-18

<sup>25</sup> Schirrmacher, *Waffen*, p. 277.

<sup>26</sup> Leirvik, ‘Barnabas’; cf. H. Goddard, ‘Modern Pakistani and Indian Muslim Perspectives of Christianity,’ *Islam and Christian Muslim Relations* 5, 1994, pp. 165-188.

The arguments of the above-mentioned Egyptian Sheikh Muḥammad Abū Zahra on the authenticity of the Gospel of Barnabas resemble those of Riḍā. However, he made no allusions whatsoever to Riḍā's introduction in the context of his discussion but instead made various citations of Sa'ādeh's preface.<sup>27</sup>

In 1982, Ghulam Murtaza Azad, the director general of the Council of Islamic Ideology in Pakistan, tried to follow Riḍā's line by writing his own introduction to the Barnabas Gospel from an Islamic point of view.<sup>28</sup> Azad also cited Sa'ādeh's introduction at length in Arabic, followed by an English translation of some of his conclusions. He disagreed with Sa'ādeh on many points, and concluded: 'Christians should rest with peace of mind. This Gospel was not contrived by any Muslim, because according to the Holy Qur'ān Jesus predicted the advent of a messenger, Aḥmad. The Muslims, therefore, are still in search of that Gospel wherein the name of their prophet is clearly mentioned as 'Aḥmad.'<sup>29</sup>

In Indonesia, the translation of this Gospel had a great impact on the Indonesian public and was intended 'to cease fanaticism in searching [religious] truth; to assure the authenticity of Islam; and to cast-off the notion that all religions are true and same; and the differences among religions are only in their practices.'<sup>30</sup> The Gospel of Barnabas reached Muslim circles in East Africa most probably through the Ahmadiyya missionary work or the followers of Riḍā. It is quite possible that the East African Muslim reformers of the 1930s and 1940s, such as Sheikh al-Amīn bin 'Alī al-Mazrui of Mombasa (who died in 1947), were acquainted with the Arabic version of it. The leaflets and journals published by Mazrui in the 1930s and 1940s are in fact a blend of themes derived from both the Gospel of Barnabas and the writings of Riḍā.<sup>31</sup> The same Gospel is widely used among Muslim minorities in the West as well. Philip Lewis, the inter-faith advisor to the Anglican Bishop of Bradford, observed that the late 1990s posters advertising a meeting between Muslims and non-Muslims in his

---

<sup>27</sup> Muḥammad Abū Zahra, *Muḥāḍarāt fī al-Naṣrāniyya*, Cairo: Dar al-Fikr al-'Arabī, third edition, 1961, pp. 56-62

<sup>28</sup> Ghulam Murtaza Azad, 'An introduction to the Gospel of Barnabas,' *Islamic Studies* 21, 1982, pp. 71-96.

<sup>29</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 94.

<sup>30</sup> Ismatu Ropi, 'Muslim Responses to Christianity in Modern Indonesia,' unpublished MA thesis, Institute of Islamic Studies, McGill University Montreal, 1998, p. 76.

<sup>31</sup> Ahmed, *op. cit.*, p. 9-10

city included the words in large bold letters: ‘Banned—The Gospel of Barnabas,’ subtitled ‘The True Teaching of the Prophet Jesus.’ The speaker, the son of the city’s best educated imam, elaborated on the Gospel saying that the Church by rejecting it intended simply to prevent Christians from knowing the truth.<sup>32</sup>

To analyse the influence of the polemics of Riḍā and his associates on Christianity would need a much more detailed study. It would suffice us here to mention some examples. In his account of the crucifixion, the Egyptian novelist ‘Abd al-Ḥamīd Jūda al-Saḥḥār held a similar view to that of Sidqī that Jesus had been able to escape the crowd. This led to Judas being arrested instead, and explains the silence of the victim before the high priest. He was unsure whether this was a judgment on his doubt or a reward for his betrayal.<sup>33</sup> Aḥmad Hijāzī al-Saqqā, another Egyptian polemicist, expressed his indebtedness to the writings of many authors before him, including Riḍā’s views on the prophecies of Muḥammad in the Torah and Gospel.<sup>34</sup> In his *Ma‘ā al-Masīḥ fī al-Anājīl al-Arb‘a* (With the Messiah in the Four Gospels), the Egyptian Islamic writer Faṭḥī ‘Uthmān explained that he was challenged by the existence of Arabic books about Islam and the evident absence of equivalent books by Muslims on Christianity. For him, it was Riḍā who wrote Christian doctrines. ‘Uthmān explained his own desire to ‘do better.’<sup>35</sup> The prominent Indonesian Muslim intellectual Nurcholish Madjid (1939–2005) developed a new understanding of other religions by stressing that the term People of the Book in the Qur’ān should be extended so that it refers not solely to Jews and Christians. He quoted Riḍā, who, as we have seen, was ready to include other religious groups under the same category.<sup>36</sup> In his understanding of Christianity, the neo-modernist Egyptian thinker Ḥasan Ḥanafī could be considered as an ‘heir’ of al-Qairanāwī and Riḍā, since he used his knowledge of Western sources to buttress an essentially traditional Muslim view of Christianity.<sup>37</sup> In his commentary on the Qur’ān, *Fī Zilāl al-Qur’ān*,

---

<sup>32</sup> Philip Lewis, ‘Depictions of Christianity within British Islamic Institutions,’ in Lloyd Rideon, ed., *Islamic Interpretations of Christianity*, New York: St. Martin’s Press, 2001, pp. 209–211.

<sup>33</sup> Goddard, *Perception*, pp. 119–120

<sup>34</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 71

<sup>35</sup> Goddard, p. 122

<sup>36</sup> Ropi, *op. cit.*, p. 105

<sup>37</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 148–149

the Muslim ideologue Sayyid Quṭb, for example, extensively quoted Riḍā's excursus on the Trinity.<sup>38</sup>

In the digital age, many Salafī websites cite articles from Riḍā's journal literally. Popular religious websites, such as *Muṭqā Ahl al-Ḥadīth* (the Meetingpoint of the People of Hadith), *Ṭariq al-Islām* (the Way of Islam) and *Shabakat Atbā' al-Risāla* (the Network of the Followers of the Message), made for instance many references to his ideas on what they considered as 'irrationality' of the Christian belief. The reactions of the visitors to such websites have high esteem for *al-Manār*'s efforts, especially the Arabic translation of the Gospel of Barnabas.<sup>39</sup> The last remark would be an interesting subject for future research.

---

<sup>38</sup> Neal Robinson, 'Sayyid Quṭb's Attitude Towards Christianity: Sūra 9.29-35 in *Fī Zilāl al-Qur'ān*,' in Lloyd Ridgeon, ed., *Islamic Interpretations of Christianity*, Curzon Press, 2001, p. 167. For more about comparison between *al-Manār* and *al-Zilāl* of Quṭb, see also, Olivier Carré, *Mysticism and Politics: A Critical Reading of Fī Zilāl al-Qur'ān by Sayyid Quṭb (1906-1966)*, translated by Carol Artigues, Leiden and Boston: Brill, 2003, especially pp. 24-26, pp. 94-99, pp. 144-150, pp. 222-228 and pp. 244-250.

<sup>39</sup> See, [http://www.islamway.com/?iw\\_s=Article&iw\\_a=view&article\\_id=2252](http://www.islamway.com/?iw_s=Article&iw_a=view&article_id=2252); <http://www.followers-of-the-message.com/site/modules.php?name=News&file=topics&topic=7>; [www.ahlalheeth.com/vb/attachment.php?attachmentid=17722&d=1123834498](http://www.ahlalheeth.com/vb/attachment.php?attachmentid=17722&d=1123834498); <http://www.ahlalheeth.com/vb/showthread.php?t=68951>; checked 4 February 2009.





## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### *Private Archives*

- Rashīd Riḍā Papers, Family Archive, Cairo—Egypt  
Taqī al-Dīn al-Hilālī Papers, Family Archive, Meknès—Morocco  
Zekī H. Kirām Papers, formerly in Kornwestheim—Germany, presently in the possession of the present writer, Leiden—The Netherlands

### *Works in Arabic*

- ‘Abduh, Muḥammad, *al-‘Islām wā al-Naṣrāniyya ma’a al-‘Ilm wā al-Madaniyya*, Cairo: Dār Al-Manār, 1341/1922.  
‘Abdul-Allāh, Maḥmūd Ismā‘il, *Fahras al-Dawriyyāt al-‘Arabiyya al-Latī tamtalikuhā al-Dār*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at Dār al-Kutub, 1961.  
‘Abyaḍ, Anīs al-, *al-Hayāh al-‘Ilmiyya wā Marākiz al-‘Ilm fī Tarābuls Khilāl al-Qarn al-Tāsi’ ‘Ashar*, Tripoli, 1985.  
Ahmed-Bioud (et al), *3200 Majalla wā Jarīda ‘Arabiyya 1800-1965: 3200 Revues Journaux Arabes de 1800 à 1965*, Paris: Bibliothèque Nationale, 1969.  
Ajam, Rafīq al-, ed., *Al-Baṣā’ir al-Nuṣayriyya li ‘Ilm al-Mantiq*, Beirut: Dār al-Fikr al-Lubnānī, 1993.  
*Al-Mu’tamar al-‘Arabī al-‘Awwal*, Cairo, 1913.  
*al-Ta’līm fī Miṣr wā ḥaḍ al-Muslimīn wā al-Aqbāṭ Minhū*, Cairo: Matba‘at al-Adāb wā al-Mu’ayyad, n.d.  
Anṭūn, F., *Ibn Rushd wā Falsafatuh*, Alexandria, January 1903.  
Arslān, Shakīb, *al-Sayyid Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā aw Ikhā’ ‘Arba’in Sanah*, 1st ed., Damascus, 1937.  
———, *Li-mādhā Ta’akhhara al-Muslimūn wa li-mādhā Taqaddama Ghayruhum*, Cairo: Dār al-Manār, 1349/1930-1; English translation by, Shakoor, M.A. *Our decline and its causes*, Lahore, 1944.  
Baghdādī, ‘Abd al-Rahmān ibn Sa‘īd (Bajah Ji Zadah), *al-Fāriq bayna al-Makhlūq wā al-Khāliq*, Cairo, 1904.  
Bahādilī, Muḥammad Bāqir Aḥmad al-, *al-Sayyid Hibat al-Dīn al-Shahrestānī: Athāruh al-Fikriyyā wā Mawāqifuhu al-Siyāsiyyā*, Beirut: Mu’assasat al-Fikr al-Islāmī, 2000.  
Bajūrī, Iskander Abd al-Masiḥ al-, *Khūdhāt al-Khalās min Sharak Injil Barnaba al-Frā Mārīnī al-Qannās*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Tawfīq, 1908.  
Bishrī, Ṭariq al-, *al-Muslimūn wā al-‘Aqbāṭ fī Iṭār al-Waḥdah al-Waṭaniyya*, 4th edition, Cairo: Dār al-Shurūq, 2004.  
Chatelier, A. Le, *al-Ghārā ‘alā al-‘Ālam al-‘Islāmī*, trans. by Musā‘id al-Yāfi and Muḥhib al-Dīn al-Khatīb, Cairo: al-Maṭaba‘a al-Salafiyya, 1350/ 1931-1932.  
Dabbāgh, Abd al-‘Azīz al-, *Kitāb al-‘Ibriz*, edited by Muḥammad ‘Adnān al-Shammā’, 2 volumes, Damascus, 1st edition, 1986.  
Dijwī, Yūsuf al-, *Rasā’il al-Salām wā Rusul al-‘Islām*, Cairo: al-Nahḍah Press, n. d.  
Ḍumīṭ, Jabr, *al-Khawātir al-Ḥisān fī al-Ma‘ānī wā al-Bayān*, Cairo, 1896.

- 'Faraḥ Anṭūn: Ḥayātuh wā Ta'binuh wā Mukhtarātuh,' in *Majallat al-Sayyidāt wā al-Rijāl*, Cairo, September 1923.
- Ghabriyāl, Niqūlā Ya'qūb, *Abḥāth* (sometimes *Mabāḥith*) *al-Mujtahidīn fī al-Khilāf Bayna al-Naṣārā wā al-Muslimīn*, Cairo, 1901.
- Ghanīma, Ḥārith Yūsuf, *al-Brotustant wā al-Injilyūn fī al-'Irāq*, Baghdad: al-Nāshir al-Maktabī Press, 1998.
- Ghazālī, Abū Ḥāmid al-, *Fayṣal al-Tafriqa Bayna al-'Islām wā al-Zandaqa*, edited by Sulaymān Dunyā, Cairo, 1961.
- Guḥā, Miṣhāl, 'Ibn Rushd bayna Faraḥ Anṭūn wā Muḥammad 'Abduh,' in *al-Ijtihād*, vol. 8 (1996), pp. 61-87.
- , *Faraḥ Anṭūn*, Beirut: Riad el-Rayyes Books, 1998.
- Ḥabīb, Muḥammad, *al-Suyūf al-Battāra fī Madhhab Khirustuphoros Gibāra*, Cairo: Al-'Aṣima Press, 1313/ circa 1895.
- Haddād, Muḥammad al-, *Muḥammad 'Abduh: Qirā'a Jadīda fī Khitāb al-Islāh al-Dinī*, Beirut, 2003.
- Hage, Badr al-, *Silsilat al-A'māl al-Majhūlah: al-Duktūr Khalīl Sa'ādeh*, London: Riad al-Rayyes Books, 1987.
- Haikal, Muḥammad Ḥusayn, *Tarājim Miṣriyya wā Gharbiyya*, Cairo, 1929.
- Ḥājirī, Muḥammad Tāha al-, *Muḥammad Farīd Wajdi: Ḥayātuh wā Athāruh*. Cairo: The Arab League, 1970.
- Hilālī, Taqī al-Dīn al-, 'al-Barāhīn al-Injiliyya 'alā anna 'Isā Dakhal fī al-'Ubūdiyyā wā lā Ḥazza lahu fī al-'Ulūhiyya,' unpublished typescript, Morocco, n. d.
- Ibish, Yūsuf, ed., *Riḥlāt al-Imām Rashīd Riḍā*, Beirut, 1970.
- Jāḥiz, Abū Bakr al-, *al-Mukhtār fī al-Radd 'alā al-Naṣārā*, ed. by M. A. al-Sharqāwī, Beirut and Cairo, 1991.
- Jawziyya, Ibn al-Qayyim al-, *Hidāyat al-Ḥayārā fī 'Ajwibat al-Yahūd wā al-Naṣārā*, edited by 'Isām Fārīd al-Harstānī, Beirut, 1994.
- Jundī, Anwar al-, *al-Imām al-Marāghī*, Cairo, 1952.
- Juwaynī, Imam al-, *Shifā' al-Ghalīl*, ed. by Ahmad Hijāzī al-Saqqā, Cairo, n.d.
- Kāmil, Muṣṭafā, *al-Shams al-Mushriqa*, Cairo: al-Liwā', 1904.
- Kayyālī, Sāmī al-, *al-Adab al-Mu'āṣir fī Sūriyā*, Cairo, 1959.
- Khālīdī, Muṣṭafā and 'Umar Farrūkh, *Al-Tabshir wā al-Isti'mār fī al-Bilād al-'Arabiyya*, 2nd ed., Beirut, 1957.
- Khāmīs, Muḥammad Bayram al-, *Ṣafwat al-'Iṭibār bi Mustawda' al-Amṣār wa al-Aqtār*, edited by Ma'mūn Muḥī al-Dīn al-Jannān, Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmyya (2 vols.), 1997.
- Kitāb Intiqād Kitāb Tārīkh al-Tamaddun al-'Islāmī*, Cairo: Dār al-Manār, 1330/1912.
- Labbān, Muṣṭafā al-Rifā'ī al-, *Mawqif al-'Islām min Kutub al-Yahūd wā al-Naṣārā*, Cairo: al-Maṭba'a al-Salafiyya, 1353/ 1934.
- Madanī, Amīn al-Ḥalwānī al-, *Nabsh al-Hadhayān min Tārīkh Jurjī Zaidān*, Bombay, 1307/1890.
- Mansī, A. Abū Khidr, *Faraḥ Anṭūn*, Cairo, 1923.
- Munajjid, Ṣalāh al-Dīn al-, ed., *Mudhakkirāt Jurjī Zaidān*, Beirut: Dār al-Kitāb al-Jadīd, 1968.
- Mubārak, 'Alī, *'Alam al-Dīn*, Alexandria: al-Maḥrūsa Newspaper Press, 4 vols, 1299/1883.
- Murrākishī, Muḥammad Sāliḥ al-, *Tafkīr Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā min Khilāl Majallat al-Manār (1898-1935)*, Tunisia and Algeria: Tunisian Press, 1985.
- Mūsā, Salāma, *Tarbiyyat Salāma Mūsā*, Cairo, 1947; English Translation, *The Education of Salama Musa*, Leiden: EJ Brill, 1961.
- Najdī, Sulaymān b. Saḥmān al-, *al-Diyā' al-Shāriq fī Radd Shubuhāt al-Māziq al-Māriq*, Cairo: Dār al-Manār: 1925.

- Najjār, Abd al-Ḥalīm al- (trans.), *Madhāhib al-Tafsīr al-Islāmī*, Cairo, 1955.
- Nuṣayr, ‘Aydah Ibrāhīm, *al-Kutub al-‘Arabiyya al-Latī Nushirat fī Miṣr Bayna ‘Amay 1900-1925*, Cairo: American University in Cairo, 1983.
- Nuwayhid, ‘Ajjā, *Ḥādir al-‘alam al-Islāmī*, 4 vols., Cairo: al-Maṭba‘a al-Salafiyya, 1352/1933.
- Qairanāwī, Raḥmatullah al-, *Izhār al-Haqq*, 2 vols., Constantinople, 1867.
- Qudāh, Aḥmad Mufliḥ al-, ‘Mawqif Tafsīr al-Manār min Riwayāt Asbāb al-Nuzūl wā al-Isra‘iliyyāt,’ a paper presented at: ‘Symposium on Sheikh Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā: His Intellectual Role, Reformation and Methodology,’ Jordan: International Institute for Islamic Thought, 1999, pp. 13-48.
- Qūṣaimī, Abdullāh al-Najdī al-, *Shuyūkh Al-Azhar wā al-Ziyādah fī al-‘Islām*, Cairo: Maṭb‘at al-Manār, 1351 AH.
- Riḍā, Rashīd, *Tārīkh al-Ustādh al-Imām*, 4 vols, Cairo: Dār al-Faḍīlah, 2003.
- , *al-Manār wa Al-Azhar*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Manār, 1353/ 1934.
- , *al-Muslimūn wa Al-Qibṭ wa al-Mu‘tamar al-Miṣrī*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Manār, 1st ed., 1329.
- , *al-Waḥī al-Muḥammadi*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Manār, 1353/1934.
- , *Nidā’ ilā al-Jins al-Latīf: Ḥuqūq al-Mar’ah fī al-‘Islam*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Manār, 1351/1932.
- Riḍā, Rashīd, ed. & Khalīl Sa‘ādeh (trans), *‘Injil Barnabā*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Manār, 1325/1907.
- Riḍā, Rashīd & Tawfiq Ṣidqī, *‘Aqīdat al-Ṣalb wā al-Fidā’*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Manār, 1331/1913.
- Sa‘ādeh, Anṭūn, *al-‘Athār al-Kāmila: Marḥalat mā Qabla al-Ta’sīs 1921-1932*, various volumes, Beirut, 1975.
- Sab’, Mishāl, ‘al-Masūniya fī Sūriya,’ available at: <http://www.syria-wide.com/Abass.htm>, accessed on 23 July 2007.
- Sabā, ‘Isā Mikha‘il, *al-Sheikh ‘Ibrāhīm al-Yāzigi (1847-1906)*, Cairo: Dar al-Ma‘ārif, 1955.
- Sharabāṣī, Aḥmad al-, *Rashīd Riḍā Sāhib al-Manār ‘Aṣruḥ wā Ḥayātuh wā Maṣādir Thaḳāfatuh*, Cairo, 1970.
- Shawābika, Aḥmad Fahd al-, *Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā wā dawruḥ fī al-Ḥayāh al-Fikriyya wā al-Siyāsiyya*, Amman: Dār ‘Ammār, 1989.
- Shukrī, Ghālī, *Salāma Mūsā wā Azmat al-Ḍamīr al-‘Arabī*, Beirut, 4th edition, 1983.
- Shumayyil, S., *Majmū‘at al-Duktūr Shibli Shumayyil*, 2 volumes, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Ma‘ārif, n. d.
- Ṣidqī, M. Tawfiq, *Dīn Allah fī Kutub Anbyā’ih*, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Manār, 1330/1912.
- , *Naẓra fī Kutub al-‘Ahd al-Jadīd wā ‘Aq’aid al-Naṣārā*, 1st edition, Cairo: Maṭba‘at al-Manār, 1331/1913.
- Sulaymān M. M., *al-‘Ajānib fī Miṣr: 1922: 1952*, 1st ed., Cairo: ‘Ayn For Human and Social Studies, 1996.
- Tafsīr Al-Manār*, 12 vols, Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-‘Ilmiyya, 1999.
- Ṭanāhī, Ṭāhir al-, *Mudhikkarāt al-‘Imām Muḥammad ‘Abduḥ*, Cairo: Dār al-Hilāl, 1961.
- Tannīr, Muḥammad Ṭāhir al-, *al-‘Aqā’id al-Wathaniyya fī al-Diyāna al-Naṣrāniyya*, n. d., n. p.; later edited by Muḥammad ‘Abdullah al-Sharqāwī, Cairo: Dār al-Shawā, 1988.
- Tha‘ālibī, Abū Ishāq al-, *Qaṣaṣ al-Anbiyā’ al-Musammā bi ‘Arā’is al-Majālis*, Cairo, 1312/1894.
- Tisdall, W.S., *Tanwīr al-Afhām fī Maṣādir al-‘Islām*, London: Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1904.
- Yaḥyā, Ismā‘il, *Limādḥā Aslamū?*, Cairo: Dār al-Ma‘ārif, 1992.

- Zaghlūl, A. Faṭḥī, *Rūḥ al-Ijtīmā'*, Cairo: Maṭba'at al-Sha'b, 1909.  
 Zaidān, Jurjī, *al-'Arab Qabl al-'Islām*, Cairo, 1907.  
 ———, *Tārīkh al-Tamaddun al-'Islāmī*, 5 vols., Cairo, 1901-1906.  
 ———, *Fatāt Ghassān*, Beirut: Manshūrāt Maktabat al-Ḥayāh, n. d.  
 ———, *Tārīkh Adāb al-Lughā al-'Arabīyyā*, 4 vols, Cairo, 1911-1914.  
 Zirīklī, Khayr al-Dīn al, *al-'A'lām*, Beirut: Dār al-'Ilm lil-Malāyīn, 2002.

*Works in Western Languages*

- Abaza, Mona, 'Southeast Asia and the Middle East: *Al-Manār* and Islamic Modernity' in Claude Guillot, Denys Lombard and Roderich Ptak, ed., *Mediterranean to the Chinese Sea: Miscellaneous Notes*, Wiesbaden: Harrasowitz, 1998, pp. 93-111.  
 Abdul-Ahad, Selim and W.T. Gairdner, *The Gospel of Barnabas: An Essay and Inquiry*, (with a foreword by Jan Slomp) Hyderabad: Henry Martin Institute of Islamic Studies, 1975.  
 Abu-Lughod, Ibrahim, *Arab Rediscovery of Europe: A Study in Cultural Encounters*, Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1963.  
 Abu-Mannch, Butrus, 'The Christians between Ottomanism and Syrian Nationalism: The Ideas of Butrus al-Bustani,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 11/3, 1980, pp. 287-304.  
 Adams, Charles C., 'Muḥammad 'Abduh and the Transvaal Fatwa,' in *The Macdonald Presentation Volume*, Princeton University Press, 1933, pp. 13-29.  
 ———, *Islam and Modernism in Egypt*, London: Oxford University Press, 1933.  
 Adang, Camilla, *Muslim Writers on Judaism and the Hebrew Bible: From Ibn Rabban to Ibn Hazm*, Brill, 1996.  
 Addison, James Thayer, 'The Ahmadiyya Movement and Its Western Propaganda,' *Harvard Theological Review* 22/1, 1929, pp. 1-32.  
 Allen, Grant, *The Evolution of the Idea of God*, London, 1903.  
 Anderson, Gerald H., ed., *Biographical Dictionary of Christian Missions*, New York: Eerdmans, 1997.  
 Andrea, Tor, *Mohammed, sein Leben und sein Glaube*, Göttingen: Vandenhoeck und Ruprecht, 1932.  
 Anis, Ahmad, 'Two Approaches to Islamic History: A critique of Shibli Nu'mani's and Syed Ameer Ali's interpretations of history,' unpublished PhD dissertation, USA: Temple University, 1980.  
 Anis, Bushra, 'The Emergence of Islam and the Status of Muslim Minority in Japan,' *Journal of Muslim Minority Affairs* 18/2, 1998, pp. 329-346.  
 Arslān, Chakib, ed., *La Nation arabe*, 4 vols., Geneva, 1934-1938.  
 Arthur, George, *Life of Lord Kitchener*, 3 vols., London & New York: Macmillan Company, 1920.  
 Athamina, Khalil, 'Abraham in Islamic Perspective: Reflections on the Development of Monotheism in Pre-Islamic Arabia,' *Der Islam* 81, 2004, pp. 184-205.  
 Awetaranian, Johannes, *Geschichte eines Mohammedaners der Christ wurde: Die Geschichte des Johannes Awetaranian. Von ihm selbst erzählt*, Potsdam, 1930.  
 Ayalon, Ami, *The Press in the Arab Middle East: A History*, Oxford University Press, 1995.  
 Ayoub, M., 'Muslim Views of Christianity: Some Modern Examples,' *Islamochristiana* 10, 1984, pp. 49-70.  
 ———, 'Towards an Islamic Christology II: The death of Jesus, reality or delusion,' *The Muslim World* 70, 1980, pp. 91-121.

- , 'Roots of Muslim-Christian Conflict,' *The Muslim World* 79, 1989, pp. 25-43.
- Azad, Ghulam Murtaza, 'An Introduction to the Gospel of Barnabas,' *Islamic Studies* 21, 1982, pp. 71-96.
- Azra, Azyumardi, 'The Transmission of *al-Manār*'s Reformism to the Malay-Indonesian World: the Cases of *al-Imam* and *al-Munir*,' *Studia Islamika* 6/3, 1999, pp. 79-111.
- Badawi, Zaki, *The Reformers of Egypt*, London: Croom Helm, 1976.
- Badrawi, Malak, *Political Violence in Egypt 1910-1925: Secret Societies, Plots and Assassinations*, RoutledgeCurzon, 1st ed., 2000.
- Bebbington, David William, *The Mind of Gladstone: Religion, Homer, and Politics*, Oxford University Press, 2004.
- Bell, Campbell Robert, 'The Arabic Journal, 'al-Mashriq': Its Beginnings and First Twenty-Five Years Under the Editorship of Père Louis Cheikho, S.j.,' unpublished PhD dissertation, the University of Michigan, 1972.
- Benda, Harry J., 'Christiaan Snouck Hurgronje and the Foundations of Dutch Islamic Policy in Indonesia,' *The Journal of Modern History* 30/4, 1958, pp. 338-347.
- Berg, Herbert, 'Book Review [of Ibn Warraq's] *The Origins Of The Koran: Classic Essays On Islam's Holy Book*,' *Bulletin Of The School Of Oriental and African Studies* 62/3, 1999, pp. 557-558.
- Bernabé Pons, Luis F., 'Zur Wahrheit und Echtheit des Barnabasevangeliums,' in R. Kirste, ed., *Wertewandel und Religiöse Umuebrche. Religionen im Gespräch*, Nachrodt, vol. 4, 1996, pp. 133-188.
- Beshara, Adel, 'Dr. Khalil Sa'adeh: Nationalist Crusader,' *al-Mashriq: A Quarterly Journal of Middle East studies* 3/12, March 2005.
- Bessis, J., 'Chekib Arslan et les mouvements nationalistes au Maghreb,' in *Revue Historique* 526, 1978, pp. 467-489.
- Bethmann, Erich W., *Bridge to Islam: A Study of the Religious Forces of Islam and Christianity in the Near East*, London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd, 1953.
- Bloom, Jutta E., 'A Preliminary Statement on the Dialogue Established Between the Reform Magazine *al-Manār* and the Malay-Indonesian World,' *Indonesia Circle* 32, 1983, pp. 35-42.
- , '*Al-Manār* and Ahmad Soorkattie: Links in the Chain of Transmission of Muḥammad 'Abduh's Ideas to the Malay-Speaking World,' in Peter G. Riddell and Tony Street, ed., *Islam: Essays on Scripture, Thought and Society*, Leiden: Brill, 1997, pp. 295-308.
- Blunt, Wilfrid Scawen, *My Diaries, Being a Personal Narrative of Events 1888-1914*, London: Martin Secker, 1919.
- Blyden, Edward, *Christianity, Islam and the Negro Race*, Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1967.
- Bodine, J. Jermain, 'Magic Carpet to Islam: Duncan Black Macdonald and the Arabian Nights,' *The Muslim World* 67, 1977, pp. 1-11.
- Bolsover, G. H., 'David Urquhart and the Eastern Question, 1833-37: A Study in Publicity and Diplomacy,' *The Journal of Modern History* 8/4, 1936, pp. 444-467.
- Bon, G. Le, *Psychologie des foules*, various editions, Paris.
- Borrmans, Maurice, 'Le commentaire du *Manar* à propos du verset coranique sur l'amitié des Musulmans pour les Chrétiens (5,82),' *Islamochristiana* 1, 1975, pp. 71-86.
- Brown, Daniel, *Rethinking Tradition in Modern Islamic Thought*, Cambridge University Press, 1999.
- Bruce, F.F., 'The Person of Christ: Incarnation and Virgin Birth,' in Carl F.H. Henry, ed., *Basic Christian Doctrines*, Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1975, pp. 128f.

- Bruinessen, Martin van, 'Basyuni Imran,' in *Dictionnaire biographique des savants et grandes figures du monde musulman périphérique*, du XIXe siècle à nos jours, Fasc. no 1. Paris: CNRS-EHESS, 1992.
- Bunsen, Ernest De, *The Angel-messiah of Buddhists, Essences and Christians*, London: Longmans, Green, and Co., 1892.
- Burhanudin Jajat, 'Aspiring for Islamic Reform: Southeast Asian Requests for Fatwas in *al-Manār*,' *Islamic Law and Society* 12/1, 2005, pp. 9-26.
- Busool, Assad Nimer, 'Shaykh Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā's relations with Jamāl al-Dīn al-Afghānī and Muḥammad 'Abduh,' *The Muslim World* 66/4, 1976, pp. 272-286.
- Cadwallader, Alan H., 'Male Diagnosis of the Female Pen in Late Victorian Britain: Private Assessments of Supernatural Religion,' *Journal of Anglican Studies* 5/1, 2007, pp. 69-88.
- Cairnes, H. Alan C., *Prelude to Imperialism: British Reactions to Central African Society*, Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1965.
- Cantor, Paul A., 'The Uncanonical Dante: The Divine Comedy and Islamic Philosophy,' *Philosophy and Literature* 20/1, 1996, pp. 138-153.
- Carpenter, William Benjamin, *Principles of Mental Physiology with Their Applications to the Training and Discipline of the Mind and the Study of Its Morbid Conditions*, New York, 1889.
- Carré, Olivier, *Mysticism and Politics: A Critical reading of Fī Zilāl al-Qur'ān by Sayyid Quṭb (1906-1966)*, translated by Carol Artigues, Brill, 2003.
- Carter, B.L., 'On Spreading the Gospel to Egyptians Sitting in Darkness: The Political Problem of Missionaries in Egypt in the 1930s,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 20/4, 1984, pp. 18-36.
- Cassels, W.R. *Supernatural Religion: An Inquiry into the Reality of Divine Revelation*, London: Longmans & Co, 3 vols., 1874-1879.
- Cheiko, L., 'Quelques legendes islamiques apocryphes,' *Melanges de la Faculte Orientale* (Beirut) iv, 1910, pp. 40-3.
- 'Chronique,' *Revue du Monde Musulman* 6, 1912, p. 286.
- Ciota, Donald, '*Thamarat al-Funun*: Syria's First Islamic Newspaper, 1875-1908,' unpublished PhD Dissertation, University of Chicago, 1979.
- Cirillo Luigi & M. Fremaux, *Evangile de Barnabé, recherches sur la composition et l'origine: texte et tr.*, Paris: Beauchesne, 1977.
- Clarence-Smith, William Gervase, *Islam and the Abolition of Slavery*, London: Hurst & New York: Oxford University Press, 2006.
- Cleveland, W.L. *Islam against the West: Shakīb Arslān and the Campaign for Islamic Nationalism the West*, Austin: University of Texas Press, 1985.
- Cole, J.R., 'Rashīd Riḍā on the Bahā'ī Faith: a Utilitarian Theory of the Spread of Religions,' *Arab Studies Quarterly* 5, 1983, pp. 276-291.
- Commins, David Dean, 'Ḥasan al-Bannā (1906-1949),' in Ali Rahnema, ed., *Pioneers of Islamic Revival*, London: Zed Books Ltd, 1994, pp. 125-153.
- 'Contro l'attività dei Missionari protestanti in Egitto,' *Oriente Moderno* 13/7, 1933, pp. 373-375.
- Conway, John S., 'The Historiography of the German Church Struggle,' *Journal of Bible and Religion* 32/3, 1964, pp. 221-230.
- , *The Nazi Persecution of the Churches, 1933-1945*, Regent College Publishing, 2001.
- Cooke, Bill, *Blasphemy depot: a hundred years of the Rationalist Press Association*. London: Rationalist Press Association, 2003.



- Cosgrove, Charles H., 'Justin Martyr and the Emerging Christian Canon. Observations on the Purpose and Destination of the Dialogue with Trypho,' *Vigiliae Christianae* 36/ 3, 1982, pp. 209-232.
- Cragg, K., *Jesus and the Muslim: An exploration*, London, 1985.
- Crecelius, Daniel Neil, 'The 'Ulamā' and the State in Modern Egypt,' unpublished PhD dissertation, Princeton University, 1967.
- Crombie, F., (trans.), *The Writings of Origen I: De Principiis*, in the series *Ante-Nicene Christian Library: Translations of the Writings of the Fathers down to A.D. 325*, Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1871-1872.
- Cromer, Lord, *Modern Egypt*, New York: The Macmillan Company, 1908.
- 'Current Events: 'The Anti-missionary Campaign in Egypt,' *The Moslim World* 24, 1934, pp. 84-86.
- Currie, Robert, 'Power and Principle: The Anglican Prayer Book Controversy (1927-1930),' *Church History* 33/2, 1964, pp. 192-205.
- Daniel, Robert L., 'The Armenian Question and American-Turkish Relations (1914-1927),' *The Mississippi Valley Historical Review* 46/2, 1959, pp. 252-275.
- Dawisha, Aheed, *Arab Nationalism in the Twentieth Century: From Triumph to Despair*, Princeton University Press, 2002.
- Dawn, C. Ernest, *From Ottomanism to Arabism: Essays on the Origins of Arab Nationalism*, University of Illinois Press, 1973.
- Dejong, G. E., 'Slavery in Arabia,' *The Muslim World* 24, 1934, pp. 127-131.
- Delitzsch, Friedrich, *Babel und Bibel. Ein Vortrag. (gehalten am 13. Januar 1902)*, Leipzig, Hinrichs'sche Buchhandlung 1902.
- , *Zweiter Vortrag über Babel und Bibel*, Stuttgart: Deutsche Verlags-Anstalt, 1903.
- Der christliche Orient: Monatsschrift der deutschen Orient-Mission*, Berlin, 1900.
- Dermenghem, Émile, *La vie de Mahomet*, Paris: Plon, 1929.
- Deutschland und Armenien 1914-1918: Sammlung diplomatischer Aktenstücke*, Postdam, 1919.
- Doane, T.W., *Bible myths and their Parallels in other Religions*, New York: Commonwealth Co, circa 1882.
- Dodge, Bayard, *The American University of Beirut*, Beirut, 1958.
- , 'The American University of Beirut,' *Journal of World History* 4, 1967, pp. 780-800.
- Doumato, Eleanor Abdella, 'An 'Extra Legible Illustration of the Christian Faith': Medicine, Medical Ethics, and Missionaries in the Arabian Gulf,' in Eleanor H. Tejirian & Reeva Spector Simon, eds., *Altruism and Imperialism: The Western Religious and Cultural Missionary Enterprise in the Middle East*, Middle East Institute, Columbia University, 2002, pp. 167-182.
- Draws, C.H.A., *Die Christusmythe: Die Zeugnisse für die geschichtlichkeit Jesu*, 2 vols., Jena: Diederichs 1910-1911; translated by C. Delisle Burns, *The Christ Myth*, Amherst, N.Y., [etc.]: Prometheus Books, 1998.
- Dudoignon, Stéphane A. (et al), *Intellectuals in the Modern Islamic World: Transmission, transformation and communication*, London and New York, Routledge, 2006.
- , 'Echoes to *al-Manār* among the Muslims of the Russian Empire: A preliminary research note on Riza al-Din b. Fakhr al-Din and the Shūrā (1908-1918),' in Stéphane A. Dudoignon, pp. 85-116.
- Dykstra, Darrell, 'Pyramids, Prophets, and Progress: Ancient Egypt in the Writings of 'Ali Mubārak,' *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 114/1, 1994, pp. 54-65.
- Eban, A.S., 'The Modern Literary Movement in Egypt,' *International Affairs* 20/2, 1944, pp. 166-178.

- Egger, Vernon, *A Fabian in Egypt: Salamah Musa and the Rise of the Professional Classes in Egypt, 1909-1939*, University Press of America, 1986.
- Elder, E.E., 'The Crucifixion in the Qur'an,' *The Muslim World* 13, 1923, pp. 242-58.
- Emmet, C.W., 'The Modernist Movement in the Church of England,' *The Journal of Religion* 2/6, 1922, pp. 561-576.
- Ende, W., 'Sollen Frauen schreiben lernen? Eine innerislamische Debatte und ihre Widerspiegelung in *al-Manār*,' *Gedenkschrift Wolfgang Reuschel: Akten des III. Arabistischen Kolloquiums*, Leipzig 21-22, 1991, pp. 49-57.
- Epalza, Mikel de, 'Le milieu hispano-moresque de l'évangile islamisant de Barnabé (XVI<sup>e</sup>-XVII<sup>e</sup> siècle),' *Islamochristiana* 8, 1982, pp. 159-183.
- Escovitz, J. H., 'He was the Muḥammad Abduh of Syria: A Study of Tāhir al-Jazāirī and His Influence,' *International Journal of Middle Eastern Studies* 18/3, 1986, pp. 293-310.
- Feinberg, Paul D., 'An Exegetical and Theological Study of Daniel 9:24-27,' in S. John and D. Paul, ed., *Tradition and Testament: Essays in Honor of Charles Lee Feinberg*, Chicago: Moody Press, 1981, pp. 189-222.
- Fergusson, James, *Tree and Serpent Worship*: London: India Museum, 1873.
- Fiddes, Paul S., *The Creative Suffering of God*, Oxford University Press, 1988.
- Fikī, Moustafa El-, *Copts in Egyptian politics (1919-1952)*, General Egyptian Book Organization, 1991.
- Fiske, John, *Myth and Myth Makers: Old Tales and Superstitions interpreted by Comparative Mythology*, London, 1873.
- Fletcher, J.E., 'The Spanish Gospel of Barnabas,' *Novum Testamentum* 18/4, 1976, pp. 314-320.
- Fox, Adam, *Dean Inge*, London: John Murray, 1960.
- Frank, Allen J., *Muslim Religious Institutions in Imperial Russia: The Islamic World of Novouzensk District and the Kazakh Inner Horde, 1780-1910*, Brill, 2001.
- Gairdner, W.T., *D.M. Thornton: A Study in Missionary Ideals and Methods*, London, 1908.
- , 'Mohammedan Tradition and Gospel Record: The Ḥadith and the Injil,' *The Moslem World* 4/4, 1915, pp. 349-378.
- , *The Rebuke of Islam*, London, 1920.
- Gershoni, Israel and James P. Jankowski, *Redefining the Egyptian Nation, 1930-1945*, Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Gibb, H.A.R., 'Studies in Contemporary Arabic Literature,' *Bulletin of the School of Oriental Studies* 7/1, 1933, pp. 1-22.
- , 'The Islamic Congress at Jerusalem in December 1931,' in Arnold Toynbee, *Survey of international affairs 1934*, London, 1935, pp. 99-109.
- , *Modern Trends in Islam*, Chicago, 1947.
- Gilbert, George H., 'Justin Martyr on the Person of Christ,' *The American Journal of Theology* 10/4, 1906, pp. 663-674.
- Ginneken, Jaap van, *Crowd, Psychology, and Politics, 1871-1899*, Cambridge University Press, 1992.
- Goddard, H., 'Modern Pakistani and Indian Muslim Perspectives of Christianity,' *Islam and Muslim-Christian Relations* 5, 1994, pp. 165-188.
- , *Muslim Perceptions of Christianity*, Gery Seal Book, London, 1996.
- , 'Christianity from the Muslim Perspectives: Varieties and Changes,' in J. Waardenburg, ed., *Islam and Christianity: Mutual Perceptions since the Mid-20th Century*, Leuven, 1998, pp. 213-256.
- Goldschmidt, Arthur, *Biographical Dictionary of Modern Egypt*, Lynne Rienner Publishers, 1999, pp. 61-62.



- Goldziher, I., 'Über muhammedanische Polemik gegen Ahl al-kitāb,' in *ZDMG*, xxxii, 1878 (= *Gesammelte Schriften*, (ii, 1-47), pp. 351-377.
- Goldziher, I., *Die Richtungen der islamischen Koranauslegung*, Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1920.
- Gould, Frederick James, *A Concise History of Religion*, 3 vols., London: Watts & Co., 1893-1897.
- Graf, Georg, *Geschichte der Christlichen Arabischen Literatur*, Citta del Vaticano, 1966.
- Graves, Kersey, *The World's Sixteen Crucified Saviors*, New York: The Truth Seeker Company, 1875.
- Guenther, Alan M., 'The Image of the Prophet as Found in Missionary Writings of the Late Nineteenth Century,' *The Muslim World* 90/1, 2000, pp. 43-70.
- Guillaume, A., 'The version of the Gospels used in Medina circa A.D. 700,' *Al-Andalus* 15, 1950, pp. 289-296.
- Gustafon, Richard F., *Leo Tolstoy: Resident and Stranger—A Study in Fiction and Theology*, Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1986.
- Guy, William A. & David Ferrier, *Principles of Forensic Medicine*, London, 1895.
- Haddad, M., 'The Rise of Arab Nationalism: Reconsidered,' *International Journal of Middle Eastern Studies* 26/2, 1994, pp. 201-222.
- , 'Arab Religious Nationalism in the Colonial Era: Rereading Rashīd Riḍā's Ideas on the Caliphate,' *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 117/2, 1997, pp. 253-277.
- , 'The Manarist and Modernism: An Attempt to Fuse Society and Religion,' in Stéphane A. Dudoigno, pp. 55-73.
- Haddad, Robert M., *Syrian Christians in Muslim Society: An Interpretation*, Princeton University Press, 1970.
- Haim, S. G., 'Salama Musa, An Appreciation of his Autobiography,' *Die Welt des Islams* 2/1, 1952, pp. 10-24.
- , 'The Palestine Problem in *al-Manār*,' in A. Cohen & G. Baer, ed., *Egypt and Palestine: a Millennium of Association (868-1948)*, Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute & New York: St. Martin's Press, 1984, pp. 299-313.
- Hamie, Ali, 'Khalil Saadeh: L'homme en l'œuvre: 1857-1934,' unpublished PhD dissertation, Sorbonne, 1986.
- , *al-'Allāma al-Duktūr Khalīl Sa'ādeh, siratuh wā A'māluh*, Beirut: al-Furāt li al-Nashr wā al-Tawzī', 2007.
- Hamzaoui, Rached, *L'Academie de langue arabe du Caire: histoire et œuvre*, Tunis: Université de Tunis, 1975.
- Hartung, Jan-Peter, *Viele Wege und ein Ziel: Leben und Wirken von Sayyid Abu l-Ḥasan 'Ali al-Ḥasani Nadwi (1914-1999)*, Würzburg: Ergon, 2004.
- Hasselblatt, Gunnar, *Herkunft und Auswirkungen der Apologetik Muhammed 'Abduh's (1849-1905), Untersucht an seiner Schrift: Islam und Christentum im verhältnis zu Wissenschaft und Zivilisation*, PhD dissertation, Göttingen, 1968.
- Hilālī, T. al-, *Die Einleitung zu Al-Birūnī's Steinbuch*, Gräfenhainichen: Druck von C. Schulze, 1941.
- Hirschfeld, Magnus, *Sexual Anomalies*, New York: Emerson Books, Inc., 1944.
- Hoffman, Valerie J., 'Annihilation in the Messenger of God: The Development of a Ṣūfī Practice,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 31/3, 1999, pp. 351-369.
- Holtrop, Pieter N., 'The Governor a Missionary? Dutch Colonial Rule and Christianization during Idenburg's Term of Office as Governor of Indonesia (1909-1916),' in Pieter N. Holtrop and Hugh McLeod, eds., *Missions and Missionaries*, Boydell Press, 2000, pp. 142-156.

- Horne, T.H., *An Introduction to the Critical Study and Knowledge of the Holy Scripture*, London, 1818.
- Hourani, A., 'Rashid Riḍā and the Ṣūfī Orders: a Footnote to Laoust,' *Bulletin des Etudes Orientales* 29, 1977, pp. 231-241.
- , 'Sufism and Modern Islam: Raḥsid Riḍā,' *Bulletin d'Etudes Orientales* 27, 1977; reprinted in his *The Emergence of the Modern Middle East*, The Macmillan Press LTD, 1981, p. 90-102.
- , *Arabic Thought in the Liberal Age: 1789-1939*, Cambridge University Press, 1983.
- Huie, William Green, *Bible Application of Freemasonry*, Kessinger Publishing, 1996.
- Huxley, Thomas Henry, *Evidence as to Man's Place in Nature*, London: Williams and Norgate 1863.
- Ibn Warraq, ed., *The Origins of the Kuran*, New York: Prometheus Books, 1998.
- Ibrahim, Ibrahim A., 'Salama Musa: An Essay on Cultural Alienation,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 15, 1979, pp. 346-357.
- Inge, W.R., *Outspoken Essays*, first and second series, 2 vols., Longmans, 1924-1926.
- , *Science and Ultimate Truth*, Fison Memorial Lecture, Longmans, 1926.
- Jadaane, Fehmi, 'Revelation et Inspiration en Islam,' *Studia Islamica* 26, 1967, pp. 23-47.
- Jankowski, J., 'The Eastern Idea and the Eastern Union in Interwar Egypt,' *The International Journal of African Historical Studies* 14/ 4, 1981, pp. 643-666.
- Jeffery, A., 'A Collection of Anti-Christian Books and Pamphlets Found in Actual Use among the Mohammedans of Cairo,' *The Moslem World* 15, 1925, pp. 26-37.
- , 'New Trends in Moslem Apologetics,' in John R. Mott, ed., *The Moslem World of Today*, Hodder and Stoughton Limited: London, 1925, p. 305ff
- Jomier, J., *Le Commentaire Coranique du Manār*, Paris, 1954.
- , 'La raison et l'histoire dans le commentaire du Manar,' *Institut Dominicain d'Etudes Orientales du Caire: Melanges (MIDEO)* 19, 1989, pp. 17-47
- , 'Les raisons de l'adhésion du Sayyed Rashid Riḍā au nationalisme arabe,' *Bulletin de l'Institut d'Égypte* 53, 1973, pp. 53-61.
- Josephus, Flavius and Steve Mason, *Life of Josephus*, Brill, 2003.
- Juynboll, G.H.A., *The Authenticity of the Tradition Literature: Discussions in Modern Egypt*, Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1969.
- Kalafian, Michael, *The Prophecy of the Seventy Weeks of the Book of Daniel*, New York: University of America Press, Inc., 1991.
- Kedourie, E. and Kerr, M.H., 'Afghani and Abduh: Essays on religious Unbelief and Political Activism in Modern Islam,' *Middle East Journal* 21/1, 1967, pp. 118-119.
- Kedourie, E., *Arabic Political Memoirs and Other Studies*, Routledge, 1974.
- 'The American University of Beirut,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 3/1, 1966, pp. 83-84.
- Kelly, William, *Daniel's Seventy Week*, Colorado: Wilson Foundation, n.d.
- Kernkamp, W.J.A., *De Islām en de vrouw: Bijdrage tot de kennis van het Reformisme naar aanleiding van M.R. Riḍā's Nidā lil-Djins al-Latif*, PhD dissertation, Amsterdam, 1935.
- Kerr, M., *Islamic reform: the political and legal theories of Muḥammad 'Abduh and Rashid Riḍā*, Berkeley, etc. 1962.
- Khalidi, Tarif, *The Muslim Jesus: Sayings and Stories in Islamic Literature*, Harvard University Press, 2001.
- Khayat, Hamdi al-, *Gurgi Zaidan: Leben und Werk*, Cologne: Orient Mercur Verlag, 1973.

- Khoury, Philip S., 'Factionalism among Syrian Nationalists during the French Mandate,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 13/4, 1981, pp. 441-469.
- , *Syria and the French Mandate: The Politics of Arab Nationalism 1920-1945*, Princeton University Press, 1987.
- , *Urban notables and Arab Nationalism: the Politics of Damascus 1860-1920*, Cambridge University Press, 1983.
- Koningsveld, P.S. van, 'The Islamic Image of Paul and the Origin of the Gospel of Barnabas,' *Jerusalem Studies in Arabic and Islam* 20, 1997, pp. 200-228.
- , *Snouck Hurgronje en de islam*, Leiden: Documentatiebureau Islam-Christendom-Faculteit der Godgeleerdheid, 1988.
- Köse, Ali, *Conversion to Islam: A Study of Native British Converts*, London and New York, 1996.
- Kramer, Martin, *Islam Assembled: the Advent of the Muslim Congresses*, New York: Columbia University Press, 1986.
- Krarup, Ove Chr., *Auswahl Pseudo-Davidischer Psalmen*, Copenhagen: G. E. C. Gad, 1909.
- Kritzinger, J.N.J., *The Gospel of Barnabas: Carefully Examined*, Pretoria, South Africa, 1975.
- Kudsi-Zadeh, A. Albert, 'Afghani and Freemasonry in Egypt,' *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 92/1, January-March 1972, pp. 25-35.
- Kupferschmidt, Uri M., 'The General Muslim Congress of 1931 in Jerusalem,' *Asian and African Studies* 21/1, 1978, pp. 123-162.
- , *The Supreme Muslim Council: Islam under the British Mandate for Palestine*, Brill, 1987.
- Laffan, Michael, 'Watan and negeri: Mustafa Kamil's 'Rising Sun' in the Malay World,' *Indonesia Circle* 69, 1996, pp. 156-75.
- , 'Mustafa and the Mikado: a Francophile Egyptian's turn to Meiji Japan,' *Japanese Studies* 19/3, 1999, pp. 269-86.
- , 'Making Meiji Muslims: The Travelogue of 'Alī Aḥmad al-Jarjāwī,' *East Asian History* 22, 2001, pp. 145-170.
- Landau, M. Jacob, *The Politics of Pan-Islam: Ideology and Organization*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1990.
- , 'Muslim Opposition to Freemasonry,' *Die Welt des Islams* 36/2, 1996, pp. 186-203.
- Landau, Rom, *Moroccan Journal*, London: Rebert Hale Limited, 1952.
- Laoust, H., *Le califat dans la doctrine de Rashīd Riḍā*, Beirut, 1938.
- , 'Renouveau de l'apologétique missionnaire traditionnelle au XXe siècles dans l'oeuvre de Rashīd Riḍā,' in *Prédication et propagande au Moyen Age: Islam, Byzance, Occident*, Presses Universitaires de France, 1980, pp. 271-279.
- Latourette, Kenneth Scott, *A History of the Expansion of Christianity: The Great Century A.D. 1800-A.D. 1914 in Northern Africa and Asia*, vols. 4-6, London: Eyre and Spottiswoode, 1945.
- Lavan, Spencer, 'Four Christian Arab nationalists: A Comparative Study,' *The Muslim World* 57, 1967, pp. 114-125.
- Lazarus-Yafeh, Hava 'Some Neglected Aspects of Medieval Muslim Polemics against Christianity,' *The Harvard Theological Review* 89/1, 1996, pp. 61-84.
- Lecerf, Jean, 'Shibli Shumayyil, métaphysicien et moraliste contemporain,' *Bulletin d'études Orientales* 1, 1931, pp. 153-86.
- Lehmann, Reinhard G., *Friedrich Delitzsch und der Babel-Bibel-Streit*, Freiburg/Schweiz: Univ.-Verl. & Göttingen: Vandenhoeck und Ruprecht, 1994.

- Leirvik, Oddbjorn, *Images of Jesus Christ in Islam*, Uppsala: Swedish Institute of Missionary Research, 1999.
- , 'History as a Literary Weapon: The Gospel of Barnabas in Muslim-Christian Polemics,' *Studia Theologica* 54, 2001, pp. 4-26.
- L'Émile du dix-neuvième siècle*, Paris: Librairie Internationale, 1869.
- Lewis, Philip, 'Depictions of Christianity within British Islamic Institutions,' in Lloyd Rideon, ed., *Islamic Interpretations of Christianity*, Curzon, 2001, pp. 204-230.
- Lia, Brynar, *The Society of Muslim Brothers in Egypt*, London, 1998.
- Livingston, J.W., 'Muḥammad 'Abduh on Science,' *The Muslim World* 85, 1995, pp. 215-234.
- Llewellyn-Jones, Rosie, *A very ingenious man: Claude Martin in Early Colonial India*, Delhi [etc.]: Oxford University Press, India, 1992.
- Loucel, H., 'Deux articles de la revue 'al-Manar' (1885-1935),' *Orient* 37, 1966 pp. 129-140.
- Lynch, Hollis R., *Edward Wilmot Blyden: Pan-Negro Patriot 1832-1812*, London: Oxford University Press, 1967.
- Maddox, Robert James, *William E. Borah and American foreign policy*, Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1970.
- Magnus, Philip, *Kitchener: Portrait of an Imperialist*, London, 1958.
- Mallard, William, *Language and Love: Introducing Augustine's Religious Thought Through the Confessions Story*, University Park PA: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1994.
- Manen, W.C. van, *Bovennatuurlijke godsdienst*, Sneek: Brouwer, 1876.
- Margoliouth, D.S., 'The use of the Apocrypha by Moslem writers,' *The Moslem World* 5/4, 1915, pp. 404-408.
- Masliyah, Sadok, 'Zahawi: A Muslim Pioneer of Women's Liberation,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 32/3, 1996, pp. 161-171.
- , 'Zahawi's Philosophy and His Views on Islam,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 12/2, 1976, pp. 177-187.
- Mason, Alfred DeWitt and Frederick J. Barny, *History of the Arabian Mission*, with a foreword by W.I. Chamberlain, New York, 1926.
- Massey, Gerald. *The Historical Jesus and the Mythical Christ*, London, 1886.
- Massignon, L., 'Liste des principaux articles de la politique sociale et religieuse publiés dans Al-Manar du Caire, de 1916 a 1920: suivie de quelques notes,' *Revue du Monde Musulman* 38, 1920, pp. 210-216.
- Masters, Bruce, *Christians and Jews in the Ottoman Arab World: The Roots of Sectarianism*, Cambridge University Press, 2004.
- Masud, Muḥammad Khalid et al, ed., *Islamic legal Interpretation: Muftis and Their Fatwas*, Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1996.
- Matin, Usep Abdul. 'The Fatwā of Ahmad al-Syrabāsi on encouraging Muslims to use Wensinck's *Concordance and Handbook*,' an unpublished paper, Seminar Problems and Methods of Islamic Studies: Islam and the West: Their Mutual Relations as reflected in *Fatwā-Literature*, MA programme, Leiden University, 1999.
- Matthews, Weldon C., 'Pan-Islam or Arab Nationalism? The meaning of the 1931 Jerusalem Islamic Congress reconsidered,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 35, 2003, pp. 1-22.
- McAuliffe, Jane D., *Qur'ānic Christians: An Analysis of Classical and Modern Exegesis*, Cambridge University Press, 1991.
- Mehdi, B. T., *The Arabs in America 1492-1977*, New York, 1978.
- Miers, Suzanne, *Slavery in the Twentieth*, Rowman Altamira, 2003.

- Mikhail, Kyriakos, *Copts and Moslems under British Control (Egypt), a collection of facts and a résumé of authoritative opinions on the Coptic question*, London: Smith and Elder, 1911.
- Milner, Alfred, *England in Egypt*, London, 1894.
- Mobini-Kesheh, Natalie, 'The Arabic Periodicals of the Netherlands East Indies,' in *Bijdragen tot de Taal-, Land- en volkenkunde* 152/2, 1996, pp. 236-256.
- Morgan-Wynne, J.E., 'The Holy Spirit and Christian Experience in Justin Martyr,' *Vigiliae Christianae* 38/2, 1984, pp. 172-177.
- Moubarac, Y., *Abraham dans le Coran*, Paris 1958.
- Moucarry, Chawkat, *The Prophet & The Messiah: An Arab Christian's Perspective on Islam & Christianity*, Downers Grove, Illinois: InterVarsity Press, 2001.
- Mourad, Suleiman A., 'A twelfth-century Muslim biography of Jesus,' *Islam and Christian-Muslim Relations* 7/1, 1996, pp. 39-45.
- Mouton, Marie-Renée, 'Le Congrès syrio-palestinien de Genève (1921),' *Relations Internationales* 19, 1979, pp. 313-328.
- Muir, William, *The Life of Mahomet*, 4 vols., London: Smith, Elder, & Co., 1861.
- Murad, Mehr Afroz, *Intellectual Modernism of Shibli Nu'māni: An Exposition of Religious and Political Ideas*, New Delhi, 1996.
- Needham, Joseph, ed., *Science, Religion and Reality*, foreword by Arther Jmaes Balfour, London: Sheldon Press, 1925.
- Newton, Joseph Fort, *Religion of Masonry: An Interpretation*, Kessinger Publishing, 2003.
- Nielsen, Alfred, 'Damascus as a Mission Center,' *The Moslim World* 13/2, 1923, pp. 160-166.
- , 'Difficulties in Presenting the Gospel to Moslems,' *The Moslem World* 19/1, 1929, p. 41-46.
- , 'Moslem Mentality in the Syrian Press,' *The Moslim World* 20/2, 1930, pp. 143-163.
- , 'The Islamic Conference at Jerusalem,' *The Moslim World* 22/4, 1932, pp. 339-354.
- , *Muhammedansk Tankegang i vore Dage*, Copenhagen, 1st ed., 1930
- , 'Comparison,' *The Moslem World* 39/1, 1949, pp. 1-5.
- , 'Colloquial Arabic,' *The Moslem World* 34/3, 1944, pp. 218-219.
- Nispén tot Sevenaer, C. van, *Activite humaine et agir de Dieu: le concept de 'sunan de Dieu' dans le commentaire coranique du Manar*, Beirut: Dar el-Machreq, 1996.
- Nowaihi, Mohamed al-, 'Towards the Reappraisal of Classical Arabic Literature and History: Some Aspects of Taha Husayn's Use of Modern Western Criteria,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 11/2, 1980, pp. 189-207.
- Padwick, Constance E., *Temple Gairdner of Cairo*, London, 1929.
- Palacios, Miguel Asin, *La Escatologia musulmana en la 'Divina Comedia'*, Madrid: Real Academia Española, 1919.
- Patterson, David (ed. and trans.), *The Gospel according to Tolstoy*, Tuscaloosa & London: The University of Alabama, 1992.
- Philipp, Thomas, 'Language, History, and Arab National Consciousness in the Thought of Jurji Zaidan (1861-1914),' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 4/1, 1973, pp. 3-22.
- , 'Women in the Historical Perspective of an Early Arab Modernist (Gurgi Zaidan),' *Die Welt des Islams* 18/1-2, 1977, pp. 65-83.
- , *Gurgi Zaidan: His Life and Thought*, Beirut, 1979.
- , *The Syrians in Egypt 1725-1975*, Stuttgart: Franz Steiner Verlag Wiesbaden GmbH, 1985.

- Phillips, Dennis H., 'The American Missionary in Morocco,' *The Muslim World* 65, 1975, pp. 1-20.
- Pijper, G.F., *Studiën over de geschiedenis van de Islam in Indonesia, 1900-1950*, Leiden: Brill, 1977, pp. 134-141.
- Piper, Otto A., 'The Nature of the Gospel According to Justin Martyr,' *The Journal of Religion* 41/3, July 1961, pp. 155-168.
- Pons, L.F. Bernabe, *El Evangelio de San Bernabe; Un evangelio islamico espanol*, Universidad de Alicante, 1995.
- Porter, Andrew, 'Late Nineteenth-Century Anglican Missionary Expansion: A Consideration of Some non-Anglican Sources of Inspiration,' in Derek Baker, ed., *Studies in Church History* 15, Oxford: Blackwell, 1978, pp. 354-357.
- Prasch, Thomas, 'Which God for Africa: The Islamic-Christian Missionary Debate in Late-Victorian England,' *Victorian Studies* 22, autumn 1989, pp. 51-73.
- Price, J. Randall, 'Prophetic Postponement in Daniel 9 and Other Texts,' in W. R. Willis, John R. Master, eds., *Issues in Dispensationalism*, Chicago: Moody Press, 1994, pp. 132-165.
- Pulcini, Theodore, *Exegesis as Polemical Discourse: Ibn Hazm on Jewish and Christian Scriptures*, Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1998.
- Rabinovich, Itamar, 'The Compact Minorities and the Syrian State, 1918-45,' *Journal of Contemporary History* 14/ 4, 1979, pp. 693-712.
- Ragg, Lonsdale and Laura, trans. & eds., *The Gospel of Barnabas: Edited and Translated from the Italian Manuscript in the Imperial Library at Vienna*, Oxford, 1907.
- Ragg, L. 'The Mohammedan' Gospel of Barnabas,' *Journal of Theological Studies* 6, 1905, pp. 425-433.
- , 'Dante and the Gospel of Barnabas,' *The Modern Language Review* 3/2, 1908, pp. 157-165.
- Redston, D., 'Tolstoy and the Greek Gospel,' *Journal of Russian Studies* 54, 1988, pp. 21-33.
- Reid, Donald M., 'The Syrian Christians and early Socialism in the Arab World,' *International Journal of Middle Eastern Studies* 5, 1974, pp. 177-193.
- , *The Odyssey of Farah Antūn*, Minneapolis & Chicago: Bibliotheca Islamica, INC, 1975.
- , 'Cairo University and the Orientalists,' *International Journal of Middle East Studies* 19/1, 1987, pp. 51-75.
- Renan, Ernest, *Averroes et l'Averroïsme*, Paris, 1852.
- Richter, Julius, *A History of Protestant Missions in the Near East*, 1st edition, New York: AMS Press, 1970 (reprinted from the edition of 1910).
- Ridgeon, L., ed., *Islamic Interpretations of Christianity*, Curzon Press, 2001.
- Rizk, Yunan Labib, 'A Diwan of contemporary life (305): Looking towards the Levant,' in *Al-Ahram Weekly* 449, October 1999.
- , 'Chronicles,' in *Al-Ahram Weekly* 647, July 2003.
- Robertson, John M., *Pagan Christs: Studies in Comparative Hierology*, London, 1903.
- , *Christianity and Mythology*, London, 1900.
- , *Pagan Christs*, 2nd edition, London: Watts, 1911.
- , *Christ and Krishna*, London, 1889.
- Robinson, N., 'Fakhr al-Dīn al-Rāzī and the virginal conception,' *Islamochristiana* 14, 1988, pp. 1-16.
- , 'Sayyid Qutb's Attitude Towards Christianity: Sūra 9.29-35 in *Fi Zilāl al-Qur'ān*,' in Ridgeon, ed., pp. 150-203
- Rorlich, A., *The Volga Tatars: A Profile in National Resilience*, Stanford, California, 1986.



- Rowland, R.M.A., 'The Interpretation of *Ijmā'* in the Writings of Rashīd Riḍā and 'Alī 'Abd ar-Rāziq,' *British Society for Middle Eastern Studies Bulletin*, 1989, pp.487-497.
- Russell, Muna, 'Competing, Overlapping, and Contradictory Agendas: Egyptian Education Under British Occupation, 1882-1922,' *Comparative Studies of South Asia, Africa and the Middle East* 21, 2001, pp. 50-60.
- Ryad, Umar, 'Rashīd Riḍā and a Danish Missionary: Alfred Nielsen and Three *Fatwās* from *Al-Manār*,' *IslamoChristiana* 28, 2002, pp. 97-107.
- , 'Muslim Response to Missionary Literature in Egypt: Varieties of Muslim Apologetics during the Late Nineteenth and Early Twentieth Century,' presented at The International Congress: 'Religious Change in Pluralistic Contexts,' LISOR, Leiden, 28-30 August 2003.
- , '*Al-Manār* Facing Evangelism: Rashīd Riḍā's Responses to the Theological and Social Aspects of Christian Missions,' a paper presented at the conference: 'Social dimension of mission in the Middle East (19th and 20th century),' the Faculty of Protestant Theology at Marburg University and the Fliedner-Foundation Kaiserswerth, Düsseldorf-Kaiserswerth (13th-15th March 2006).
- , 'A Printed Muslim 'Lighthouse' in Cairo: *Al-Manār*'s early years, religious aspiration and Reception,' presented at the conference, 'Sacred Texts and Print Culture—The Case of Qur'ān and Bible of the Orthodox Churches during the 18th and 19th Century,' Central European University, Budapest, 2-4 December 2005.
- , 'Muslim Response to Missionary Activities in Egypt: With a Special Reference to the Al-Azhar High Corps of 'Ulamā (1925-1935),' in Heleen Murre-van den Berg, ed., *New Faith in Ancient Lands: Western Missions in the Middle East in the Nineteenth and Early Twentieth Centuries*, Brill, 2006, pp. 281-307.
- , 'From an Officer in the Ottoman Army to a Muslim Publicist and Armament Agent in Berlin,' *Bibliotheca Orientalis* 63, 2006, pp. 235-268.
- , 'The Dismissal of A.J. Wensinck from the Royal Academy of the Arabic Language in Cairo,' in Willem B. Drees & Pieter Sjoerd van Koningsveld, eds., *The Study of Religion and the Training of Muslim Clergy in Europe: Academic and Religious Freedom in the 21st Century*, Leiden University Press, 2008, pp. 91-134.
- , "'Aussi éphémère que l'abricot", La réponse d'un converti égyptien au christianisme à la publication de l'Évangile de St Barnabé en arabe,' in L. Guirguis, ed., *Conversions religieuses et mutations politiques. Tares et avatars du communautarisme égyptien*, Paris: Editions Non Lieu, 2008, pp. 97-110.
- , 'A Printed Muslim Lighthouse in Cairo al-Manār's Early Years, Religious Aspiration and Reception (1898-1903),' *Arabica: Journal of Arabic and Islamic Studies/Arabica: Revue d'Études Arabes* 56/1, 2009, pp. 27-60.
- Safran, Nadav, *Egypt in search of political Community: An Analysis of the Intellectual and Political Evolution of Egypt, 1804-1952*, Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1961.
- Savory, J.J., 'Matthew Arnold and "The Author of Supernatural Religion": The Background to God and the Bible,' *Studies in English Literature, 1500-1900* 16/4, 1976, pp. 677-691.
- Sayyid, Afaf Lutfi al-, *Egypt and Cromer: A Study in Anglo-Egyptian Relations*, London: John Murray, 1968.
- Schirrmacher, C., 'Muslim apologetics and the Agra debates of 1854: a nineteenth century turning point,' *Bulletin of the Henry Martyn Institute of Islamic Studies* 13/1, 1994, pp. 74-84.
- , *Mit dem Waffen des Gegners: Christlich-muslimische Kontroversen im 19. und 20. Jahrhundert*, Berlin: Schartz Verlag, 1992.

- , 'The Influence of Higher Bible Criticism on Muslim Apologetics in the Nineteenth Century,' in Jacques Waardenburg, ed., *Muslim Perceptions of Other Religions: A Historical Survey*, New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999, pp. 270-279.
- Schulze, Reinhard, *Islamischer Internationalismus im 20. Jahrhundert*, Leiden: Brill, 1990.
- Schumann, C., 'Nationalism, Diaspora and 'civilisational mission': the case of Syrian nationalism in Latin America between World War I and World War II,' *Nations and Nationalism* 10, October 2004, pp. 599-618.
- Schumann, Olaf, *Jesus the Messiah in Muslim Thought*, ISPCK/HMI, 2002.
- , *Der Christus der Muslime: christologische Aspekte in der arabisch-islamischen Literatur*, Cologne/Vienna: Böhlau Verlag, 1988.
- , 'Arabische Schriftsteller begegnen Christus,' in *Hinaus aus der Festung: Beiträge zur Begegnung mit Menschen anderen Glaubens und anderer Kultur*, Hamburg: E.B.-Verlag, 1997, pp. 145-174.
- Scudder, Lewis R., *The Arabian Mission's Story: In Search of Abraham's Other Son*, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing, 1998.
- Segert, Stanislav, 'Crossing the Waters: Moses and Hamilcar,' *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 53/3, July 1994, pp. 195-203.
- Seferta, Yusuf H. R., 'Rashid Riḍā's Quest for an Islamic Government,' *Hamdard Islamicus* 8/4, 1985, pp. 35-50.
- , 'The Prophethood of Muhammad in the Writings of Muḥammad 'Abdu and Rashid Riḍā,' *Hamdard Islamicus* 8/2, 1985, pp. 11-29.
- , 'The Concept of Religious Authority according to Muḥammad 'Abduh and Rashid Riḍā,' *The Islamic Quarterly* 30, 1986, pp. 159-146.
- Shaham, Ron, 'Egyptian Judge in a Period of Change: Qadi Ahmad Muḥammad Shakir, 1892-1958,' *The Journal of the American Oriental Society* 119, 1999, pp. 440-455.
- Shahin, E.E., 'Rashid Riḍā's Perspectives on the West as reflected in *Al-Manār*,' *The Muslim World* 79/2, 1989, pp. 113-132.
- , *Through Muslim Eyes: M. Rashid Riḍā and the West*, Virginia: IIIT, 1994.
- Sharabi, Hisham, *Arab Intellectuals and the West: the Formative years, 1875-1914*, Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Press, 1970.
- Sheikaly, S., 'Prime Minister and Assassin: Butros Ghālī and Wardani,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 13/1, 1977, pp. 112-123.
- Shiel, M.P., ed., *China in Arms: The Final Revision of The Yellow Danger*, with an afterword by John D. Squires, Kettering, Ohio: The Vainglory Press, 1998.
- Sicard, Jules, *Le monde musulman dans les possessions françaises : Algerie, Tunisie, Maroc, Afrique Occidentale Française*, Paris: Larose, 1928.
- Silverstein, Theodore, 'Dante and the Legend of the Miraj: The Problem of Islamic Influence on the Christian Literature of the Otherworld,' *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 11/2, 1952, pp. 89-110.
- Simon, Reeva Spector et al, ed., *The Origins of Arab Nationalism*, Columbia University Press, 1993.
- Sirriyeh, Elizabeth, 'Rashid Riḍā's Autobiography of the Syrian Years, 1865-1897,' *Arabic and Middle Eastern Literatures*, 3/2, 2000, pp. 179-194.
- Skovgaard-Petersen, Jakob, *Defining Islam for the Egyptian State: Muftis and Fatwas of Dar al-Iftā*, Leiden, New York, Cologne: Brill, 1997.
- , 'Portrait of the Intellectual as a Young Man: Rashid Riḍā's *Muḥawarāt al-Muṣliḥ wā al-Muqallid* (1906),' *Islam and Muslim-Christian Relations* 12/1, 2001, pp. 93-104.



- Slomp, Jan, 'The Gospel in Dispute, A Critical Evaluation of the First French Translation with the Italian Text and Introduction of the So-Called Gospel of Barnabas,' *Islamochristiana* 4, 1978, pp. 67-111.
- , 'The pseudo-Gospel of Barnabas, Muslim and Christian Evaluations,' *Bulletin Secretariatus pro non christianis* 9, 1976, pp. 69-76.
- Smith, J. & Haddad Yazbek Y., 'The Virgin Mary in Islamic tradition and commentary,' *The Muslim World* 79/3-4, 1989, pp. 161-187.
- Smith, Charles D., 'The Egyptian Copts: Nationalism, Ethnicity, Definition of Identity for Religious Minorities,' in Maya Shatzmiller, ed., *Nationalism and Minority Identities in Islamic Societies*, McGill-Queen's Press, 2005, pp. 68-69.
- , *Islam and the Search for Social Order in Modern Egypt: A Biography of Muhammad Husayn Haykal*, New York: Sunny Press, 1984.
- Smith, Jane, 'Christian Missionary Views of Islam in the 19th-20th Centuries,' *Islam and Muslim Christian Relations* 9, 1998, pp. 357-373.
- Smith, Morton, *Jesus the Magician: Charlatan or Son of God?*, London, 1978.
- Snouck Hurgronje, Ch., *Het Mekkaansche Feest*, Leiden, 1880.
- , ed., *Actes du XVIIIe Congres International des Orientalistes, Leiden, 7-12 septembre 1931*, Leiden : Brill, 1932.
- Soage, Ana Belèn, 'Rashīd Riḍā's Legacy,' *The Muslim World* 98, 2008.
- Sprenger, A., *Das Leben und die Lehre des Mohammads*, Berlin, 1869.
- St. Augustine: The Literal Meaning of Genesis*, trans. and annotated by John Hammond Taylor, S.J., 2 vols., Newman Press: New York N.Y. / Ramsey, N.J., 1982.
- Steigmann-Gall, Richard, *The Holy Reich: Nazi conceptions of Christianity, 1919-1945*, Cambridge University Press, 2003.
- Steppat, Fritz, 'Nationalismus und Islam bei Mustafa Kamil. Ein Beitrag zur Ideengeschichte der ägyptischen Nationalbewegung,' *Die Welt des Islams* 4/4, 1956, pp. 241-341.
- Stern, S.M. 'Abd-al-Jabbar's account of how Christ's religion was falsified by the adoption of Roman customs,' *Journal of Theological Studies* 19, 1968, pp. 128-185.
- , 'Quotations from Apocryphal Gospels in 'Abd al-Jabbar,' *Journal of Theological Studies* 18, 1967, pp. 34-57.
- Stob, Ralph, 'Stoicism and Christianity,' *The Classical Journal* 30/4, 1935, pp. 217-224.
- Stobart, J.W.H., *Islam and its Founder*, London: Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1876.
- Stone, Alby, 'Bran, Odin, and the Fisher King: Norse Tradition and the Grail Legends,' *Folklore* 100/1, 1989, pp. 25-38.
- Stone, Judith F., 'Anticlericals and *Bonnes Soeurs*: The Rhetoric of the 1901 Law of Associations,' *French Historical Studies* 23/1, 2000, pp. 103-128.
- Strauss, D.F., *Das Leben Jesu*, Bonn, 1835.
- Summer 1914 Edition of the Descriptive Guide of the Nile Mission Press and Other Publications: Suitable for Work in Oriental Lands among Moslems, Jews and Christians*, foreword by Arthur T. Upson (superintendent), Cairo: The Nile Mission Press, 1914.
- Tagher, Jacques, *Christians in Muslim Egypt*, Altenberge: Oros Verlag, 1998.
- Tauber, Eliezer, 'Rashīd Riḍā as Pan-Arabist before the World war I,' *The Muslim World* 79/2, 1989, pp. 102-112.
- , 'Three Approaches, One Idea: Religion and State in the Thought of 'Abd al-Rahman al-Kawakibi, Najib 'Azuri and Rashīd Riḍā,' *British Journal of Middle Eastern Studies* 21/2, 1994, pp.190-198

- , 'Rashīd Riḍā and Faysal Kingdom in Syria,' *The Muslim World* 85, 1995, pp. 235-245
- , 'The Political Life of Rashīd Riḍā,' *Arabist: Budapest Studies in Arabic* 19-20, 1998, pp. 261-272.
- , 'Egyptian Secret Societies, 1911-1925,' *Middle Eastern Studies* 42/4, July 2006, pp. 603-623.
- , 'Rashīd Riḍā and Political Attitudes during the World War I,' *The Muslim World* 85/1-2, 1995, pp. 107-121.
- , 'The Political Life of Rashīd Riḍā,' in K. Devenyi & T. Ivanyi, eds., *Proceedings of the Arabic and Islamic Sections of the 35<sup>th</sup> International Congress of Asian and North African Studies*, Budapest, 1997, pp. 261-272
- The Conferences of Christian Workers among Moslems 1924*, New York: International Missionary Council, 1921.
- The Persia and Turkish Arabia Missions*, London: Church Missionary Society, 1909.
- Thomas, David, 'The Miracles of Jesus in Early Islamic Polemic,' *Journal of Semitic Studies* 39/2, 1994, pp. 221-243.
- Tibawi, A.L., 'From Rashīd Riḍā to Lloyd Gerge,' *Islamic perspectives: Studies in honour of Sayyid Abul A'lā Mawḍūdī*, Leicester 1979, pp. 335-341.
- , 'History of the London Central Mosque and the Islamic Cultural Centre 1910-1980,' *Die Welt des Islams* 1/4, 1981, pp. 193-208.
- Tisdall, W.S., *The Religion of the Crescent or Islam: Its Strength, Its Weakness, Its Origin, Its Influence*, London: Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1895.
- , *The Original Sources of Islam*, London: Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1905
- , *The Sources of Islam: A Persian Treatise*, translated and abridged by Sir William Muir, T. & T. Clark: Edinburgh, 1901
- Toland, John, *Nazarenus or Jewish, Gentile and Mahometan Christianity*, London, 1718.
- Tolstoy, Léon, *Les Évangiles*, translated from the Russian text by T. de Wyzewa and G. Art, Paris: Librairie Académique Didier, 1896.
- Trevett, Christine, *Montanism: Gender, Authority and the New Prophecy*, Cambridge University Press, 2002, pp. 62-69.
- Troll, Christian W., 'New Light on the Christian-Muslim Controversy of the Nineteenth and Twentieth Century,' *Die Welt des Islams* 34, 1994, pp. 85-88.
- Turton, William Harry, *The Truth of Christianity: Being an Examination of the More Important Arguments for and Against Believing in that Religion*, London: Jarrold & Sons, 1902.
- Upson, A.T., 'A glance at Al-Manar,' *The Moslem World* 4, 1914, pp. 392-395
- , 'Al-Manar as open court,' *The Moslem World* 5, 1915 pp. 291-295.
- Urquhart, D., *The Spirit of the East, Illustrated in a Journal of Travels through Roumeli during an eventful period*, 2 vols., London: Henry Colbourn, 1838.
- Valente, G., 'A finite universe?' Riemannian geometry and the Modernist theology of Ernest William Barnes,' *British Journal for the History of Science* 38, 2005, pp. 197-249.
- Voll, John O., 'Abduh and the Transvaal Fatwa: The Neglected Question,' in Tamara Sonn, ed., *Islam and the Question of Minorities*, Atlanta, Georgia: Scholars Press, 1996, pp. 27-40.
- Waardenburg, Jacques, *Muslims and Others*, Berlin & New York: Walter de Gruyter, 2003.
- , 'European Civilization and Islam in History,' in Joergen S. Nielsen, ed., *The Christian-Muslim Frontier: Chaos, Clash or Dialogue*, London and New York: I.B. Tauris Publishers, 1998, pp. 5-23.

- Walther, Wiebke, 'Camil Sidqi az-Zahawi: Ein irakischer Zindiq im ersten Drittel dieses Jahrhunderts,' *Oriens* 34, 1994, pp. 430-450.
- Ware, Lewis Beier, *Jurji Zaydan: The Role of Popular History in the Formation of a New Arab World-View*, PhD Dissertation, Princeton University, 1973.
- Weismann, Itzchak, 'Between Šūfi Reformism and Modernist Rationalism: A Reappraisal of the Origins of the Salafiyya from the Damascene Angle,' *Die Welt des Islams* 41/2, 2001, pp. 206-237.
- Weiss, Holger, 'German Images of Islam in West Africa,' *Sudanic Africa* 11, 2000, pp. 53-93.
- Wensinck, A.J., 'Ibrahim,' in *Encyclopedia of Islam*, II, 432a.
- Werff, Lyle L. Vander, *Christian Mission to Muslims: the Record*, Calif: the William Carey Library, South Pasadena, 1977.
- Whealey, Alice, *Josephus on Jesus: the testimonium Flavianum controversy from late Antiquity to Modern Times*, New York, N.Y., [etc.]: Lang, 2003.
- Widmer, G. & G. Kampffmeyer 'Übertragungen aus der neuarabischen Literatur. II Der iraqische Dichter Gamil Sidqi az-Zahawi aus Baghdad,' *Die Welt des Islams* 17/1-2, 1935, pp. 1-79.
- Wiegiers, G.A., 'Muḥammad as the Messiah: Comparison of the Polemical Works of Juan Alonso with the Gospel of Barnabas in Spanish,' *Bibliotheca Orientalis* 52, 1995, pp. 245-292.
- , 'The Persistence of Mudejar Islam? Alonso de Luna (Muḥammad Abū l-'Asī), the *Lead Books*, and the *Gospel of Barnabas*,' *Medieval Encounters* 12/3, 2006, pp. 498-518.
- Wherry, E.M. et al, eds., *Islam and Missions*, New York and others: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1911.
- Wilson, J. Christy, 'The Epic of Samuel Zwemer,' *The Moslem World* 42, 1953, pp. 79-93.
- , *Flaming Prophet: The Story of Samuel Zwemer*, New York: Friendship Press, 1970.
- , *Apostle to Islam: A Biography of Samuel M. Zwemer*, Michigan: Baker Book House, Grand Rapids, 1952.
- Wissa, Karim, 'Freemasonry in Egypt 1798-1921: A Study in Cultural and Political Encounters,' *Bulletin of British Society for Middle Eastern Studies* 16/2, 1989, pp. 143-161.
- Wood, Simon, 'The Criticisms of Christians and the Arguments of Islam: An Annotated Translation of Muḥammad Rashīd Riḍā's *Shubuhāt al-Nasara wa Hujaj al-Islam*,' unpublished PhD thesis, Temple University, May 2004.
- , *Christian Criticisms, Islamic Proofs: Rashīd Riḍā's Modernist Defense of Islam*, Oxford: OneWorld, 2008.
- Ya'or, Bat, *Islam and Dhimmitude. Where Civilizations Collide*, Cranbury, NJ: Fairleigh Dickinson University Press/Associated University Presses and Lancaster, 2002.
- Young, Edward J., *The prophecy of Daniel: a Commentary*, Grand Rapids, Mich.: Eerdmans, 1949.
- Zahniser, A.H.M., 'The Forms of *Tawaffā* in the Qur'an, a Contribution to Christian-Muslim dialogue,' *The Muslim World* 79, 1989, 14-24.
- Zouanat Zakia (tans.), *Paroles d'or Kitāb al-Ibrīz, enseignements consignés par son disciple Ibn Mubārak al-Lamti*, du Relié, 2002.
- Zubaida, Sami, 'Islam and Nationalism: Continuities and Contradictions,' *Nations and Nationalism* 10/4, 2004, pp. 407-420.
- Zwemer, S., 'A Moslem Apocryphal Psalter,' *The Moslem World* 5/4, 1915, pp. 399-403.

———, *The Disintegration of Islam*, New York and others: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1916.

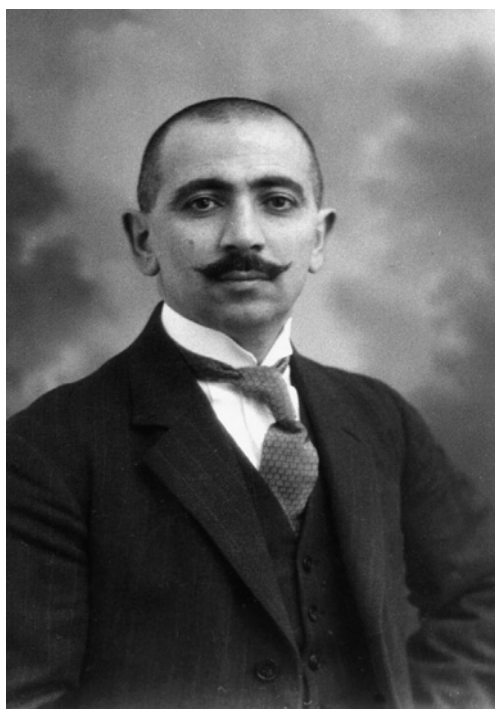
*Internet Websites*

- [http://www.acwitness.org/essays/bkup/16\\_crucified\\_saviors/index.html](http://www.acwitness.org/essays/bkup/16_crucified_saviors/index.html); accessed 11 July 2006
- [http://www.shweir.com/ain\\_el\\_assis.htm](http://www.shweir.com/ain_el_assis.htm); accessed 20 November 2006.
- [http://www.islamway.com/?iw\\_s=Lesson&iw\\_a=view&lesson\\_id=6752](http://www.islamway.com/?iw_s=Lesson&iw_a=view&lesson_id=6752) accessed 24 November 2006.
- <http://cofe.anglican.org/worship/liturgy/1928/>; accessed 4 April 2007
- [http://www.sjsu.edu/upload/course/course\\_1507/195\\_Christian\\_and\\_Islamic\\_Modernism.pdf](http://www.sjsu.edu/upload/course/course_1507/195_Christian_and_Islamic_Modernism.pdf); accessed 18 April 2007
- <http://www.islamonline.net/arabic/history/1422/07/article18.SHTML>; accessed 30 April 2007
- <http://www.alifta.com/Fatawa/fatawaDetails.aspx?BookID=2&View=Page&PageNo=1&PageID=1658> accessed 20 April 2007
- <http://www.eglise-reformee-mulhouse.org/el/el2.htm>; accessed 25 May 2007
- <http://www.the-good-way.com/arab/pdf/abook/rb4905a.pdf>; accessed 7 June 2007
- <http://www.callforall.net/data/literature/lectures/mabaheth/>; accessed 7 June 2007
- <http://www.alnour.com/response/mabaheth/mabaheth1.htm>; accessed 7 June 2007
- <http://www.syria-wide.com/Abass.htm>; accessed 23 July 2007.
- [http://www.raya.com/site/topics/article.asp?cu\\_no=2&item\\_no=211031&version=1&template\\_id=24&parent\\_id=23](http://www.raya.com/site/topics/article.asp?cu_no=2&item_no=211031&version=1&template_id=24&parent_id=23); accessed 3 August, 2007
- [http://www.infidels.org/library/historical/ernest\\_renan/life\\_of\\_jesus.html](http://www.infidels.org/library/historical/ernest_renan/life_of_jesus.html); accessed 20 August 2007
- [http://www.lexilogos.com/document/renan/life\\_jesus.htm](http://www.lexilogos.com/document/renan/life_jesus.htm); accessed 20 August 2007
- <http://www.ftarchives.net/cassels/bio.htm>; accessed 15 September 2007 <http://www.da3wah-4-islam.com/vb/showthread.php?t=279>; accessed 22 October 2007
- <http://www.ahmadiyya.ws/text/books/others/misc/ulamaegyptdeathjesuschristfatwa.shtml>; accessed 7 January, 2008
- [http://www.moe.edu.kw/schools-2/mobarak\\_alkabeer/moqararatschools/boys/Wchool/nbza.asp](http://www.moe.edu.kw/schools-2/mobarak_alkabeer/moqararatschools/boys/Wchool/nbza.asp); accessed 25 January 2008
- [http://www.islamway.com/?iw\\_s=Article&iw\\_a=view&article\\_id=2252](http://www.islamway.com/?iw_s=Article&iw_a=view&article_id=2252); accessed 4 February 2009
- <http://www.followers-of-the-message.com/site/modules.php?name=News&file=topics&topic=7>
- <http://www.ahlalhdeeth.com/vb/attachment.php?attachmentid=17722&d=1123834498>; accessed 4 February 2009
- <http://www.ahlalhdeeth.com/vb/showthread.php?t=68951>; accessed 4 February 2009

## APPENDICES



APPENDIX I



Zakī Hishmat-Bey Kirām  
A photo from family archive, no date







د. زكي كيرام


**Dr. ZEKI KIRAM**  
Berlin NW6, Karlstraße 10  
Fernruf: Sammel-Nr. D 1 Norden 1580  
Telegramm-Adresse: Zekiram Berlin  
Code: Rudolf Mosse

Berlin, 14 نوفمبر 1929

استاذ الاساتذة وسنام الجهادية منار الاسلام ومرشد المسلمين سيدى السيد رشيد رضا

حفظه الله آمين

السلام عليكم ورحمة الله وبركاته وبعده مرسل لفنييلتكم طيه نبذة عن احتياج ثان من اليهود  
الالمان ضد الحركة الصهيونية و هذه الاحتجاجات منى سلاح يهودى نستعمله ضد الصهيونية المعلومه لدينا  
واظن ان به نفع كبير لمديعاتنا لكونه من اتوال اليهود وانفسهم وخير السلاح هو سلاح العدو نفسه و اسبوع  
القادم سأقدم لكم كلمات خلدلة لليهود انفسهم وقد اتصت بجمعياتهم الليبيرال الذين يخاريون الصهيونية  
والاسبوع القادم الامل ان يكون لي موقف عندهم يرفع الرأس و انتى وضعت كتاب بشأن السياسة الاوربية  
الشرقية وخصوصا الفلسطينية والصهيونية وانتى انتظر اليوم نتائج مقررات و تحقيقات الهيئة التحقيقية المرسله من لوندوا  
لادرجها بالكتاب ليكون كاملا و لا شك لي بأن الله حليف الحق والحق حليف الاتحاد والاتحاد حليف النصر و اتحادنا  
الذى ظهر على أثر اعتداء الصهيونيين سيتوج ان شاء الله بالنصر وهو المعين لنصرة دينه القويم

سيدى، ان اطلاعى الواسع وصلاحية تدنى المبنى على العلم والمعرفة يخولونى بالقيام بحركة قوية  
فى سبيل الاسلام والشعوب الاسلامية والعربية وانتى اعلم اعظم حرب عوان تقوم به لقتل مديعات الصهيونية  
والمسيحية و الجزويتية و الماسون هي نقل كتب منتخبة من اقلام هذه الطوائف بذاتها التى هى السلاح الماضى  
لمحاربة العدو وقتله به ويوجد كتب سهام مسمومة فتاكة وهذه الكتب دفعت عليها هذه الجمعيات الثلاث كترنفسها  
من بين ايدى القراء وتفتح طبعها لما بها من السموم القتالة ولكن حالتى تطابق المثل العامى " "  
"الحين بصيرة واليد قصيرة" و الله لو كان لي ثروة لصرفتها فى سبيل الدفاع عن حقوقنا ولكن ان لي هذا و دريهماتى  
القليلة لايسمحون لذلك ووقتى الذى مضى ان اسرف منه الكثير لاكتساب المعاش لصد باب الاحتياج  
الامل من الله ان يقوى جمعياتنا ويرشدنا للطريق القويم لتقوم بالاعمال التى لايد منها والتى  
هى لباب الحركة الاسلامية

عذا وارجوكم ان تتفضلوا بقبول هذا الاصح الذى يحترمكم اجل الاحترام وادامكم الله

المخلص



يكنتم ارسال كلمة الود المرفوقه طيه خبره التى زوها من اسبوع

عندك الكرام عبد رضى مشددا سموم وضمير القالات التى

Letter to Ridā, Berlin (14 November 1929)

DR. ZEKI H. KIRAM-BEY  
Berlin-Tempelhof  
Manteuffelstrasse 33 a  
تلفون 1447 و 65 65

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

سيدى واستاذى ومرشدى وبنارى السيد العلامة الاكبر السيد رشيد رضا حفظه الله آمين  
السلام عليكم ورحمة الله وبركاته ارجوكم عفوا اننى تأخرت بتقديم الشكر الواجب لما اهدىتموه  
نحو ولدكم هذا وذلك لظولة ساحتى في اوروبا والاشغال المتراكمة التى وجدت بها ينتظارى . اننى دوما  
لافضالكم ذاكر وسمو اخلائكم شاكر ابقاكم الله مرشدا للمسلمين ومبيرا للحق المبين ومعاظدا لخدام الدين .  
وبمعهه قد كنت سلمت حسب اشارتكم يوم كنت في القاهرة أى منذ ٢٩ يوما مذكرة الادوية الى  
الاخ عاصم اندى ثم الكتيب الذى ترجمته من الالمانية الى العربية . وقد رجوت ان يطبع المذكرة عقب العيد  
بباشرة وبينت لحضرتة اهميتها ومستجلبتها . وقد وعلنى الى اليوم من احد طالبى الادوية مكتوبين وتلخرف  
يطلب اخبارى له تاريخ ارسال الاوراق والادوية . فعليها اضطريت ان اكتب كل شىء بهدى واستبدل حروف  
الطبع بكليشة . وآن خلصت الكليشة وادعتها المطبعة وغدا تخرج من المطبعة وادعها بعد غد  
للمعمل ليلصق الاوراق على الادوية ويرسلها حالا . وساقدم لساحتكم منها شىء ربما اتكن من خدمتكم حتى  
في الصفة . فلهذا ليس لزم بصدور طبعة المذكرة المذكورة .  
امل ان تكونوا وجدتم الرسالة المترجمة طبق المرغوب وكم تترتم ادخالها في المتار الفريد .  
وبمعهه تلتطفوا بطبعها كرسالة مستقلة .

اما البرنامج الذى تكلفنا عنه ان شاء الله ساعمله واقدمه لتصد بكم عليه أو تصحيحه وبمعهه تمحيه .  
ارجو من ساحتكم ان تذكروا بأرسال رسالة امير الهبان التى بين فيها اسباب تأخر مسلمين لانه  
لم يذم على الامير الجزء الاول منها وقت وجوده في برلين واخذ منه احد الطلبة ولهم برجعه كما هى عادة  
الذين استشارنى . وكذلك ارجوكم ان ترسلولى كتاب يحوى بمحة نبينا محمد صلى الله عليه وسلم واعماله  
كصورة تأسيس الدين وتوطيد اركان حكمته لاننى الآن مشغول بتحرير رسالة عنوانها محمد بالالمانية  
ربما اجد في الكتاب الذى ترسلونه شىء لا اعرفه أو سهوت عنه واكون لكم من الشاكرين . اما ثمن الكتاب  
فاننى اقدمه بكل شكر وامتنان . فوالله النبوى عنده وليس به شىء يقيد غيائى ولله الحمد ان يكون كتاب  
صلى الله عليه وسلم ختاماً ارجوكم ان تنكسوا موا يقبول فائق احترام

ولدكم الاصفى ومحترمكم الاكبر

الشيخ زكي كرام

برلين ١٩ محرم ١٣٥٠

موافق ٥ يونية ١٩٣١

عنوان لجديد اعلامه . والمنازل الى العنوان  
القديم . المرجو ان تاروهم لتقريب العنوان

Letter to Ridā, Berlin (5 June 1931)

DR. ZEKI H. KIRAM-BEY

Berlin-Tempelhof  
Manteuffelstrasse 33a  
Tel. G 5 Südring 1447

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ وَالْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ

بيننا وبيننا ورثنا العلامة الشيخ السيد رضا حفظه الله آمين  
 السلام على فضلكم ورحمة الله وبركاته. وبعد  
 القيت ضاماً بعض المحاضرات الاسلامية وكنت عنها الوايد التي كان لا  
 محذون بالمحاضرة كتابة حنة ، وقد فني الله لنا اذان الصائم عم اتر  
 لهذه المحاضرات ورغم ان الحكومة الحاضرة حكومة ترفض كل شيء غير سيم  
 فالله وفقني بحسب الاسبوب الذي الامت اياه من عنده لتوسيع نوره العمل  
 وجدت من كبار الصائم من يجهد القاء محاضرات قيمة عم الاجبا عمات  
 الاسلامية ، ولذنب ان الق محاضرة عن المرأة بالاسلام . وقد كتب  
 لي الاخ الاير حبيب قبل القاء المحاضرة بموجب الاطلاع على  
 كتيب صدر منكم تحت عنوان « الالجنس اللطيف » او ما اشبهه وهذا  
 طيب ذلك الكتاب منكم ، وها انا عملاً بنصحة الاير اخي العزيز  
 ارجوكم ان تتكلمون بهذا الكتاب مع كل من هدية لتوا قيمة .

انما رأيت اقبالا عجباً مع تعاليم الاسلام وانني تحققت ان تأخرات  
 الاسلام في اوردية هو اولاً من عنم من اسلوب التفهم لأن لكل محيط  
 عقلية خاصة واصول خاصه وثانياً تفضل بعض الاطفال بعمل دعواتهم بصحة فيظنون  
 انهم يخدمون الاسلام وفي الحقيقة يفرزون بالاسلام من حيث لا يعولده ومعلوم  
 الذي تظنوا ان كان المتاجرة بالاسلام وثالثاً بعض الدعوات الفاسدة  
 كدعوات البابية والبرائمية والاحمدية . فجميع هؤلاء ينتشرون وينشرون  
 تعاليمهم الفاسدة في روع الشباب الاسلام قاتلهم الله - وانا بعض  
 الاختبارات دبت في روع النشاط وبقت ابي الال .

اسئله التوفيق وفقلكم الدعاء  
 كنت استنكم رسالة ترجمتها عن الاطانية والاسف الي اليوم ترجموها الى الال  
 ان ترسل مع كتاب المرأة الذي نصحتي الومر حفظه الله بمطالعة  
 ختاماً ارجوكم ان تتكلموا يقول فالعده اهداس وتقدر واعى بانني مخلص  
 وفهاوتم بالاسلام  
 زين ٤ ذي الحجة ١٣٥١  
 صلحام واتم بخير

Letter to Ridā, Berlin (3 Dhū al-Hijja 1351/ circa 1933)



DR. ZEKI H. KIRAM

Berlin, Tempelhof  
Mantaußelstr. 33a

سيدى العلامة الاكبر والمرشد الاعظم واستاذنا المحترم السيد رشيد رضا  
نفعتنا الله بعلمه وجهاده آمين .  
السلام عليكم ورحمة الله وبركاته . ومابنى تداؤ الجنس اللطيف واستقيمت من هذا المنهل  
الحذب امد الله بحياتكم .

من خصوص الكتاب الذى اخبرتمونى عنه

Fr. Andrea , Mohammed,  
sein Leben und seine Glaube

ارسلت لاشتره وساطالمه بكل كلماته وحروفه واشهركم عنه . ولا اعرف المحرر ولا اظن انه مستشرق .  
اظن اننى اعلمتكم انه صدر كتاب نيف الف صفحة بالقطع الكبير ضعف ابعاد صفحة المنار . تحت عنوان  
الانقلابات التاريخية العالمية منذ ٢٠٠٠ سنة . وقد حرر هذا المجلد الضخم ٣٦ محرر من اقطاب بحرين اوربة  
وكتاتنا من جملتهم . انا اعترف باننى لا اعد من اقطاب البحرين واننى شئيل حتى لا يرانى احد ولوكنت واقف  
اباه . ولكننى والحمد لله من اقطاب اهل الايمان واليهجرين بالدين الاسلامى . وقد كتبت بهذا المجلد  
الضخم الانقلاب الذى جاء به محمد عليه الصلاة والسلام وهيمته التحرير المستولة اقرب بان الموضوع الذى  
حرره خادىمك كاتب هذه الاحرف هو احسن موضوع فى المجلد . وقد كتبت هذا الموضوع تحت عنوان  
" محمد رسول الله " . واننى درجت فيه الحرب قبل الاسلام . وقتتخذ وكيفية الدعوة وسبب امتشاق الحسام  
والاساسات التى تستند عليها التعاليم الاسلامية واقوال بعض كبار اوربة بالاسلام واهمية التعمية والحجر  
الاسود وكيف تنظر اليه المسلمين اعتقادا وثقافة وروح ومعنى الصلاة والحج والهجرة بمعاملات وجيزة علمية  
فلسفية فالقارى ليرى تعظيم او مقال او عمل مبالغ به بل يقرأ تاريخ وحقائق وعلم وكذا لا يجد من المنجزات  
التي والحالة هذه لا يمكننا انماطر اثباتها الا بالاعتقاد فانه يقرأ بحلقها المنجزات العلمية التى لا يمكن جرحها .  
فاننى والحمد لله قد وضعت باعظم اثر صدر فى اوربة وتطالعة ملايين العلماء والمنتهمين للاطلاع على  
الانقلابات التاريخية واخذ درس منها كلمة تخليد واسئل الله ان يرسل لى من يمد ازرى ويحاضرنى لاتوفى لوضع  
امثال هذا الاثر التاريخى فيكون درعا يقي صدامعا لاجاب والمبشرين .

وقد اتى الى عندى احد البروفسورات يستأذنى القاء الموضوع بالراديو فرحمتبه وهو يرى آن الفرصة  
ليلغيه . فهذا البروفسور يسمى فيتسر قد كان سجين طويله فى افريقيا . واليوم البلاد فى هياج وضد كل شىء شو  
مسيحى ولذلك لا اعرف كيف ومتى يتوق لالقاء المحاضرة ومتى انها اخبركم عن ماتوقه الجرائد .  
ولى نية ان اتوسع بالموضوع وترجيه للانكليزية لانه وجد هنا اقبا لان علماء اوربة يسر كل مسلم صحيح .  
والله لو لا اضطرارى لتحصيل الماش والكيد ليلا ونهارا لتحصيل المحيى لخصرت جميع اعمالى للتبشير لان المتغلبين  
على الاسانم كثيرين والالاقاب الضخمة والاسماء الغضة تجمل المشرفين فى خيرة حيث لا يعملون من هو الصادق .  
والاوربيين ايضا احتاروا بامرهم لما يسمعون من تعاليم الاسلامية التى ينصها كل متطف على قدر عقله .  
كنت القيت محاضرة وصار لها رنين جيد بمد المحاضرة تام احد المستمعين وقال الامر الذى سمعناه من فلان

( هنا معنى احد المسلمين . . . ) ان التعاليم الاساذمية هى لاتوافق الاالحرب القاظنين بالصحراء  
واما نحن الانان لاتوافقنا الا الافكار الالمانية القديمة . . . فانا يقميت بحيرة هل اسخط بهذا المتطفل  
او ماذا افعل . ولكننى لاجل ان ارفع كل نزاع قلتله انت فهمت خلط واجبت على مقاله يهدوء .  
تسمعون لاشك اسما شنة جماعة اسلامية ومعهد اسلامى وثقافة اسلامية وورود والله كلها كذب  
ومرتزق لعدم الرغبة فى السعى والكذب لتسبب الماش بالطرق المشروعة . مع كل هذا اسئل الله ان  
يهدى المسلمين ويهدينا معهم .

ختامنا ارجوكم ان تتكرموا بقبول فائق احترام

اشيخ الاصغر ومجلمك الاخير

برلين ٨ محرم ١٣٥٢

رَدِّقِرْ  
رَدِّقِرْ

Mr. ZEKI KIRAM  
Berlin NW6, Karlstraße 10  
Telefon: Sammel-Nr. D 1 Norden 1580  
Telegramm-Adresse: Zekiram Berlin  
Code: Rudolf Moese

Berlin, den ٩ أكتوبر

سيدي ومحترمي منار الاسلام والمسلمين السيد رشيد رضا حفظه الله آمين  
السلام عليكم ورحمة الله وبركاته اما بعد يقدم لسماحتكم طيه مقالتيين من اهم ما وجدته بالجرائد  
الالمانية التي اتتبعها واطالعتها بكل دقة وامعان لانتم من الوقوف على *المرئى* *النهلم* رأى ارباب السياسة .  
والدفاع عن حقوقنا بموجبها واننى بذات الوقت ارسلتها الى الفتح الشراء والمقصود ايضا الحوادث  
للجميع بأسرع ما يمكن لنقابل الصهيونيين والاعداء الباقين الذين يصرفون الملايين لازاعة الاخبار لجميع الجرائد  
لمخالفة الرأي العام . ونحن وللأسف ليس لدينا من المال الاشعورنا الاسلامى وقلينا العربى الشرقى اللذان  
يتخبطان بالذب عن حقوقنا المهضومة .  
ارجو من فضيلتكم ان تنفضلوا بقبول فائق احترام اخيكم الاصغر وموعدا ان شاء الله البريد القادم  
ودتم درعا منيعا للاسلام والمسلمين

اخيكم الذى بجلكم

الرسور  
رَدِّقِرْ

Kirām to Ridā, Berlin (9 October, no year)



APPENDIX II

٤ أكتوبر ١٩٢٢

عنواني :

Adil Zuytar,  
133, Boulevard Bessé 14e  
Paris, France

سيدى و مولاي الأستاذ الكبير :

اعرض انه لا بد من ان يظهر لي انكم غنيا تقراءون هذا الكتاب ما كنت عزت عليه  
من ان اذهاك في المطالعة والتفكير لا يخرج من الاستعداد لطبقه بالصادق كتاب في التاريخ  
لا اني كنت سرحنت لكم هذا الامر في كتاب استسقى لكم فضل مستبده على ما انتكر و جوتكم  
ضيقا له على ما يستلزم ان يكون له في الاستسقى من ان يستغنى به بتاريخ الأمم  
الشرقية القديمة فطر الانبياء كنت اود ان اشرح في السيرة عن هذه الأمم ثم عن اليونانية  
والرومان والعرب... الخ. وقد كتبت بعدئذ من المجلد على ما يزيد على ثمة مجلد فخرتم  
فيها لأمم الشرقية القديمة استتبرا من مكينات وعمد ولندن وباريس بعد محاورات امتدت  
هولدا كالمطء ، غير اني لسان مرقة في انك كيف امرني الى تبرك و اقترح على بالانظار  
الارو و بارزورس المحرقه في اهدى مما معاها ، فلم اقدر على مخالفة فأقلت عن غلطتي  
الساقه على مفضل دولتي و وجه مطاربارس وانسبت الى الفرع المحرقه من مما ستره  
قيد عام و اهدى. و بعد ان لم يسترد من ان الاول و و فخطي الى تقالي في فوجي و انقضت  
مده السلطة التي تقرب من اربعه سنين فحدثت الحادثة شيئا من علم الاجتماع ، غير اني  
تذكرت بان المهوم فخرت بان يغفلوا كان وعد في مقدمته كتابا من تطور الأمم الذي  
ترجمه من الفرن و تم ثمانية سنين ايضا الى العربية كتابا كبيرا فخرين للعدالة جوتنا فلوكون  
و كما روع الياسر و روع الاستمكية كما اني تذكرت بان انك رايه مات قبل ان  
يخبروه ، فخرتني بان اترجم اهدى في حصة السلطة و اني حصة حصة  
للطاقة القادرة ، و بعد ان قرأت اهدى بالانفة الفرن دية و رايه في نفسه فارتج  
على ترجمتها باثبات في ترجمته اهدى و صور و و السياسة ، الا اني بعد ان ترجمته  
منه ما يقرب من اربعه صحيفة افهني اهدى اهدى فاد صفا بان اهدى كتاب يردت  
اخذ على لغة ترجمته وان الاول في ان اتركه و اشرح في ترجمته روع الاستمكية  
مختصة لما اشار به فخرت في ترجمته روع الاستمكية وان كانت مما انك هذا  
الكتاب فخرت صحيفة اي تريد على مما انك كتاب روع في المعاهد و سرت لأمم  
ثمة صحيفة لان مجموع مما انك هذا الكتاب مما ارعبت صحيفة فخرت دية ،  
فخرت في الاهدى من ستر نوحه اي بعد من و اربيه ايضا ، ان كتاب روع الاستمكية  
صو كتاب روي من هذا الاستمكية و هذا هو صو كتابا بحيث من علم اهدى و علم الترمية >

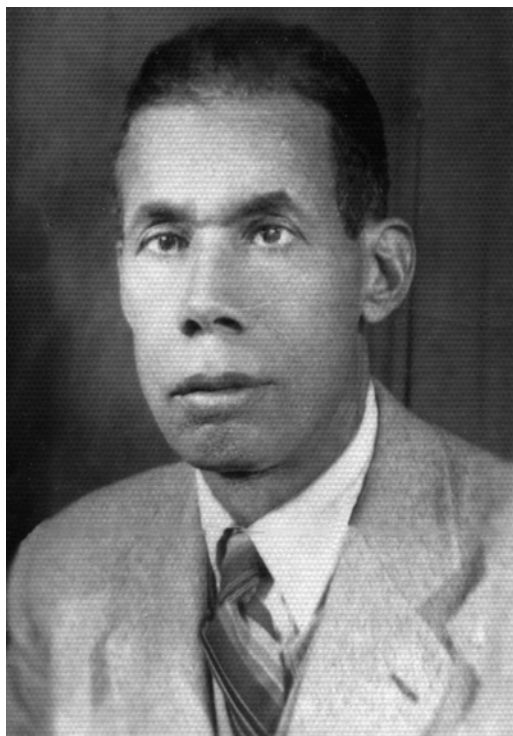
لا و علم الاصل و انما اهدى ان اهدى  
الاراء الملتزمه جوتنا فلوكون و روي اني  
الطرفة و فخرتني بان الطبع اهدى و الا انك روي  
عن ترجمته فخرتني بان و جوتنا انك روي  
اعلم هذا العلم فاني اهدى ان فخرتني بان  
انك روي هذا العلم فاني اهدى ان فخرتني بان  
ما ترجمته و انك روي اهدى ان فخرتني بان  
ثم ترجمته و انك روي اهدى ان فخرتني بان  
انك روي هذا العلم فاني اهدى ان فخرتني بان  
انك روي هذا العلم فاني اهدى ان فخرتني بان  
انك روي هذا العلم فاني اهدى ان فخرتني بان

عادل زويتار  
عادل زويتار

Letter from 'Adel Zu'aytar to Ridā, Paris (24 October 1922)



APPENDIX III



Taqī al-Dīn al-Hilālī

Photo: Family archive, Meknes (Morocco)

MUHAMMAD ABDUL KADIR  
EL-HILALI.  
@ Dorah,  
P. O. F A O, (Iraq),  
(Persian Gulf)

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

محمد بن عبد القادر الهلالي  
بالدوره  
بوسته فاو (العراق)

مكة  
المسودة في ١١ ربيع الاول سنة ١٣٤٦

بسمه  
رسيد رضا رافت مساعده

الى حضرة التامل الامام العبد وحيد العصر السيد السلام عليكم ورحمة الله وبركاته

اما بعد فقد بلغني هواكم الكريم مشرني كثيرا ما استعملت عليه من الكلام الحسن وفتكم بي ايها الاله  
المختير لكم اخلاقكم وكمال فضلكم والدمج محبتنا لكم خالصة بوجهه الكريم وعقبتم على مشايخنا الطيف  
من الشيعي واهل من نسل المصطفى لان لم الفصل اشاري السابق لكم ولي عذرت في ذلكم وهو  
خوف من الوثايات بين الاخوان وخوف لحاق ضرر ريشوي ايضا من غضاب بعض الناس ومردى  
ان بعض الناس ما زال يفتن في الدرزة والفراب لمشيخ بمعاينة بن حسن حتى حشش صدره من تمك تنفق  
منكم تقطون الفرائي وماخذون بقول وانكم تحو قولون سوفاة المسيح وغير ذلك ثم جاءت  
سالة المسيح انه جال ضعفا على بائنه وكان يسوء في ذلك فاشرت مرة بلطف الى الشيخ عبد الله  
ان القول بوفاة المسيح مروى عن ابن عباس وغيره رواه ابن جرير ثم رجعت المسالة في ابن جرير  
فرايت كما قلت فارت ان اصل الكتاب من ليرة فيمنعت بعض الاحوان مخافة ان يظن في انا ايضا اعقد  
ذلك ثم شرعت ابن مردك في احاديث الدجال بلطف فوجدت غيرة قد ملا قلبه وانما احب ان يفتي  
مرئيتكم ومكانتكم العلمية محفوظة عنده وعند سائر علماء نجد قد نكتم الذي جعلني على ما كتبت لكم  
وما حبيت ان افترج عليكم تكليفا كعدم في مسالة الدجال تكليفا ينطبق مع فهم الناس ويرضيمهم  
ولذلك كتبت ونظرتكم اوسع ومن الاخبار الغضوبية ان الشيخ عبد الله انظر طلب من الشيخ عبد الله تلبية  
محمد يكون فيه مرتب وافر ينمي عن اجرة الاجرة على السلاة طولوه العضوية فيهم في المراقبة فلو اذاع  
وجد معنى ذلك انه يقوم بالافتاء على مذهب الشافعية فناء بهما الحمل الثقيل وعامجه ايا ما فلم ...  
فاستحال فاقبل وقد بصنت جزء اورد على الشيعي وغيرت فيه العبارة من الخطاب بصيغة الجمع  
الى الاضمار بقال الغزويني كذا واقول في جوابه كذا وحشنت العبارة قليلا وحذفت السلام والثناء  
الذي في اوله وبعض العبارات اللمينة كقوى ولعلكم غفرا لم نطلع عليه وهو اللغظ الذي استنقذتم  
على وانا عندكم وصدرة بفضيلة اعداء ومدح الامام مطلقا يارها الملك الذي سررت.

اي وبنوا ما كان

Letter to Ridā, Mecca (10 Rabi' al-Awwal 1346/ circa 1928)

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

A  
HIGH CLASS  
Arabic Periodical  
AL-DHIA,  
LUCKNOW (INDIA).

No. ....

الضياء  
مجلة علمية ادبية تعليمية  
تبعث عن الاداب العربية و الاسلامية  
تصدر في كهنؤ (الهند)

Date 8 ربيع 1352

حضرة امام العصر مولانا السيد محمد رشيد رضا زاد الله في معناه و بارك في حياته  
ذخرا و حرزا للاسلام السلام عليكم ورحمة الله وبركاته اما بعد فاهنئ المسلمين  
ارلائهم اصفئكم على عود المنار المنير للظهور ثم على من الله على المؤسسين بهذا الكتاب  
الجليل الذي هو مفخرة جديدة من مناقم التي لا تحصى. القلب دائما معكم و ذكركم  
زينة لمجالس هذا الحقير وقد سافرت الافغانستان و اوقت هناك 55 يوما و كنت  
اذكركم كثيرا فكان انبه العلماء هناك الشيخ سيف الرحمن بوجه اعتراضات في مسائل  
من المنار فقلت اجيب بما يناسب و المقصود ان ذكركم انيس في الحل و السرحال  
و لكن ماذا يقفنا الذكر و في النفس حسرة على اهل هذا الجيل الذين عميت ابصارهم  
والذي يسلمون ان عمي بصائرهم لم يضرنا نواركم نورا فلم تزل مسرقة في العالم و تلك  
غاية وجود الائمة و المصلحين كيفما كان اهل انفسهم و اني اعد نفسي من اعقاب ابناء  
المنار للمنار و لكن اضطرارا لا اختيارا و عسى يحبني ان تكفر عني عقوقتي  
مع هذا كتاب للاستاذ بدر الدين الحسيني المدرس الثاني للغة الانكليزية بندوة العلماء  
وهو شاب عصامي كله نشاط و عمل يراجو من كرمكم نسخة من كتاب الوجع المحدي  
ليترجمها الى لغة الصينية و لعلمكم متحفوه بها و سلامي على السيد عاصم و آل  
الاكرمين جميعا و السمع

سكونه اتقافغانستان اليوم هي بالامس و الخطة واحدة و لم يتبدل الا الملك و الطريق  
فالطريقة التي تسلكها الحكومة الافغانية اليوم هي طريق مصطنعي كمال و قبل فتح ازبكر  
وقد اهتمت ان اذكر نماذج المفارمة المتعلقة بقضية البربر فلم يمكن حتى في مجلس جمعية العلماء  
واما الكلام في التلاميذين فلا تجر عليه امه نفاق

Letter to Ridā, Lucknow (Rabi' al-Awwal 1352/ circa 1934)

MUHAMMAD ABDUL KADIR

EL-HILALY.

@ Dorah,

P. O. FAO, (Iraq),

(Persian Gulf)

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

محمد بن عبد القادر الهلالي

بالدوره

بوسنه فاو (العراق)

سنه ١٣٤

الدوره في

الى حضرة الفاضل الامام الحجة السيد محمد رشيد رضا السلام عليكم ورحمة الله وبركاته  
مع الله المسلمين بطول بقائه

اما بعد  
فقد وردت على رسالتكم في الوحي والالهام وانا مريض رعين الفراش فلم  
أقدر على اجابتكم عنها في الاسوع الماضي وقد من الله بالشفاء وصر عندي من القوة  
وله الحمد ما يمكنني من الكتابة ولو قليلا في كل يوم ورايت على ظهر الغلاف هذه العبارة  
"ارسلوا الجبل مع المترجم" فلم اجزم بالمراد منها لاني اخبرتكم اني كتبت حواشي بالعربية  
على الجبل متى حين قرأته وهو بالانكليزية وبعد ما كتبت أكثر الحاشية وقعت لي نسخة من مجموعة  
العهد الجديدة بالعربية فيها الانا جبل الاربعة واعمال الحوار بين ورسائل بولس ولم اقرأها  
واعما قابلت بعض المراضع من متى بالفض الانكليزي فوجدت الترجمة مختلفة ولعلي كتبت  
لكم ايضا اني اتيت ان ترجم الانا جبل والذي ارفقتي في الاستشكال ظني مجموعة الانا جبل  
العربية تكون في مصر كثيرة جدا ولا يمكن ان تكون مقصودة لكم بصيت الحواشي التي ذكركم  
في نشرها وترجمة الانا جبل التي هي من جملة مناهي ولا وجود لها في الخارج فارحوا ان كان  
مقصودكم مجموعة الانا جبل بالعربية ان تبيعوها لي وانا كان مقصودكم الحواشي والمباحث  
التي كتبت انا على متى وسميتها حواش شتى على الجبل متى ان تبيعوا ذلك واذا اردتم ان لا  
تخسروا اجرة مكتوب فابعثوا في ظرف مفتوح اي شيء مطبوع يوضع عليه طابع بملصين  
واكتبوا لي على ظهر الغلاف احدى هاتين العبارتين - ابعث حواشي متى - او ابعث مجموعة  
العهد الجديد ابعث لكم ايها ريدون وسامحتوني في هذه المراجعة فاني فعلتها خسرانا من  
الظلم في ارسال كتاب غير مراد وقد جاءني كتاب من الاخير شيكيب ارسلت اطلال بقاءه  
وحفظه اخبرني ان كتابكم اشرف في كتاب اليه بما اخبرتكم به من امر افنا نستانه والتمس مني ان اكتب  
اليه بشي من احوالها بغير تشاؤم او تفاؤل فكتبت اليه ما حضرتني موجزا وقلته له اني لا اشاء  
اليوم اوانا في شان العرب الذين يهني امرهم في الارجحة الاولى واما غيرهم فلا يهني امرهم  
حتى اتفاءل اوانا نادم لان هرازان العصيات القومية فالويل لامة قتل منها فصبيها والسلام

Letter to Ridā, Fao (Iraq), (28 Jumādā al-Thāniya 1352/ circa 1934)

28  
20  
1952  
في سنة 1352  
محمد بن عبد القادر الهلالي

MUHAMMAD ABDUL KADIR  
EL-HILALY,  
@ Jorah,  
P. O. FAO, (Iraq),  
(Persian Gulf)

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

محمد بن عبد القادر الهلالي  
بالدوره  
بوسته فاو (العراق)

لكننا في ١٤ جمادى ١٣٥٢ اي سنة ١٣٤

الى حضرة الفاضل الامام العلامة السيد محمد رضا  
السلام عليكم ورحمة الله وبركاته  
ادام الله بنور وجوده

اما بعد فقد تشرفت بحريم كتابكم وبشريف خطكم منسباً تاريخاً يؤمنه الكتب الثلاثة  
المرسلة ليدرك الدين الحسيني فسررت به انواع ضرورية لانه نصف مباحثكم اصنام سجانة  
بناحية الحسيني ان يبارك في عمركم فصباحا للاسلام والهدى وشها ناراجا لا يحدها الحق  
من الكافر بين والمنا فقين اللان هم شر من الكافر بين والحق اما اذنا مستنا فاذكرت لكم  
وماد عالى الى تحميم السفر اليها بالاجرة وحسن الظن بها وكت سالت عنها الشيخ حسين  
احمد احد ارکان ديوبند واحد زعماء الهند سينا سينا فراعنى جوابه بان قال ان تاذر شاه  
احد اصابع الانكليز وخرقت لهذا القول ولكنى لم ازلت على تفسير زعماء الهند المعاهدة  
التي بين الانكليز وبادر تفسير السينا ولفيت بعد التماثيل العزوبه فلما ظهر بعد ان مدي  
المحرف بل هو زرعها على صورة لينين في مكتبة مسلك اسماعيل عن ذلك فقال له اني احمد  
بهذا الرجل ثم لفت الحكم بعد العزيز البندوي في تكلم في تبادر كلامه فستبع من قبل ما ذكره  
حينئذ احد مجارته اني لم اقبله وكت اصلى نفسي بان الوجهة الدينية بمخوضه وان حضرت  
الموجهة النساء سنة مع على ان من الالسا نسلم لادري له فلما وصلتني الى كابل واطلعت على  
الانقلاب وحدثت السور الخط انها على كان في غير محله اما الامور الظاهرة كالصلاة والجهاد  
والموالاة وحفلات الطرقيين وعزيم ظهور سني من الشكر او الفجور والبرج وقله جزاة  
بالمجدي على اظهار مكتوباتهم في المجالس العامة فكل ذلك موجود اليوم واما كون الوزراء  
كلهم ملاحدة الا وزير الخزانة فم لا يظهر الحاد ه فقده ستملا وجمهور المواطنين وعنوم اعتناء  
الحكومة بالعلوم الدينية وعقد بها الاموال العظيمة في خزانة المصارفة الارزبية وروايات  
مهلا لا يحتاج اليه البلاد اليوم وان احتياجا كما يتضحنا فلهذا يصح ان العينية صونكم ذكرتم

وأما سفير أفغانستان في مصر فقد لقيت أخاه صاحب السجادة المشرع على عرش المملكة الروحية في أفغانستان مرارا كثيرة وكان وزير العولية فاستغفى لانه رأى ان زيارة الولاية بالنسبة الى امره لا تضره بل ترضه وهو الآن الحاكم الحقيقي في أفغانستان وجميع رجال الحكومة تخضعون له ويذهبون الى زيارته حتى الملك ولا مرما جدد قصرانته وقد اضربني مولانا منصور الانصاري وهو رجل عظيم وعالم كبير وسياسي محنك انه كان معتمد سعة أفغانستان في انقاره أيام بداية مصطفى كمال ان هذا الطغوت كان يحمل سمحة في يده ويدور في الاسوان ويسال اصحاب الاكاكين عن حالهم ويسلم على عامة الناس ويسالم عن حالهم وكان مواظبا على الصلاة في الجماعة وكثيرا من يحمل الموالد وكان يعاتب اسد العقاب من بيرومنه شديد من المعاصي والذرائع ان يظلم من الحكومة افغانستان سألته على طريقة القلاب المربي مصطفى كمال فاسال عن سفارتها في القاهرة فوسكو فان كانت الصلاة تقام فيها ذلك على قلعة رياء هذه الحكومة. بلغني ان سفرة في انقرة من كبار الزنادقة وهو دعاية الى الكفر وبلغني ان اللصوص يستنكروا توليت السفارة ولكن تكون الخ المطلق لا يمكن عزله امره الملك ان يخرج ففعل ليرى الناس انه يتدين ولما زرت وزير المعارف زيارة رسمية بواسطة وزير الخارجية كان معي مولانا منصور فلم ياذن له بل اخرجني وحيدا وهو ومعاونيه لاني لم اكنم (معين حصار) من الكفر خلق الله اما علماء أفغانستان فهم صريحين بكم يعني وليس فهم احد يقدر ان يقرأ الحان اوليهم وكل من يلقب بالوفائية فهو عندهم ملغى من اليهود والنصارى ومولانا سيف الرحمان لسان الوفاة الافغاني الى ابن سلو ولا وهو مجاهد بلسان حارب الانكليز سيقض حارب الروس سيقض وهو في الحقيقة بعد عالمنا واحرته يعتقد ان صاحب المهار وشيخه محمد عميره الى الانفاقا اقرت عندهم الى الاسلام فقامت غلظه وشخصته لم الحقيقة ووجدته يعتقد ان اهل علم دين خاصي يخرج في العقائد الاحمال فبرهنت له على خطاه ولا حذر رجل محضرة يقاس بين امن سعويده فمصطفى كمال خطصت انا وقلت دهنوني عالما ان اكلع المسلمين كالمجربين ما لم كيف تخفون ثم ست بعد ثمانين الرجلين لا محبة في ابن سعود الذي ظلمني وجراني في ارضه التي تقام بالحق والامان لوان من يظلمه فقد تقية سرا ودعاني ان عزله للطعام مرارا مع اصحابي من اهل كابل وحرار البرط وهدى وانجني خلفه ولكن لا اؤمن بانه حكيم وامر ناجي في الكتاب منه وقد نسي مولانا ضعف الرحمن في دعوى كابل وكلم الصدر الاعظم ووزير المعارف في رسالة الطريقة «عصية صاحب الامانة» بلغي بالحق على كلهم وعده بذلك ولكن لم اقبل البصير على افكاره حتى لم يزل في اعلم ان وزير المعارف يكره ذلك فان الزعيم يعنتني كقره واسلامي وكنت اود العن هناك لولا بالمجاد الحكومة واضطواها وتبر الحرافة وعينها الملعب محمد الممد نيلين «ب» «بوز ذورج» يعني سئل اجهنم ونما على بانما ركنم فلا اشترطت عن افغانستان وقد فرح الصلبي بالكتب وساعده ان شاء الله على ترجمتها من صويغيا على يونغواتر احوال يكون منه غير كثير وقد بلغ في اللغة العربية في شهرين ما لا يبلغه اكثر السود الا في سنين والكتاب في احوال الذين ما رددو نفيس وقد ترجم منه القسم التاريخي وصححه له في دروس الانشاء

ذهبت الى قسيس اميركي اعلم عنده الانكليزية منذ سنة اشهر وكان قبل الغاية بالدين ولكن اجتمعت  
بقتسيم آخر في ارساليته فما عرف على حقيهم على بالاعراض على محمد فووقت بيني وبينه مناظرات  
شفاهية وكنا بينه وعاب على عدم فراءتي للاناجيل فاقبلت على درسها وقد انتهيت من درس مني وظهر  
لي فيه عالم يكن في حسابي من الادلة القاطعة على بطلان النصرانية وصحة الاسلام ورايتني في منزلة  
ايماننا وقد علمت على مواضع كثيرة منه ثم شرعت في كتابة مباحث كالحاشية على الانجيل اظن انها تحكي  
وانا اترجم تلك ما يتعلق بتلك المباحث من الايات من الانكليزية الى العربية ثم اكتب ما يتعلق بها  
واذا اتممت اعلمتكم لتفكروا في نشره ان كان فيه خير وسئلت عن هذا الحجاب الحاضر للمرأة فذكرت انه محرم  
ولا يصله في الدين ورويت ان جميع المعتزlichen وجميع اردبائير من هذا الجهاد عقبت كونا في تسليم  
والترمايون والملاحة يعيبون الاسلام به والحج على السائل ايضا ان اكتب له شيئا فكتب كتيبا صغيرا  
واخذ الرجل وشرع في طبعه فاخبر بعض الناس بحب الدين الخطيب فكتب الي وانا في طريقني الى ايضا تسكان  
يسالني عدم نشره فاجيبته بانني كاد ينتهي طبعه وليس فيه شيء مخالف اصلا ولا فرعا وانه رايته فيه  
شيئا فاخبرني ارجع عنه علانية على صفحات الصحف واطن ان هذا الجواب لم يعجبه لانه من حين وصله  
جراحي امتنع من نشر مقالي في في العنج وكتب اتاول عنه بعضا من صحف الامير سكيك وفريد وحدي ثم بقتعة  
النصارى في مصر لكثرة حسن ظني به ولكن تبين ان الامر على خلاف ذلك وسأطلب منه مقالي في هذا  
البريد ولا اسالهم لم ولا اعلام وكل يعمل على سكاكته وان نجد من اخراتنا من ينظر الى ما قيل لاني من قال  
ولو ونحن ننقل اقوال النصارى والمسكرين في كاييد الاسلام فهذا عملت مقالي في معاملة مقالا تمام  
على فرض انني خرجت من الاسلام وكلما كتبت في ذلك الكتاب من الاحكام راه الشيخ محمد الشفيطي  
رحم الله ورائف عليه ولا اظن عالما بمثل ذلك فيه وارجو ان يكون هذا سرا عندكم فاني عزمت على ان لا اضع  
بهذا الا اياكم والامير سكيك فقط ولو بقي المناز كما كان لنا ان ننشر فيه تلك المباحث  
في الانجيل فان بدا لكم نشرها في مجلة هناك فاحضروني فاني لا اعرف حقائق الصحف الدينية هناك  
وقد اتحدت الجامعة الاسلامية عوضا عن العنج شيئا ما يبدو لي من المجلات لكن المباحث المذكورة  
بالمجلات البقية اما تقرير كتاب الوحي المحمدي في علمكم فلا اظنه يفيد الا اذا ترجم الى الانكليزية فان جاز  
عليكم لم يبق فيها من الصيغة الاسلامية الا اطلاق كباقي الوشم واحق وسال الاسكاذ المسمي مكانة  
واضركم واما ديوبند فاولي من يكتب اليه في ذلك الشيخ حسين احمد وقد اضرتكم فيما اظن بان السيد  
سليمان اصاذن في ترجمة كتاب الوحي والجنس اللطيف وكتاب ثالث لكم واحضرتكم ان سيكتب لكم  
بنفسه في ذلك ولما بيت له فزية هذا الكتاب اعني الوحي المحمدي قال لي ربما كان ذلك في بلاد العرب  
واما في الهند فقد فرغ الناس من هذه المسألة وقتلواها بحسب زمان ولكن ترجمه على ذلك لانه من  
تأليف عالم من مصر والسلام

محمد صالح الدين الهلالي

## بِسْمِ اللّٰهِ الرَّحْمٰنِ الرَّحِیْمِ

سدى الامام السيد محمد رشيد رضا ادام الله بركاته والسلام عليكم ورحمة  
الله وبركاته اما بعد فقد ورد على سواكم الكريم معشر اسلامتكم التي هي ممدى  
من اعظم الاماني بل لا يساورها عندى شئ اداها الله لكم نعمه على المسلمين  
والوصايا التي جاءت في هذا الكتاب كت منتها لها ومستعد المساعدة الصيغ  
وهو يعر على يوميا اما الجامعة النظامية او غيرها من مدارس الهند فاني لا انوى ولا استطيع  
ان افصح في الهندى فزى عرض من الاعراض لا يهزم على صفارهم التي تافوا العلمين فيها  
محتقرون العرب وبعضهم جدا ولا ينظرون اليهم الا بعين الازدراء وانا واقف  
لهم بالمرصاد اذ افصح ما استطعت فكيف يلقى بي ان العتس وظيفه منهم وقد ملغتهم  
وعزمت على الاقامة في بلاد العرب وبالنصوص في بلادنا المغرب ان يسر الله ذلك  
وقد بلغت امر لم نعد نشر اخبارنا سنان بالسمع والطاعة اذ ليس لي عرض  
شخصي في نشرها ولكني كنت مرردا لا ادري اسر نشرها اكثر ام حيرة فلما رايت ان عدم  
النشر خير فليس لالا الاستمال واما الازهر بون فاني لا زال ارى ان الصغ عنهم اولى مع  
الاستمرار في نشره ونضار الحق من دون اشارة الاسماهم وغيرهم الجامعة التي لا نشر الاسلام  
لان ذلك يجلب سخط الناس عليهم ويحلي غيظهم وعوارهم ويقلل نشاطهم للمحاربة  
واي شدي الحق على هذا الدجال اللجوى فانه شيطان ماره نسال الله ان يكتفي الاسلام سره  
بشهاب نقيب رسله عليه واما الاخ محب الدين الخطيب فقد نشر بعد فترة عقلا ولا اعرف  
حقيقة ما عنده وربما كان السبب في كافيته للمقالات شيخا لم يعرفه الا اذن ولم ابعث له  
بشر رجوعى من كابل الا مقالين احدهما فيكم والاخر لم ينشر ولكني اظن بلا جزم ان مقالات  
بعثتها لهما لم يردا لان الوجود عنده الا ان تكون صاغت ولكنه اشار اليه في بعض  
اعداد راته العامه وقد بعثت الى الجامعة الاسلامية عدة مقالات ولا زال ابعث اليه  
اسبوعيا وكذا جادني في البريد الاخير كتاب من مديريه معقم بالسكر والا طراء حتى اجباني  
وسالني ان ادله على الصحف الهندية والكتب التي تبحث في الاسلام بالغات الاحيية واتجاد

في ذلك واسال الله العصمة في القول والعمل واني خاف ان يكون جميع ما عملد محيط لعدم الاخلاص  
لكن الراجح العمل وجهاد النفس والامر بعد ذلك الى الله وقد تم ما كتبت على تمى فماراكم اهديه  
الى الشيخ محمد نصيف ليطيعه في جزء صغيرا لم يكن فيه راي آخر وهو ليس بكتبة فلذلك يمكن  
نشره في مجلة ثم جمع في جزء لكن بما منه مهمة وان كانت قصيرة اذ المقصود بيان ما في  
ذلك الاجيل من الخلل وسائر بعية الاناجيل وافضلها كذلك ان شاء الله والبرام العربية  
ركيزة ومحرفة زيادة على التحريف الاصلى ولم ار نسخة عربية الا بعد ما اشرفت على تمام  
ما كتبت بعث اليها فريد ولبام سميت الامركي نسخة مطبوعة في لندن  
واود ان تعني احدى جمعيات المسلمين بترجمة الاناجيل ترجمة فضيحة صحيحة وتعلق عليها  
الحواسي الكاشفة للبس النصارى كما فعلوا بكتبا بنا لكننا نحن لا نجارهم في تعسفهم بل تقتصر  
على بيان الحقائق وهذا العمل اذ تم يكون فيه فوائد للمسلمين عظيمة وربما يعقل بسبب نصارى  
العرب على الاسلام اقبالا عظيما ويقل الوقوع في حياتهم ولكن اين من يعقل مثل هذا ولو  
وجدنا وقتا لترجمتها ترجمة فضيحة مطابقة للاصل الانكليزية وقد كتبت اليكم في الكتاب  
الذي قبل هذا ببعض الاخبار وارجو ان يكون وصلكم و سلامى على السيد معلم وسائر  
الاول الكرام والسلام  
محمد تقى الدين الهلالي 52 / 15 / 24



بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

الى الامام الحجّة السيد محمد رشيد رضا ادام الله عنه وله الرضا وسلام عليكم ورحمة الله  
 وبركاته اما بعد فقد ورد على كتابكم الكريم بعد تسليم هديتكم الثمينه من كتاب الوصي  
 المحمدي في علة الثانية فاهتمكم بهذه النعمه والديشكرها لكم ويزيدكم ترفيقا لامثالها  
 والايف السيد طه الفياض هو كما ذكرتم ذو حماسه ومصحوبه بعقل وتأييد الهي حتى انه ليخاف كبار  
 ذوي المناصب ويخفون فباكرهم اذا غشي بحالهم وهو في ذلك منقطع النظر ولكنه محتاج  
 الى العلم بقواعد الاسلام عامه وتميز ما كان عليه السلف من الطيب العقد والعمل مما حدث بعد  
 وهو ضد الكثر اصل العصر فان علم الواحد منهم وان قل الكثر من علمه وانما منهم اسامه العفو  
 وكثرة اعمال الواحد وكونه كاتباً عند تاجر وقله توجهه للتعلم تحول دونه ودون ما يجب ان يكون  
 عنده من العلم وقد تكلمنا انا وهو مع ميرزا محمد خان بهادر (فارسي الاصل وهو الان عراقي النابيه  
 ومن سراه البصرة كاتب بالانكليزية في الدرجه الاولى من ادياء الشرق) ان يترجم «الوصي المحمدي»  
 الى الانكليزية وهذا ونحن نخجل انك احد يشتمل بترجمته الى اللغة المروما اليها ام لا فطلب  
 مني عرض الكتاب عليه فاورت اباحيدري طه ان يعطيه اياه لانه الان عنده وسننظر ما يجب به  
 بعض النظر فيه وانما ارى نشره بالانكليزية النفع حسا ومعنى من نشره بعدة لغات شرقيه او غريبه  
 خافه فهدى اللغة المرمي خوف الفراء ومن اهم ما يؤسفني انني فاقد وسائل انعام تعلمها حتى ابلي  
 الى الكليات والخطابه وقد ضاع سعبي في ذلك ولا ادري اعبرتكم بان نظارة مدرسة النجاة الخليلها  
 الشيخ محمد الشنقيطي رح بسالني بالجامع التدريس بها بعد عار انني عاظلا عن العمل وسأكنافي الزبير بعد  
 امتنعاني من العمل في ندوة العلماء فرايت قبول ذلك واجبا واخذت ادرس فيها منذ شهرين ونصف  
 الان معاشها لا يزيد على ما قد نأير ونصف لعله ما تحصله ولما كان المقصود بالذات غير المعاش  
 فقلت ذلك والاخلاق في هذه البلاد في افضل سابقين بغير استثناء والتادوا حكمه وقد بعثت اليكم  
 مقال ده كاتب انكليزي مختبط في التاريخ « قبل ورود كتابكم المشير الى قلته غناء الرد على الطاعنين في  
 الاسلام » الا ان هذا لم يقصد الى الطعن في الاسلام ولا ردوت عليه انا من تلك الفاجحة كما ترونه  
 ان شاء الله فانتم تروا نشره في النار وجوب تسليمه الى ادارة مجلة الضمان المسلمين بالقاهرة  
 هذا ما تيسر به اليكم الآن وسألقى على السادة الآل الاكرام والاخوان ودمتم الجهاد في سبيل الله  
 والسلام  
 28 محرم 1353  
 محمد تقي الرضا الهادي

والسلام عليكم  
 وقد طلب  
 مني  
 عرض  
 الكتاب  
 عليه  
 فاورت  
 اباحيدري  
 طه  
 ان  
 يعطيه  
 اياه  
 لانه  
 الان  
 عنده  
 وسننظر  
 ما  
 يجب  
 به  
 بعض  
 النظر  
 فيه  
 وانما  
 ارى  
 نشره  
 بالانكليزية  
 النفع  
 حسا  
 ومعنى  
 من  
 نشره  
 بعدة  
 لغات  
 شرقيه  
 او  
 غريبه  
 خافه  
 فهدى  
 اللغة  
 المرمي  
 خوف  
 الفراء  
 ومن  
 اهم  
 ما  
 يؤسفني  
 انني  
 فاقد  
 وسائل  
 انعام  
 تعلمها  
 حتى  
 ابلي  
 الى  
 الكليات  
 والخطابه  
 وقد  
 ضاع  
 سعبي  
 في  
 ذلك  
 ولا  
 ادري  
 اعبرتكم  
 بان  
 نظارة  
 مدرسة  
 النجاة  
 الخليلها  
 الشيخ  
 محمد  
 الشنقيطي  
 رح  
 بسالني  
 بالجامع  
 التدريس  
 بها  
 بعد  
 عار  
 انني  
 عاظلا  
 عن  
 العمل  
 وسأكنافي  
 الزبير  
 بعد  
 امتنعاني  
 من  
 العمل  
 في  
 ندوة  
 العلماء  
 فرايت  
 قبول  
 ذلك  
 واجبا  
 واخذت  
 ادرس  
 فيها  
 منذ  
 شهرين  
 ونصف  
 الان  
 معاشها  
 لا  
 يزيد  
 على  
 ما  
 قد  
 نأير  
 ونصف  
 لعله  
 ما  
 تحصله  
 ولما  
 كان  
 المقصود  
 بالذات  
 غير  
 المعاش  
 فقلت  
 ذلك  
 والاخلاق  
 في  
 هذه  
 البلاد  
 في  
 افضل  
 سابقين  
 بغير  
 استثناء  
 والتادوا  
 حكمه  
 وقد  
 بعثت  
 اليكم  
 مقال  
 ده  
 كاتب  
 انكليزي  
 مختبط  
 في  
 التاريخ  
 «  
 قبل  
 ورود  
 كتابكم  
 المشير  
 الى  
 قلته  
 غناء  
 الرد  
 على  
 الطاعنين  
 في  
 الاسلام  
 »  
 الا  
 ان  
 هذا  
 لم  
 يقصد  
 الى  
 الطعن  
 في  
 الاسلام  
 ولا  
 ردوت  
 عليه  
 انا  
 من  
 تلك  
 الفاجحة  
 كما  
 ترونه  
 ان  
 شاء  
 الله  
 فانتم  
 تروا  
 نشره  
 في  
 النار  
 وجوب  
 تسليمه  
 الى  
 ادارة  
 مجلة  
 الضمان  
 المسلمين  
 بالقاهرة  
 هذا  
 ما  
 تيسر  
 به  
 اليكم  
 الآن  
 وسألقى  
 على  
 السادة  
 الآل  
 الاكرام  
 والاخوان  
 ودمتم  
 الجهاد  
 في  
 سبيل  
 الله  
 والسلام  
 28  
 محرم  
 1353  
 محمد  
 تقي  
 الرضا  
 الهادي

Letter to Ridā, no place (28 Muharram 1353/ circa 1935)

APPENDIX IV

MAGALLAT-HESAYEDAT  
THE LADIES' REVIEW  
(ARABIC MONTHLY)  
KHOUWA, CAIRO, EG-PT.  
TELEPHONE 5254

مجلة السيدات والرجال  
شراء مصر  
عدد ٢٢٤  
العنوان القاهري الماروني  
Nikel

Cairo (Egypt) ..... 152

عدد ٢٢٤ فبراير ١٩٢٣

حضرة السيدة العذراء السيدة محمد رشيد وفا المحترم

انني انتي جزء لا ينفك عن قلبي  
وذا شعرت خوفي فرح وانا التي كنت موزرة لاخي في كل  
سعادته وعمرانه حتى في ذنوبه وقيته في حياته اعلم جيداً  
ما كان لكم في سبب المنزلة عنده وكم كيف كان يعتركم  
وكان اني انتم نضيمون الي ما عرفته في مسامحة اخوانكم  
مكونة جديرة اني انسى انكم اول من وقع علي  
نظري بين مشاهير - واول من استعلمكم بجلدنا ايضاً  
تمت لكم هذه عندي وسعوري بعد طعنكم السريفة  
سببنا اني في المهمات - ونفوسنا في الوجود  
وكلهم انتم مني والشكر

روز انكون لورد

Letter from Rose Anṭūn to Riḏā, Cairo (24 February 1923)

## حفلة تأبين

### المرحوم فرح الطون

تألفت لجنة في القاهرة من اصدقاء مقيد  
 بالعلم والادب المرحوم فرح الطون صاحب مجلة  
 الجامعة المعجيين بأثاره ومبادئه غابها اقامة  
 حفلة تأبين تذكّر فيها آثاره ومنافسه وتاريخ  
 حياته واعماله وهي مؤلفة من حضرة الفاضل  
 السيد محمد رشيد رضا رئيساً والسيد محمد علي  
 الطاهر كاتباً واعضاءها حضرات الباقالاتية  
 اسماهم وهي مرتبة بحسب حروف الهجاء :  
 احمد حافظ بك عوض والياس افندي عيساوي  
 وجبر افندي شومط وجورجي افندي ابراهيم  
 حنا و خليل بك مطراوت و خليل افندي  
 السكاكيني وعبد القادر افندي جزه ومحمد  
 لطفي بك جمه ، وسيمان بك الحفلة وموعدها  
 ويرتا بحها قريبا  
 كاتب اللجنة

محمد علي الطاهر

The members of the committee of Anṭūn's ceremony of tribute, Riḍā's archive, Cairo.

D. S. Schemel

Caire, le ..... 190

الى عزالي عمري السيد محمد رشيد رضا صاحب <sup>الفتاوى</sup>  
انت تنظر الى محبة كبريت وجملة عظمي وان انظر اليه كرجل واجعله  
اعظم . ونحن وانه كما في الاعتقاد (الدينه أو الميهه الدين) على  
طريق نقيص فاجامع بيننا العقل الواسع والاعتدال في  
القول وذلك اوثق لعمرك المودرة . نه صدقتك الانوار سئل .

الحق اول ان نقار

جمع من محبة في سدي قرآني	ما قد نحيه له للجملة الفيات
اني وان اذ قد كنت بدينه	هل الكون بحكم الآيات
او ما كنت في ناصع الاعتقاد من	حكم روادع لعموم وعظمت
وشوايع لانهم عطفوا بها	لم يعقلوا القرآن بالعبادات (1)
فعم المبدئ والحكم وادبته	رث الفصحة مصطنع الحكيات (2)
رجل المحي رجل العالم والها	بطل حيلهم الزمر في الفارات
بيد علم القوم آونه توفيق الثمن	وسيدته أنحى على الهامات
من دونه الوطال في كل الوري	مذسابق ولا حقا وآت

(1) اعلموا ان الذين يستمكون به ويجعلونه كمالا عدول في عتق العمران  
(2) اشارة الى كلمة السادة المصنوع بلا هو وسادة من بيت  
ابنشر والسلك نذ ابنا قيمان كما لا يخفى عليك هما العزيم  
عالم العقول . فترس ان صرت بارعا في اللاهوت .

اجي لا اذف تمن وقتك هذه القلمه جهه كالمعروف والعرف  
بها ستره فالوا ان اشك اول العزيم ويبلغ انه يكون اول المعترف  
انفق

# الحزب الاجتماعى السمانى

عرض الحزب

- (١) التفرغ من عهد الخراب رُقبة السودان المراسية
- في المدية السمانية على اصفوف فانها وتحتين
- حال العمال والندجين واهمال الحرف اليدوية
- (٢) صيانة الدولة السمانية والمحافظة على سيادتها
- المحافظة
- (٣) المحافظة على الدستور المنقح كقمتي لا الاسمي
- فوط
- (٤) فصل السلطة المدنية عن الدين
- (٥) اطلاق الحرية انتم لجميع الاديان
- (٦) السادة التامة بين جميع عناصر الدولة دون
- تمييز
- (٧) اجتناب كل عنصر لفته الحية لا اعدامه
- (٨) تعبير لفته كل ولاية لفته رسمية لندى الولايات
- مع لفته الدولة الرسمية
- (٩) يجب على جميع عمال الحكومة على كل ولاية ان يوفوا

## تأسيس الحزب

مؤسسو الحزب هم الدكتور جميل درويش  
 بك الفطيم والدكتور حنا عماره والدكتور خليل  
 عماره

كان اجتماعهم الاول في اديسبر ١٩٠٩ في  
 بيت اعدهم الدكتور شهاب شهابي وكم  
 تمكنوا في وقتها من التوصل الى تشكيل  
 وقد انشئت في هذا الاجتماع الدكتور شهابي  
 جميل بك والدكتور عماره والدكتور خليل  
 عماره سكرتيراً عاماً

وقد انتخب احدنا الدكتور حنا عماره لوضع  
 قوانين الحزب فنقل ذلك ثم صارت  
 واضحة وقابلة للتطبيق مع احدنا الدكتور  
 خليل عماره

وشررت في الاجتماع المذكور نخبة من  
 في اوروبا وامريكا بعد انشاء الحزب  
 وان تكون خطه الحزب معتمداً على  
 حاله الشريف  
 الدكتور عماره  
 السكرتير العام

APPENDIX VII

بيروت في ٢ تشرين الثاني ١٩٢٨  
 سيدي الأستاذ العلامة صاحب مجلة المناه  
 بعد ثمانية وأربعين عاماً حصل أيضاً البرية المذبح ٤٤ الماضي يطافتكم الكريمة  
 والعدد الرابع من مجلتيكم الفراء فلم تطرح عديكم هنا... هذه المرة على  
 اتنا نأبى إلا الحصول على الأداة التي لم نضعها حراً كحكمة المنار الثمينة  
 وتلبية لقراء المكنته الشرقية وهي متأخر بعض منتوجات القرائ الإسلامية  
 على قرائنا من أغانب ووطنين على أصداف أرائهم وروايتهم لأن حال البرية  
 أو على بصيرة السليم فلا تفسى لنا فتم. ونأظن من هذا الحرف  
 العام اليه من هذا الحرف. إننا نأظن من هذا الحرف  
 أسرتونا بكم ران حاله الطرف دون الرقاب تأجلنا سيدي  
 السبل الأمل من بعد الأناقة بوجه من الوجهة ووجه من وجه

AL-MACHRIQ

REVUE ORIENTALE MENSUELLE

Imprimerie Catholique - BEYROUTH

الأستاذ محمد السيد محمد رضا  
 بطبعا أجزاء المنار (٢٥) لا و ٥٥

الى الأستاذ العلامة السيد محمد رضا

دا - المناه

ش - مع الانشاء رقم ١٤ عن ابراهيم الكريمة

شكر الكريمة  
 عن ابراهيم الكريمة  
 محمد رضا



La Cour  
 Egypte

Letter al-Machreq to Ridā, Beirut (2 November 1928)

APPENDIX VIII

شيخ و لادكي

بيروت

CHEIKH & LADKI

BEYROUTH

تلفرافياً : شيخ لادكي

TELEGRAMME : CHEIKH LADKI

الجمهورية اللبنانية

بيروت في ١٦ مايو ١٩٤٤

لقد سيدني الراج العلم الفاضل السيد محمد رشيد رضا حفظه الله  
السلام عليكم ورحمة وبركاته وبعد ، فذنا العدد الاخير من مجلة المنار التي كتبت وكتبتون وحمدنا الله على توفيقنا لنشتم الكرم  
وكلمة واثم بخير وقرئنا نقد الطبعه الثانيه منذ سنة الوحي المحمدي عند صلبه ورسوله لم جنتها طوى الرمانه ترك  
لنا بهم كتب هذا الطبعه الثانيه الوحي المحمدي لتوزعهم للمراسم والوطن الوصفاً فالله اعلم به عز وجل ان يحفظكم زلفاً للعلم  
الاسلامي ويوسعها لارنا مجله لا تتركه تدعى المشرف باوانه انا عليه القديس ليدنا ناسه روي الوحي المحمدي روي حيا  
منه السنه الحادي عشر لثلاثه العشر تاريخ ١٤٠٤ هـ ففرضنا على اننا نريد ان نرسله لنا نافع لهم الوحي حسب الكتاب اولى  
بارو منه لاجلهم عليه كتابه  
عودتنا على افضلكم وصدقنا هذا المشرف العذب سوي علمكم النابغ العقدي الحج اكثر انه منذ انتم في المسليه وفضلكم  
اهد الاوقات كلفني باستفساركم بالصوره التي تردها عليه ان ارسم ان نشره على الجواب وترسلها لنا بدون  
ان نشرها بالمنار الاخره لنا نشره عنكم العليه  
والله يسيدني وانا بنابه الشوق لروايتكم والتمني والتفدي باها وشم الطيبه المنهه اذانا الله ورحمته على حسن  
حاله واني احبهم واهمنا العلم الكلاوي يدقون الرب بلجرب بينه العليه فكانت مقالتكم العدد الاخير بالمنار  
هيا لب الراتب فقالوا الوضوح بهذا الموضوع الحج انه الحاد وقتهم هذه الماتت على حسن صد وصدق على المسليه  
لانه في الدنيا والدينه والادب علمهم ورحمتهم وبركاتهم المخلص  
محمد رشيد رضا

Letter, Cheikh & Ladki to Riḍā, Beirut (16 May 1934.)



## APPENDIX IX



**Muḥammad Tawfiq Ṣiḍqī**  
His family archive, Cairo<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> My thanks are due to Mr. Hishām Ṣiḍqī, his grandson, for sending me this photo. I have been able to trace them through the telephone directory of Egypt. Unfortunately there are no remaining papers of Ṣiḍqī, except some photos and one booknote of his handwriting, which is photocopied above.



(٤٥)

كالسودفور والدرماتول ومركبات الزنك وغير ذلك ويمنع الضغط عن  
تقلبات المرض من جهة إلى أخرى ~~والجانب~~ ببعض الأدوية  
المسببة المصونة

Bee Poison وهو عبارة عن حاض النملك  
(الفرميك) الذي يوجد في كثير من الحشرات الأخرى كالنمل  
وغيره وقد اتفق أخيراً أن استعمال المتأخر الصغير منه طبيائياً يعيد  
العضلات

شلل يبل وهو شلل يصيب <sup>أحياناً</sup> ~~بعض~~ <sup>أجزاء</sup> ~~من~~ <sup>من</sup> الوجه  
الوجه لمرض بالعصب الوجهي وهو العصب السابع من  
أعصاب الدماغ ويسمى هذا بالداء العزبية اللقوة فيقال  
لغى الرجل بانغم فهو ملقو أي أصيب بشلل في وجهه  
(facial paralysis) <sup>وتقبل</sup> <sup>إسم</sup> <sup>لرجل</sup> <sup>إنكليزي</sup> <sup>جراح</sup>  
عاش بين سنتي ١٨٧٤ أو ١٨٤٤ <sup>الذي</sup> <sup>تحدث</sup>  
أسبابه - الأورام والخراجات والتهابات التي تحدث  
بالقرب من العصب السابع كالتنقيص المزج أو الوردن أو  
العنق وكذلك العوزض المزجية كالرضوض والجروح والكسور  
ونحوها وبالاحتصاص كل ما يؤذي هذا العصب وألوانه  
اللقوة تحدث بدون سبب من هذه الأسباب المذكورة  
وقد يكون بعضنا شاعن تعرض الوجه للبرد الشديد  
ومن الأسباب أيضاً الزهري والفتيريا وقد تكون اللقوة



APPENDIX XI

من  
 العدد  
 العلم

مجلة عربية شهرية يتخدم العلم والدين بقلم حر فلسفي دني وتقاوم الاوهام  
 والبسوع وتقوم بالاصلاحات المهمة الاسلامية والاجتماعية وتنجب عن  
 المشكلات الدينية وغيرها . وتستنبط الاراء الجديدة من ظواهر الكتاب  
 سببا في علم الهيئة والفلك والسنة ونحوي الكشفيات والمعارف الجديدة  
 منها السنوي ٣٠ غرشنا في البلاد العثمانية و ٢٠ قرانا في ايران  
 و ٦ روية في الهند و ١٠ فرنكا في غيرها وتهدى ادارتها مطبوعاتها  
 الصغيرة لمن قدم البدل بالجان

من  
 العدد  
 مجلة العلم

في النجف، بالعراق  
 العثماني

بتاريخ ١٦ شهر ربيع الثاني ١٣٣٥ هـ  
 موافق ١٩ م

حضرة العلامة الكامل شيخ المصلحين الفاضل سماحة الاستاذ السيد محمد سعيد افندي ضياء المظلم

بعد اهداء اسنى سلام وازكى تحية الى تلك الحضرة القدسية ادا مهذب البرية وبث الاشواق الخالصة القلبية  
 رجو امن سيادتكم أولا ان تفضلوا علينا بالاخبار عن صحتكم وسلامة مزاجكم الوهاج وبشرونا باستقامه احوالكم  
 وطيب خاطركم العاطر وثانيا انه باسعد وقت حطوت بمشرفكم المورخ ١٩ ربيع الاخير قسنا ليد سيد المستر والشيخ  
 ونظاير قلبي فرحنا من اشعاره بتشريفكم في رحلتكم هذه الميمونة الابلاد نالنا من تاريخ اجدادكم واحوانكم وان هي الا بشأ  
 عظيم ولا شأ ان محلنا يشرف بزول اجلالكم فيه اذ هو في الحقيقة محكم والمخلص خادكم مادتم مشرفين في شئني  
 سيادة الاستاذ دام ظله ان لا يقطع عني خبره ويذكر في بزمان تشريف الاوطن ان استقر عليه رايه وهذه والله  
 لغة غير مشرفة تستوجب الشكر الجليل  
 وحيث ان رفيعكم ان اهر شرفني في اول امس ولا يبلغكم الجواب حسب الظاهر الا في اوسط الشهر المقبل فلا شأ ان  
 كتابتي اليكم فيما يتعلق برحلتكم في الهند غير مجدي ولكني احاول الفرض فان اباحهالي التوفيق فلربا سافر  
 الى البصرة مستقبل تشريفكم اذ التحق انتم  
 ولو صرتم النظر (فرضاً) عن تشريف العراق فرفوني عن ذلك ايضاً فان ذلك يعني كالمعنى معرفة زمان وردكم

الاقناع ولقد نزلت بعد حين من الدهر العدد ١٢٠ من مجلتيك المقدسة وشكرت فضلكم في درج  
 مقال احتجاجي مع دعاة النصرانية ببغداد وكلما انكم العاليه في الشكر يد على المبدعين الخرافيين بمسئله  
 نقل الجنايز فدعوت سيادة الامتياز من صميم القلب وهذه يد منك لا ينساها العلم وجعل لا يتكلم  
 غير الدين اجل ذلك هو الماملون من سيادتكم وانتم اكرم مصلي الاسلام واقدم محاربه البدع والخرافات  
 العصر لكن قولكم في صفحه ٤٤٤ من هذا الجزء (( فخذ اعالم مره فانهم يعني على دعاة النصرانية  
 وبتنقيهم النجاص ويدعوهم به وهو يعلم انهم لا يقصدون من التطيب الا دعوة المسلمين الى دينهم ))  
 هذا والماله انني ما نقلت وما نشرت تلك المطالب الا لاستنهاض المسلمين وتحريك افكارهم وليس في مقالتي  
 تلك دعاء لهم بالنجاص (والعيادة بنيت) غير اني ذكرت هناك ما هذا انهم (( فسير المولى لطلاب الخير كل عسر  
 وقابل اهل المعروف بكل جميل وهو الهادي السواء السبيل )) ولا يخفى على فطنه تلامذتكم ان هذا دعاء  
 دعاء نوعي وعلى وجه عام كلي ينصرف الى ما هو اهل في الحقيقه ولا يختلف في اثنان وجوبه في هذا المقام  
 ومحرم الختام ~~وهو~~ حيث اني ذكرت قبله اعمالهم التي تضر المسلمين وديانهم وسبلتهم كي يتنبه المسلمون  
 وبالاجمال فان تلك الفقرة في تعليقكم الزاهر مما يتخذها اعداؤنا الخرافيون ممكنا يتشدقون به وان كان صدوره  
 عنكم لمجرد الاحتجاج على متعصبين كتاب النصارى ولا تشهاده ببتساح كتاب المسلمين فلا تتفاد ليس عاقبتكم  
 اذ هو مقدس عندي معلوم  
 ومن طرف اشراك محمد زهدي افندي تار بار في در بند بوسنه حواسه الى ادارتكم الزاهيه بمصر وحولتها  
 غيره ايضا من المشركين الذين علم ان بتالهم بكم كي تستوز ادارتكم حاسما معنا وان نظري او قصدي يتردد  
 بين امرين اما تعطيل العلم والاجتماع بجد منكم كي اخدم دين جدي هناك ثم يرا وتقرر امتي تبس واللا  
 فان لم يتيسر لي ذلك فاجعل اداره (العلم) في الخيف شعبه من ادارتكم بمصر وبعده الاصل وعلية تنوكل  
 والسلام عليكم والرحمه  
 تحرير اقل خدام الاسلام السيد هبة الدين الاسلامي

من أنا بالهند ٢٤ رمضان سنة

السلام عليكم ورحمة الله وبركاته

سيدنا العلامة المصلح دامت أفاضته

بعد الهدايا التي سلمت وازدك النجيب <sup>وكتب الاستوائ الخالص العليبي</sup> <sup>المواظبة</sup> فان هذا المشانق شرف من عهد بعيد بزيارة كتابك الكريم وقد اشغلتني <sup>المواظبة</sup> <sup>المواظبة</sup>

على الرسائل جملتها منها لوانزم السفر ومهمات الحبل والرجال حيث اني لا اقيم في بلد اكثر من اسبوعين ومنها عرض الاسقام والحميات غالباً بسبب اختلاف

اهوية البلاد ومغايرة البيئة الهندية لظواهر البيئة العراقية ومنها اشتغالي بالمذكرات والتفريعات الخصوصية والعمومية الدائرة على قطبي الارض والعام نحو الاصلاحات والحث على تقوية امر الدعوة الاسلامية رخصاً للمساكين

دعوات النصرانية ومنها مخبري الاجوبة المسائل الواردة علي علاوة على اشتغالي بتحرير المقالات الفارسية تحت عنوان (فغان اسلام) ولا مقصد

فيها غير الحث على الدعوة ومعارضة الدعوات النصرانية بقوة اجتماعية اسلامية تتجلى في كسوة المدارس والمجالس والمطبوعات والمجتمعات وقد شرع الاخوة في طبع تلك المقالات في كتاب مستقل بالفارسية كما شرعوا في ترجمتها الى اللغة

الهندية وسوف اهديها الى ادارتكم الزاهرة بعد فحازها

مضافاً الى انتشارها في المقالات في بعض صحف الهند الفارسية والارمنية

وبالجملة ليس الغرض من ذكر هذه الامور اظهار خدماة الاسلام لان اعداء نجدون باطلهم اكثر من هذا بل المقصود ان يعذروني حضرتك السامع

اذنا اطبات في الحاشية  
 ثم في مقدم الرجل كالمعروف في كتابه في احوال مسال امر لها على جلالة الملك العبد  
 السيد فضل بن تركي سلطان عمان ولم في عين واما في عسى ان تحصى بالقبول  
 في نشر على صفحات المنار الزاهية ونطبع مع ذلك رسالة مستغلة نظراً  
 الى ما فيها من المسائل المستغلة والابحاث الشريفة المناسبة لحظ المنار الاغني  
 ومنى طبعوه كتاباً مستغلاً فاخبروني عن مبعوثي حتى اشري من نسخة نحواً  
 من خمسين نسخة لاول وهله او غيرها على طلبه من احبني الهند يبيع  
 ولكني لو ارجع ذلك لربيعاً في البريد المتعهد بهذا العنوان  
 (( بمجي ناكرا اسپينال توسط اغا علي اصغر الناجر الشيرازي ))

وما استغرفه ذكروكم من حيل دعوات النصرانية التي مرت في جميع عظم في  
 مشرقه (بارابنكي) واذا بقى يدعو الى اعتناق المسيحية ثم خرج من جماعة رجل في زري  
 اروي و ذكر للناس انه جاء البلاد وفتش عن الاديان فلم يجد غير من النصرانية ثم باع  
 ذلك النفس وجلس بجنبه ثم خرج من جماعة رجل في زري العرب وفتش عن الاديان فلم يجد  
 من اهل مكة على مذهب الحنيفة قد ساء البلدان طلباً لا صحح الاديان فلم يجد كالتصانيف  
 نطق بهذه الشهادة و باع النفس وجلس بجنبه ثم خرج من جماعة رجل في زري العم  
 و كما ذكر للناس انه شيعي خرج من كربلاء ففتش الدين الصحيح من اديان العالم فلم يجد  
 مثل دين المسيح نطق بهذه الشهادة و باع النفس وجلس بجانبه ثم خرج من جماعة  
 رجل هندي و ذكر للناس انه وثني خرج من بلده (اجودھيا) ونصغ المذاهب فلم  
 يجد كالمسيحية ثم باع النفس وجلس بجنبه ولما رقت النظر في امرهم وجدت في ذلك  
 منهم حيلة يريدون اغتيال العامة البسطة بذلك والاربع كانوا اجمعاً هون  
 مشغولين من زمن طويل اذ لم يكن الذي ادعى انه عربي حقيقي يعرف شيئاً من  
 العربية ولا في مسائل العرب ولذا الذي ادعى انه شيعي اعجب لم يكن عارفاً  
 بالعجمية ولا في شأنهم ولو كان معي اصحابي او كنت ماهراً في اللغة الهندية  
 لعارضتهم اتم المعارضه لكني خشيت الفتنة مع عرب بني وانفرادي وعدم معرفتي  
 محاورات المنور كاملة و غلب على الذهول والتحرر من هذه الحيلة المخجبة التي  
 تقصر عنها دهاء ابليس

ثم السلام التام عليكم وعلى الابرار السيد صالح رحمان رحمة الله وبركاته  
 تحرير اهل خدم الاسلام هبة الدين  
 الشهرستاني النخعي صاحب محلة

Letter, al-Sharistānī to Riḍā, 24 Ramdan 1331/27 August 1913., Riḍā's arc Cairo



APPENDIX XII



اجتماع الجمعية الإسلامية مع كبار اليابانيين  
في مجلس نشر القرآن وتبليغ دينه الكرم  
١٩٣٤ رجب ٦

٢١٦

The meeting of the Islamic Society with Japanese notables in the Council of the Qur'ān and Dissimination of the Religion Islam, July 1934, Riḍā's archive, Cairo.



## INDEX

- ‘Abd al-Rāziq, ‘Alī 119  
 ‘Abduh, Muḥammad 3-7, 11-12, 14, 24-26, 42, 45, 47, 56, 72, 73-77, 84, 120, 151, 170, 177, 193, 204, 216-217, 264-265, 278, 315-316  
 ‘Abū Bakr 201  
 ‘Abū Hurairah 279, 296  
 Abū Zahra, Muḥammad 11, 317  
 Abyssinia(n) 196, 300  
 Adam 56, 209, 240, 252-253, 267, 292, 295  
 Adamantius, Origenes 187-188, 250  
 Adams, Charles 5, 10, 42  
 ‘Adasānī, Sulaymān al- 283-284  
 Afghānī, Jamāl al-Dīn al- 3-4, 6-7, 25, 61, 115, 220, 246, 289, 316  
 Afghānistan 61  
 Aḥād traditions 265, 279-280, 296  
 Aḥbār, Ka’b al- 299  
 Ahl al-Qarya 298  
 Ahl al-Sunna 203  
 Aḥmadiyya 51, 168, 313, 315-316  
*Ahrām, al-* (periodical) 4, 37, 71, 93, 101  
 ‘Ā’isha 296  
 ‘*Alam al-Dīn* 186-187, 211  
 ‘Alamāt al-Sā’ah 296  
 Al-Azhar 41, 57, 77, 90, 108, 114, 125, 135, 160, 165, 169-172, 174, 177, 189, 193, 238, 300-301, 311, 315, 316  
 Alexandria 72, 82, 141, 168, 177, 187, 206, 238, 301  
 ‘Alfī, Aḥmad Muḥammad al- 280  
 Algeria 18, 68, 303-304  
 ‘Alī, Prince Muḥammad 82, 163  
 Altar 300-301  
 Amirchanjan, Abraham 161  
 ‘Ammūn, Iskandar 70  
 Amraphel 32  
 Anarchist 108  
 Andrae, Tor 51, 307  
 Angels 35, 148, 205, 248, 256  
 Anglican Bishop of Jerusalem 163  
 Anglo-Catholic Party 43  
 Antagonism (antagonist) 85-86, 88, 90, 224  
 Antākī, ‘Abd al-Masiḥ al- 236  
 Anthropomorphism 200  
 Antichrist (*Dajjāl*) 296  
 Anti-Easternism 119  
 Anṭūn, Farah 5, 17, 31, 33, 71-77, 116, 120, 176-177, 309  
 Anṭūn, Rose 76  
 Apocrypha 213-214, 229-230, 251  
 Arab Christians 63, 67-125, 158, 305, 308-309  
 Arabism (Arab nationalism) 68-71, 91, 109, 122, 156  
 Aramaic 196, 259  
 ‘*Arba’in al-Nawawiyya, al-* 3  
 Archive of Venice 226  
 Argentina 93  
 Arian 30, 253  
 Armenian 27, 104, 142, genocide 161  
 Arnold, Matthew 254  
 Arslān, Shakīb 43-50, 52, 61, 83, 71, 120, 244, 308  
 Artapanus 182  
 ‘Aṣabiyya 103, 182  
 Asceticism 183, 195, 201, 288  
 Ashmūn (Egypt) 294  
 Asia Minor 260-261  
 ‘Asir 8  
 ‘*Aṣma’ī, al-* (periodical) 76  
 Association des Etudiants Nord-Africains 45  
 Association of Christian Young Men 121  
 Assyriology 16, Assyrian 33, mythologies 31, 179  
 Aswan, George 19  
 Asyūt (Southern Egypt) 17, 106-107, 140  
 Atheism (atheists) 27, 52, 56, 59, 85, 89-90, 101, 117-119, 121, 146-147, 160, 166, 168  
 Augustine, St. Aurelius 187-188  
 Austrian National Library (Vienna) 11  
 Awetaranian, Johannes 161  
 ‘Ayn ‘Annūb (Lebanon) 58  
 Ayoub, Maḥmūd 11  
 Azad, Ghulam Murtaza 317  
 ‘Az̄m, Rafīq al- 96, 149  
 Bāb al-Futūḥ (Fez) 273  
 Babel-und-Bibel-Streit 16, 31-35  
 Bābiyya 51

- Babylon 31-32, 248  
 Baghdad 83, 89, 153-154, 181,  
 Bahādir, Mirza Muḥammad Khān 64  
 Bahā'iyya 51, 126, 165  
 Bahīra 78  
 Bahrain 156, 177, 283  
 Bājūrī, 'Iskandar Effendi 'Abd al-Masiḥ  
   al- 21, 236-242, 311  
 Balāfrīj, Aḥmad 45-46  
 Balkan War 8  
 Bannā, Aḥmad al- 9  
 Bannā, Ḥasan al- 9, 172  
*Bashā'ir al-Salām* (periodical) 19, 199-  
   208, 237, 239  
 Basilidians 253  
 Basra 63-64, 156  
*Bayān, al-* (periodical) 27  
 Beirut 5, 58-59, 85, 93, 95-96, 99, 101,  
   140-145, 171, 310  
 Bekennende Kirche 30  
 Belle Poule 274  
 Benda, Harry J. 132  
 Berlin 15, 49-53, 61, 161, 308  
 Beshara, Adel 94-96  
 Biblical Criticism 23, 56, 151, 243, 276  
 Bilbis (Egypt) 19  
 Bismarck, Otto, von 34, 131  
 Black Stone 8  
 Bogor (Indonesia) 131  
 Bonaparte, Napoleon 182  
 Bonhöffer, Dietrich 30  
 Boniface VIII, Pope 228  
 Book of Prayer 44  
 Bon, Gustave, Le 5, 25, 53-54, 105, 273-  
   274, 276, 314  
 Borah, Senator William Edgar 27  
 Borrmans, Maurice 10  
 Boyes, Rev. P. 154  
 Brazil 67, 93, 176, 220  
 Briquet, M. 221  
 British Intelligence Department 7  
 Buddha 60-61, Buddhism 167, 312  
  
 Caliphate, Caliph 7, 70, 91, 134, 164, 177,  
   310  
 Canaan 209  
 Carpenter, William Benjamin 257  
 Carpocratians 253  
 Cassels, Walter Richard 56, 254  
 Catholicism 97 Catholic(s) 11, 29, 30,  
   43, 47, 86, 90, 96-101, 121, 130, 143,  
   168, 224  
 Cerinthians 253  
  
 Chaldean mythologies 179  
 Charlemagne 99  
 Chatelier, Alfred Le 151-152, 156  
 Cheikh & Ladki (Beirut) 101  
 Cheikho, Louis 80, 97-98, 100-101, 213,  
   298-299  
 Children of Israel 182, 199, 209, 246, 292  
 China, Chinese 64, 128, 130, 163-164,  
   189, 194-195, 244, 312  
 Christian Church Fathers 250  
*Church Missionary Intelligencer* (period-  
   ical) 160  
 Church Missionary Society (CMS) 150,  
   178  
 Circumcision 226-227  
 Cirillo, L. 214, 222  
 Civilisation 59, 73, 84-85, 136, 167,  
   194-195  
   Arab 53, 82-83, 105, 121  
   Indian 53  
   Islamic 47-48, 72, 78, 129, 166, 271,  
   310  
   Western 18, 25, 47-48, 183-184, 287-  
   288, 309  
 Clair-Tisdall, W. St. 150-151  
 Clarendon Press (Oxford) 165, 214  
 Colonialism, Colonial Powers 2, 5, 18-  
   19, 37, 41, 46, 67, 125, 127, 130-134,  
   136, 138-139, 146, 162, 164, 173, 244,  
   295, 300, 308-315  
 Committee of Union and Progress 69  
 Companions of the Prophet 201, 257  
 Constantine 217  
 Constantinople 34, 253  
*Conquête du monde Musulman, La* 151,  
   156  
 Conversion, Convert to Islam 6, 18-19,  
   21, 30, 39, 55, 63, 88, 128, 130 166-168,  
   232, 316  
   to Christianity 46, 74, 126, 128, 130-  
   131, 132, 143, 149, 153-154, 162,  
   236-241  
 Coptic 17-18, 21, 55, 85, 196, 237, 240,  
   244, 278, 313  
   *al-Manār's* reaction 103-122  
   Coptic Archbishop of Sinai 136  
   Coptic Congress (1911) 17, 106-113,  
   116, 122, 278  
   Coptic Egyptianism 116  
   Coptic Reform Party 104  
 Cornelius Tacitus 258-259

- Cramer, J. F. 211  
 Cromer, Lord 86, 107, 134-137, 237  
 Crusades 58, 76, 95, 273, 300  
 Crystal Palace (London) 257  
  
*Daily Telegraph, The* (periodical) 53  
*Daily Express, The* (periodical) 28  
 Damascus 34, 58, 274, 296, 304  
 Dante 223-224, 228, 232  
 Da'wa 10, 18, 62, 126, 128, 155, 201, 306, 311, 316  
 Dār al-Da'wa wā al-Irshād 10, 14, 127, 128, 162-166  
 Dār al-'Ulūm of Nadwat al-'Ulamā (Lucknow) 61  
 Dars, Ḥasan al- 277  
 Darwinism 56, 86, 88-89, 90, 91  
 Day of Judgment 192, 266  
 Day of Pentecost 258  
 De Castries, Henry 25  
 Delitzsch, Friedrich 16, 31-35, 65  
 Depok (Batavia) 131  
*Der christliche Orient* (periodical) 161  
 Dermenghem, Emile 233  
 Desfosses, Admiral 274  
 Desmoulins, E. 25  
*Deutsche Allgemeine Zeitung* (periodical) 53  
 Deutsche Orient-Gesellschaft 31  
 Deutsche-Orient Mission 161  
 Devaki 60  
 Dhimmis 303  
 Die Aufgabe der Mohammedaner-Mission 161  
 Die Deutsche Gesellschaft für Islamkunde 40  
 Dijwī, Yūsuf al- 40-41, 171, 174  
 Dinshiwāy 106, 108  
 Dīr Muwās 237  
 Divina Comedia 223-224  
 Divine knowledge 35, 235  
   laws 195  
   message 34, 87, 100, 102, 127, 178, 185, 190, 198, 262  
   mission 210, 248  
   nature 33, 280  
   origin 195, 207  
   providence 85, 182, 272  
   revelations 31, 50, 98, 184, 198, 232-233, 293  
*Diyā, al-* (periodical) 63, 92  
 Doane, Thomas William 270  
 Draper, John William 5  
  
 Drews, Christian Heinrich Arthur 56  
 Dryaner, *Oberhofprediger* Ernest 33  
 Dukhalā' (Dakhil) 103  
 Dumas, Alexandre 25  
 Dumiṭ, Jabr effendi 141, 144, 281  
 Dunlop, Douglas 139  
 Dustiyūn, al- (Docetics) 207  
 Dutch East Indies 27  
   authorities in Indonesia 131-133, 164  
   orientalism 16, 27, 36-37, 308-309  
  
 East Africa 131, 134, 317  
 Egyptian Awqāf system 113, 137  
   Book Association 91  
   laws 182  
   Muslim Congress 18, 110, 113-115  
   National Party 18, 106, 164  
   University 81, 106, 109, 113, 120-121  
*Encyclopaedia of Islam* 31, 36-42  
 English Missionary School (Cairo) 149, 226  
 Esquiros, Alphonse 26  
 Expedition of Tabūk 269  
 Ezekiel 179, 186  
 Ezra 198  
  
 Faculty of Dār al-'Ulūm (Cairo) 58  
   Law (Egyptian University) 109, 120  
 Faḥshā' 186  
*Falāḥ, al-* (periodical) 149, 181  
 Fanūs, Akhnūkh 104, 110, 278  
 Farḍ Kifāya 148  
*Faṭḥ, al-* (periodical) 152  
 Fattā, Muḥammad Ibn Muḥammad Sa'īd al- 133  
 Fatwās 4, 6, 22, 37, 57, 77, 99, 140-147, 168, 170-171, 216, 233, 244, 277-305, 314-316  
 Fayyāḍ, Tāhā al- 63  
 Fez (Morocco) 272-273  
 Fiqh 143  
 Fiske, John 59  
 Fiṭra 189, 263, 282  
 Freemasonry 52, 91, 99, 215, 219-221  
   Grand Lodge of England 220  
   Lodge of Najmat Sūriyya (Sao Paulo) 220  
   Lodge of Sulymān al-Mulūki (Jerusalem) 219  
 Friday 111  
 Fu'ād, King 172

- Gabriel (archangel) 199, 252  
 Gahamars 189  
 Gairdner, William Temple 21, 129, 135,  
 153, 158-160, 164, 231, 236-238,  
 293-294  
 Geisteskultur 50  
 Gelasian Decree 229  
 Gelasius, Pope 229  
*Gemeindeblatt der Jüdischen Gemeinde zu  
 Berlin* (periodical) 53  
 Geneva 29, 43, 45, 70 *Journal de Genève*  
 (periodical) 29  
 Gentiles 248  
 Geographical Muslims 28, 303  
 George, St. 273  
 Germany (German) 7, 32, 40, 50, 65, 100,  
 102, 131, 134, 159, 254  
     Church 30-31  
     orientalism 14, 16, 33, 47, 50-51  
 German missions 23, 130, 161-162  
     Nazism 30-31, 53  
     press 15, 49, 51  
     Reichsbishop, German 30  
 Ghabriyāl, Niqūlā Ya'qūb 19, 180-198,  
 312  
 Ghālī Pasha, Buṭrus 17-18, 106-108, 122  
 Ghandūr, 'Abd al-Qādir al- 145  
 Gharāniq 78  
 Ghazālī, Abu Ḥāmid al- 21, 202, 283  
 Gibāra, Christophoros 5-6, 196  
 Gibbon, Edward 5  
 Girton Conference (Cambridge) 42  
 Gladstone, William Ewart 130  
 Gnostic Gospels 228-230  
 Goddard, Hugh 12, 316  
 Goethe 34  
 Goldziher, Ignaz 9, 48, 159  
 Gould, F.J. 259  
 Graves, Kersey 59  
 Greek 47, 71, 76, 87, 98, 131, 142, 181,  
 189, 196, 211, 216, 223, 230, 236, 245,  
 248, 259, 276, 292  
     philosophy 183, 235, 251  
 Gruber, Heinrich 30  
 Guizot, F. 25  
  
 Ḥabīb, Muḥammad 6, 196  
 Ḥadīth 3, 38-39, 159, 178, 201, 204-205,  
 225, 239, 263-265, 279-280, 282, 296,  
 300-301, 307, 319  
 Hage, Badr al- 95  
 Hajj 36, 168  
 Ḥalfā (Sudan) 282  
  
 Ḥamawī, Salīm Pasha al- 149, 181  
 Hammurabi, Code of 31-34, 235  
 Hanafī 112, 155  
 Ḥanafī, 'Uthmān Ibn al-Ḥāj Nūr al-Ḥaqq  
 al-Ṣinī al- 244-245  
 Hanafī, Ḥasan 319  
 Hanbalism 8  
 Hanotaux, M. Gabriel 4  
*Ḥaqq, al-* (periodical) 21  
 Ḥaram al-Nabawī, al- 61  
 Harrāwī, Ḥusayn al- 37-38, 48  
 Hartmann, Martin 48  
 Hashimite 8, 71  
 Ḥassan, 'Abdullāh b. 62  
 Ḥaykal, Muḥammad Ḥusayn 172  
 Headley, Lord 18, 160, 167-169, 311  
 Heliopolis (Cairo) 107  
 Helwan (Cairo) 160  
 Herber Hospital (Cairo) 137  
 Hermaphrodite 252  
 Hijāz 8, 38, 300  
 Ḥijāzī, Muḥammad al-Rashīdī al- 161-  
 162  
*Hilāl, al-* (periodical) 76-83, 88, 118, 233  
 Hilālī, Taqī al-Dīn al- 15, 61-64  
 Ḥilmī, 'Abbās (Khedive) 107, 109, 163  
 Ḥilmī, Muḥammad Effendi 282  
 Hilter, Adolf 30  
 Ḥimyarī (script) 216, 232, 241  
 Hinduism (Hindu) 59, 60, 115, 188, 195,  
 221, 270, 312  
 Ḥizb al-Lāmarkaziyya al-Idāriyyā al-'Uth-  
 mānī 69  
 Hollmann, Admiral Friedrich, von 33, 35  
 Homer 25, 34, 292  
 Horne, Thomas Hartwell 23  
 Horten, Max 50  
 Horus 59, 61  
 Hosea the Pious, Kingdom of 197  
 Hourani, Albert 24  
*Hudā, al-* (periodical) 27  
 Hugo, Victor 25  
 Hurgonje, Christiaan Snouck 27, 36,  
 48-49, 77, 132  
 Ḥusayn, King 8  
 Ḥusayn, Ṭaha 36, 290-291, 314  
 Ḥusaynī, Amin al- 119, 164  
 Huxley, Thomas Henry 59  
  
 Ibn 'Abbās 296  
 'Ibn Abī Ṭālib, 'Alī 201  
 Ibn Ishāq 214  
 Ibn Kathīr 198, 299

- Ibn Khaldūn 76  
 Ibn Munabbih, Wahb 296, 299  
 Ibn Rushd 5, 72-75  
 Ibn Sa'ūd 8, 61, 99  
 'Ibrahīm (Abraham) 16, 23, 34-37, 41, 209-210, 225, 249, 284, 290, 292, 309, 313  
 'Ibrahīm, 'Abduh effendi 55-57, 313  
 Idenburg, A.W.F. 132  
 'Ijāza 3  
 Ijtihād 7, 56  
 'Ilm, al- (periodical) 55, 153  
 'Imrān, Basyūnī 47-48, 297  
 India (Indian) 6, 8, 12, 23, 53, 60-64, 68, 77, 79, 80-81, 114-115, 152-153, 155-156, 164, 189, 236, 239, 285, 315-317  
 Inge, W.R. 28-29  
 Isagoge, of Porphyry 193  
 Iscariot, Judas 219, 255-257, 264, 272, 275, 315  
 'Iskandarī, Aḥmad 'Umar al- 79-80  
 Islamische Gemeinde zu Berlin 51  
*IslamoChristiana* (periodical) 11, 149, 214, 236, 252  
 'Iṣma 210  
 Ismā'il (Ishmael) 36, 292  
 Ismā'il, Fāris 245  
 Isnād (asānīd, chain of transmission) 32, 179, 280  
 Israelite 112, 182, 191, 194-195, 197, 199-200, 247, 284 Isrā'iliyyāt 151, 296, 299  
 Italy (Italian) 8, 11, 26, 61, 117, 214-215, 221-223, 225, 227-228, 232, 236, 259  
 'Ittiḥād al-'Uthmānī, al- (periodical) 152  
  
 Jabbār, Judge 'Abd al- 190, 213  
*Jāmi'a al-'Islāmiyya*, al- (periodical) 53  
*Jāmi'a*, al- (periodical) 31, 33, 71-75, 120, 177, 310  
 Jam'iyyat al-Difā'an al-'Islām 172  
 al-Rābiṭa al-Sharqiyya 14, 38, 118  
 al-Shubbān al-Muslimūn 172  
 al-Ta'lif wā al-Taqrīb bayna al-'Adyān al-Samāwiyya 5  
 Makārim al-'Akhḷāq 301  
 Shams al-'Islām 14, 149  
 Japan 100, 164, 166-167, 276  
*Jarīda*, al- (periodical) 93  
 Jāwīsh, 'Abd al-'Azīz 164-165  
 Jazā'iri, Ṭāhir al- 275  
  
 Jeffery, Arthur 58  
 Jerusalem 38, 119, 135-136, 164-165, 198, 219-220, 247-248, 257-258, 273-274  
 Jesuit 17, 52, 67, 80, 90-91, 96-102, 105, 122, 143, 287, 298-299  
*Jihād, al-* (periodical) 53  
 Jisr, Ḥusayn al- 3  
 Jizya 279  
 Johnson, F. 154  
 Jomier, Jacques 10  
 Joseph, College St. 97 of Arimathaea 256, 258  
 Josephus 248, 250, 253, 278, 292  
 Judaism 5, 10, 36, 45, 70, 112, 151, 167, 180, 181-186, 195-197, 179, 285 Jew (Jewish) 13, 34, 36, 45, 53, 68, 83, 99, 101, 104-105, 110, 112, 130, 141, 144, 150-151, 178-179, 182, 190, 183, 195-196, 198, 202, 207, 211, 217, 226-228, 230-231, 240, 247-248, 250-253, 255-260, 263-265, 275, 278-279, 282, 286, 290-291, 294, 298-300, 302, 309-311, 318  
 Jun'ah, Muḥammad Luṭfi 110, 120  
 Jundī, 'Alī al- 298  
 Justus of Tiberius 253  
  
 Ka'ba 8, 36  
 Kabīra 210  
 Kāfirūn 282  
 Kamal-ud-Din, Khwaja 168  
 Kāmil, Muṣṭafā 103, 106, 166, 238  
 Kampffmeyer, Georg 40, 48, 89  
 Kant 34  
 Karbala 155  
 Khalidi, Tarif 213  
 Khāmis, Muḥammad Bayram al- 232  
 Khān, Muḥammad Muḥsin 62  
 Khatīb, Muḥhib al-Din al- 151-152  
 Khāzin, Yūsuf al- 117-118  
 Khedive 18, 103, 107, 109, 137, 163, 238  
 Khulūd 282  
 Khūrī, Shukrī al- 67  
 Kiao-Chau 130  
 Kirām, Zekī Ḥishmat 14-15, 49-53, 101, 307  
 Kitchener, Lord 57, 136-138, 173, 311  
 Kornwestheim (Germany) 14-15  
 Krarup, O. 213  
 Krishna 59-61  
 Khūja, 'Umar 295, 315

- Kuttāb 111  
 Kuwait 8, 156-167, 283-284, 304  
 Kuyper, Abraham 132
- Labakī, Na'ūm 68  
 Lammens, H. 48  
 Laoust, Henri 10  
 Lausanne 27, 108-109  
 Lead Books 214  
 League of Nations 70  
 Lebanon 3, 24, 68, 76, 92, 118, 141, 236, 279  
 Leirvik, Oddbjørn 12, 180, 316  
 Lemaitre, Auguste 29  
 Libya 8, 61  
 Lightfoot, J.B. 254  
*Liwā', al-* (periodical) 54, 103, 238  
 Logos 43, 252-253  
*London Times* (periodical) 129  
 Louvre Museum 8  
 Löwe, H. 53  
 Luna, Alonso de 214  
 Luṭfallah, Michel 70-71  
 Luther, Martin 34, 84, 97-98, 233  
 Lutheran 286ff
- Machiavelli 76  
*Machreq, al-* (periodical) 17, 59, 67, 80, 96-102, 287  
 Madjid, Nurcholish 318  
 Magdalene 256, 270, 272, 274  
 Maghāmiz, Zakī 82  
 Magnus, Philip 136  
 Mahdism 154  
 Maḥmūd, Boulus 135  
 Maḥmūd, Maḥmūd 301-303  
*Majalla al-Jadida, al-* (periodical) 118  
*Majalla, al-* (periodical) 83  
*Majallat Nūr al-Islām* (periodical) 170-171  
 Majid, 'Abd al-'Aziz Nuṣṣi 'Abd al- 293-295, 314  
 Major, H.D.A. 43  
 Malaysia 164  
 Malta 134  
 Ma'lūm min al-dīn bi al-ḍarūra, al- 148  
*Manchester City News* (periodical) 254  
 Mani 260  
 Manning, Bishop William T. 27  
 Marāghī, Muṣṭafā al- 41, 170, 172, 313-316  
 Margoliouth, David Samuel 48, 222, 233  
 Marino, Fra 221-223, 229, 232
- Martiniere College, La (Lucknow) 196  
 Monnoye, La 222, 224  
 Martyr, Justin 262  
 Mary (mother of Jesus) 252, 255, 314  
 Massey, Gerald 60  
 Massignon, Louis 48  
 Matbūli, Sheikh al- (Cairo) 245, 256, 274, 276  
 Mawlid 142  
 Mayerhoff, Max 48  
 Mazrui, al-Amīn bin 'Alī al- 317  
 McAuliffe, J.D. 11  
 McNeile, R. F. 243  
 Mecca 131, 133, 155, 192-193, 206, 272, 290  
 Medina 36, 61, 213, 247, 269, 272  
 Meknès 15  
 Melchizedek 32, 249  
 Methodist Episcopal Church, South 27  
 Middle Ages 10, 227, 259, 261, 263  
 Miḥrāb 300-301  
 Mikhā'il, Faraj 121  
 Mikhail, Kyriakos 18, 107  
 Mikhā'il, Ma'zūz Effendi Jād 237  
 Milūk, Khalil 67  
 Miracles 12, 23, 28, 182, 184, 199, 206-207, 214, 216-217, 251, 275  
 Mi'rāj 199, 224  
*Miṣr* (periodical) 117  
 Modern Churchmen's Union 43  
 Mombasa 315  
 Monkhouse, Thomas 221  
 Montanus 260  
 Montet, Edouard 45, 102  
 Moriscos 214  
 Moses 32, 34-36, 50, 179, 181-184, 190, 192-193, 197, 199-200, 204, 209-211, 294  
 Mosaic Covenant 246  
 Law 32, 182, 235, 251, 265, 284  
 Mount of Olives 255  
 Mu'aṭṭila, al- 147  
 Mu'āwiya 198  
*Mu'ayyad, al-* (periodical) 54, 86, 89, 108, 126, 152  
 Mubārak, 'Alī Pasha 186-188  
 Muḥammad, 'Abd al-'Azīz Effendi 26  
 Muḥammad, Muḥammad Kāmil Ibn 3  
 Muir, Sir William 136, 150, 196  
 Müller, Ludwig 30  
 Munāfiqūn 191, 282  
 Munāzarah 2, 154



- Munāzir, al-* (periodical) 68, 176  
 Munkar 87, 186  
*Muqattam, al-* (periodical) 30, 245  
*Muqtataf, al-* (periodical) 24, 83-86, 92, 154, 233  
 Murshid 163  
 Mūsā, Salāma 67, 85, 116-122  
 Muscat 156  
*Mušlih, al-* (periodical) 301  
 Mutashābih 296
- Nadwī, 'Abū al-Ḥasan al- 63  
 Nahḍa 83  
 Najib, 'Ibrāhīm Pasha 245  
 Narratives Biblical (Christian and Jewish) 182, 188, 207, 218, 243, 254-255, 264, 270, 276, 278, 284, 294  
   Islamic or Qur'ānic 20, 56, 78, 156, 184, 197, 199, 205, 217, 225, 272, 278, 280, 298-299, 301  
 Nashshāba, Maḥmūd 3  
 Naṣif, Muḥammad 63  
 Nāṣiryya School, al- (Cairo) 298  
 Naṣūhī, 'Abdullāh 177  
 National Islamic School (Tripoli) 3  
 Natural death of Jesus 62, 257, 265, 279, 315  
 Nebuchadnezar, the Great 198  
 New Testament 21, 32, 110, 137, 178-179, 190-196, 200, 203, 210, 236, 244, 246, 252, 259-260, 271  
 Newton, Joseph Fort 221  
 Nicodemus 256, 258  
 Nielsen, Alfred Julius 98, 146, 174, 278, 286-293, 304-305, 315  
 Niemöller, Martin 30  
 Nile Delta 26  
 Nile Mission 19, 136  
 Nimr, Fāris 83-86  
*Nineteenth Century and After* (periodical) 26  
 Noah 209-210, 300  
 North Africa 44, 47, 161  
 Nu'mānī, Shibli al- 79-83  
 Nuwayhid, 'Ajjāj 44  
 Nuzūl (descending) of Jesus 278, 280
- Orientalism (orientalist) 9, 14, 16, 27, 36-42, 44-45, 48-50, 80, 151, 159, 187, 222, 224-225  
 Original Sin 267, 294, 304  
 Orthodox Church 6, 20, 189, 216  
 Osiris 189  
 Ottoman Empire 7-8, 69, 96, 112  
   Army 7, 14, 49  
   Socialist Party 96  
 Ottomanism 69-70, 83
- Paganism 47, 100, 183-184, 186-190, 197, 200, 204, 248, 263, 312  
 Pagan Christs 58, 260  
 Pagan religion 117, 246  
 Palacios, Miguel Asín 224  
 Pan-Arabism 70, 134  
 Pan-Islamism 6, 43-44, 53, 61, 134, 305-306  
 Paraclete 232, 260, 261  
 Paul 32, 110, 157, 186, 190, 200, 229, 231, 238, 248-249, 251, 253, 298  
 St. Paul's Cathedral (London) 24  
 Paul II, Pope 228  
 Persia and Turkish Arabia Missions 154  
 Peter 200, 251, 253, 255-256, 260, 284  
 Pfander, Karl Gottlieb 23  
 Pharaoh 61, 112, 182, 209, 211, 266  
 Photius, Patriarch of Constantinople 253  
 Philipp, Thomas 77  
 Polytheism 310  
 Pre-Islamic Arab 205-206  
   Turah, Prison Hospital (Cairo) 54  
 Protestantism (Protestant) 19, 29-31, 47, 97, 107, 141, 149, 151, 153-154, 156, 168, 217, 260, 263, 295  
   Egyptian Protestant Magazine 178  
 Protestant American College (Beirut) 80, 86, 92, 140, 143-145, 171, 309  
 Psalters 213, 223
- Qabbānī, 'Abd al-Qādir al- 88  
 Qairanāwī, Raḥmatullāh, al- 12, 23, 55, 214, 216, 234, 261, 316, 319  
 Qalamūn, al- (Lebanon) 3, 14, 273  
 Qarābīn (Offerings) 246-250, 270, 295, 300  
 Qarāfi, Shihāb al-Dīn al- 181, 198  
 Qaṣr al-'Aynī, Hospital, al- (Cairo) 54  
 Qaṭ'ī 293-296  
 Qibla 167, 300  
 Qurṭubī, Abū Bakr al- 198, 252, 312  
 Quṭb, Sayyid 319
- Odin 189  
 Old Testament 31-33, 98, 110, 179, 188-189, 195, 200, 202, 209, 227, 246-249, 262, 271, 278, 300

- Rābiṭa, al-* (periodical) 93  
 Ragg, Lonsdale and Laura 11-12, 214-215, 221-230, 241-242  
 Rāghib, Idris 220  
 Rafā'il (or Raphael), Niqūlā effendi 206  
 Ramaḍān 148  
 Rashdall, Hastings 43  
*Rāyat Ṣuhyūn* (periodical) 209-210  
 Rāzi, Fakhr al-Dīn al- 32, 67, 252  
 Red Sea 182  
 Religious fanaticism 77, 94, 112, 115, 147, 181, 287  
 Renan, Ernest 72, 255  
*Review of Religions* (periodical) 285  
*Revue du Monde Musulman, La* (periodical) 151-152, 224  
*Revue Scientifique* (periodical)  
 Ripon Hall (Oxford) 43  
 Riyāḍ Pasha, Muḥammad 107  
 Robertson, John Mackinnon 56, 60, 260-261  
 Roman 48, 98, 121, 168, 176, 186, 190, 211, 217, 235, 248, 250, 258-259, 284, 312  
 Rosenberg, Alfred 30  
 Royal Academy of the Arabic Language in Cairo 16, 36-39, 48  
 Rushdī, Ḥusayn 117, 163  
 Sa'ādeh, Khalil 11-12, 17, 20, 92-96, passim 213-242, 315, Rafūl 176, Sofia 96  
 Sabbath 110  
 Ṣabrī, Ayyūb 302  
 Saḥḥār, 'Abd al-Ḥamīd Jūda al- 316  
 Sa'id, Muḥammad, Pasha 138  
 Saint-Joseph College 97  
 Salafi (Salafīyya) 4, 8, 15, 38, 40, 44, 55, 61, 79, 97, 151  
 Ṣāliḥ, al-Sayyid 148, 152  
 Salim, 'Abd al-Majid 41  
 Salisbury, Lord 130, 146, 295  
 Sambas (West Borneo) 47  
 Sao Paulo 67-68, 220  
 Saqqā, Aḥmad Hijāzī al- 316  
 Ṣarrūf, Ya'qūb 83-85, 92, 116  
 Saudi Arabia 61, 63 Royal family 8, 61, 164  
 Schirrmacher, Christine 11-12, 23, 215  
 Schumann, Olaf 12  
 Kalām, Science of 73, 169,  
 Scott, Sir Walter 257  
 Scribes 197, 298  
 Seal of prophecy 247, 249, 262, 279-280  
 World War, First 7, 58, 93, 134, 154, 164  
 Second 61  
 Secular (Secularisation, Secularism) 17, 28, 67, 69, 71-72, 86, 94-95, 108, 113-114, 116, 122, 126, 128, 141, 147-149, 219, 223, 242, 308-309  
 Septuaginta 251  
 Sermon 4, 62, 127, 142-143, 183, 217, 230, 233, 262, 267, 280  
 of Jesus on the Mount 180  
 Shafā'a 205  
 Shahāda 204  
 Shāhbandar, Abdel-Raḥmān 71  
 Shahrastānī al-Najafī, Hibat al-Dīn al- 153-155  
 Shakespeare, W. 34  
 Shākir, Aḥmad Muḥammad 37-38  
 Shaltūt, Maḥmūd 313-314  
 Sha'rāwī, Hudā 121  
 Sharī'a 70, 89, 120, 279 Shar'ī 114, 303  
*Sharq wā al-Gharb, al-* (periodical) 153, 159, 164, 238, 294, 312  
 Sharqāwī, Muḥammad 'Abdullāh al- 58  
 Shī'ī 5, 64, 83, 98, 153-155, 204  
 Shir 'Alī 285-286  
*Shubbān al-Muslimūn, al-* (periodical) 63  
 Shubrā (Cairo) 301  
 Shumayyil, Shibli 17, 70, 86-90, 96, 116,  
*Shūrā, al-* (periodical) 97, 152, 233  
 Shuwayr (Mount Lebanon) 93-94  
 Sicard, Jules 45, 46-48  
 Ṣidqī, Muḥammad Tawfīq 10, 21-22, 54-57, 137-139, 163-165, 243-276, 286, 310-313, 316  
 Ṣinī, Badr al-Dīn al- 64  
 Sira 197, 230  
 Sixtus V, Pope 221  
*Siyāsa, al-* (periodical) 169, 170, 172  
 Society of Christian Education of the Orthodox Church 19  
 Society of Muslim Brothers 9  
*Soerabaiaasch Handelsblad* (periodical) 132  
 Solomon 219, 299  
 Sorbonne 45, 53  
 Spain (Spanish) 47, 93, 130, 132, 184, 189, 214, 222, 226-229  
*Standard, The* (periodical) 93  
 Stanley, G. W. 154  
 Stobart, J.W.H. 196

- Stoddard, Lothrop 44  
 Strauss, David Friedrich 23  
 Sudan 6, 126, 134, 139, 141, 164, 282  
 Şūfī 8, 272-276 Naqshabandī Order 3  
 Sunday 107, 109, 110-111, 133, 141, 256  
 Sunna 8, 21, 38, 56-57, 101, 205  
   Ahl 203  
 Sunnī 3, 5, 8, 83, 96, 153, 204  
 Supersessionism 13  
 Susa 32  
 Sykes, Sir Mark 134  
 Syrian League 83  
 Syrian-Palestinian Congress 70
- Ṭabarī, al- (the historian) 78, 198, 264  
 Ṭabarī, ‘Alī b. Rabbān al- 213  
 Ṭabīb, al- (periodical) 24, 91, 93  
 Tafsīr 3, 57, 215, 255, 279, 299, 302  
 Tafsīr al-Manār 4, 11, 22, 99, 265  
 Taḥrīf (Corruption of the Scriptures) 16,  
   32-33, 186, 194, 196, 215, 251, 290, 309  
 Tannīr, Muḥammad Ṭāhir al- 57-61, 97,  
   157-158, 270, 295  
 Taqlīd 7, 230, 239  
 Tārīkh al-Rijāl 184  
 Tatar 97, 133, 152  
 Tawātūr 32, 239, 204, 265, 270-271, 280  
 Ta’wīl 293  
 Taylor, Isaac 5, 129-130  
 Tharwat, ‘Abd al-Khālik 138  
 Thawrī, Sufyān al- 201  
 Times, The (periodical) 93  
 Tokyo 166-167  
 Toland, J. 12, 122  
 Tolstoy, Leo 20, 25, 189, 215-218, 230,  
   241, 313  
 Torah 32, 50, 179-180, 185-188  
   passim 191-202, 234, 281, 288, 299,  
   312, 318  
 Trinity 5, 10, 46, 60, 98, 119, 158, 203,  
   269, 277, 281, 289, 295, 298, 304, 312,  
   319  
 Tripoli-Syria 3, 71, 141, 148  
 Tunisia(n) 6, 68, 147, 232, 281, 295, 313  
 Turton, William Harry 56, 260
- ‘Ulū al-‘Azm 209-210  
 Umma 8, 52, 85-86, 122, 144-145, 237,  
   262, 303, 305  
 Upson, Arthur T. 97, 136  
 Urquhart, David 27  
 ‘Urwa al-Wuthqā, al- (periodical) 3
- ‘Uthmān, Faṭḥī 318
- Vatican 30, 101, 216, 232-233, 241  
 Vedas 59, 221  
 Vendemmia (Vintage in Tuscany) 227  
 Viktoria, Auguste 33  
 Virgin 60-61, 189, 252, 297  
 Vishnu 60
- Wahhābī (Wahhabism) 8, 99, 166, 171  
 Wāhid, Selim ‘Abdul- 236  
 Wajdī, Muḥammad Farīd 40-41  
 Wardānī, Ibrahīm Naṣīf al- 18  
   passim 106-123  
 Waṭan, al- (periodical) 105-106, 118,  
   240  
 Waṭaniyya, al- (periodical) 301-302  
 Wa’z wā al-‘Irshād, al- 116, 165  
 Wensinck, A.J. 16, 31-49, 309  
 Wherry, E.M. 209  
 Wiegers, G.A. 214  
 Wifāq, al- (periodical) 133  
 Wilhelm II, Kaiser 31-34, 130  
 Wingate, Sir 139  
 Woking Muslim Mission 168  
 Wood, Simon 13, 19  
   passim 173-211  
 Wortley-Montague, Mary 226
- Yāfi, Mūsā‘id al- 151  
 Yaḥyā, Imam of Yemen 8  
 Yannī, Jurjī 71  
 Yāsīn, Yusūf 164  
 Yazīdī, Muḥammad al- 233  
 Yāzījī, ‘Ibrahīm al- 91-92  
 Young Turk Revolution 7
- Zāfirī, Nuṣayr al-Dīn al- 284  
 Zaghlūl, Aḥmad Faṭḥī 25-26, 53  
 Zahāwī, Jamīl Ṣidqī al- 89-90, 310  
 Zahrāwī, ‘Abd al-Ḥamid al- 82  
 Zaidān, Jurjī 17, 76-84, 116, 118  
 Zakāt 148  
 Ḥannī (subjective) 297  
 Zaḳāziq Court (Egypt) 26  
 Zarathustra 189  
 Zawāhirī, Sheikh al-Aḥmadī al- 170-  
   172  
 Zionism (Zionist) 51, 53, 284  
 Zu‘ayter, ‘Ādil 53-54  
 Zwemer, Samuel 21, 136  
   passim 156-160